

Teacher's Collected Articles and Lectures

2003 and 2004

Table of Contents

New Year's Greetings to Dafa Disciples in 2003	2
Descending to the Earthly World	2
Master's Comment on a Student's Article	2
Fa-Lecture During the 2003 Lantern Festival at the U.S. West Fa Conference.....	3
Explaining the Fa During the 2003 Lantern Festival at the U.S. West Fa Conference.....	12
Teaching and Explaining the Fa at the Metropolitan New York Fa Conference	62
Teaching the Fa at the Conference in Vancouver, Canada in 2003	96
Teaching the Fa at the 2003 Midwest-U.S. Fa Conference	109
Teaching the Fa at the 2003 Washington DC Fa Conference	119
Master's Comment on a Student's Article	125
Teaching the Fa at the Discussion on Creating Fine Art	126
Master's Comment on a Student's Article	149
Master's Comment on a Student's Article	149
Master's New Year's Day 2004 Greeting to Dafa Disciples	149
Teaching the Fa at the 2003 Atlanta Fa Conference	150
Master's Fa Taught in the International Teleconference.....	180
Stop the Evil Acts with Righteous Thoughts	181
Eliminate the Dark Minions With Righteous Thoughts	182
Teaching the Fa at the 2004 Western U.S. Fa Conference	183
Teaching the Fa on Easter, 2004, at the New York Fa Conference	210
Be Clearheaded	215
Teaching the Fa at the Meeting with Asia-Pacific Students.....	216
Master's Comment on a Student's Article	246
Teaching the Fa at the 2004 Chicago Conference.....	246
To the Fa Conference in Montreal, Canada	255
Master's Message to the European Fa Conference Held in Vienna.....	255
On Reading Weathering the Storm.....	255
Teaching the Fa at the 2004 Washington DC Fa Conference	256
Let Go of Human Attachments and Save the World's People	260
In Fa-Rectification Your Thoughts Have to be Righteous, Not Human	261
Master's Comment on a Student's Article	262
Greetings	262
My Version of a "Stick Wake-up"	263
Teaching the Fa at the 2004 International Fa Conference in New York	265

New Year's Greetings to Dafa Disciples in 2003

**Happy New Year, Dafa disciples in Mainland China!
Happy New Year, Dafa disciples around the world!**

Descending to the Earthly World

With the turning of Falun there is sure to be madness,
A whole nation's resources drained, working on me.
I quietly observe the buffoon's devilish play dying out
Only the last vestiges of dirt now blow to and fro.
Five thousand years of reincarnation through shifts and change,
I brush off the enshrouding dust, and all their realities are seen.
Who is really the gallant lead in this gigantic play?
I made this trip just for the sake of sentient beings.

Li Hongzhi

The 29th day of the 12th month, the Year of Ren Wu in the lunar calendar
January 31, 2003

Master's Comment on a Student's Article

Well said. Each person's cultivation path is different, the way in which each validates the Fa is different, their social statuses are different, their occupations are different, and their -surroundings are different, but they can all cultivate nevertheless. This is the path Dafa presents to its cultivators. Dafa disciples are one body, and I affirm everything they have been doing during Fa-rectification-they are all doing what Dafa disciples should do. Different approaches are in fact the all-encompassing way in which roles are dynamically distributed in the operations of the Fa, and the Fa-power is a reflection of the one body.

Li Hongzhi

February 16, 2003

Revised on October 8, 2005

Fa-Lecture During the 2003 Lantern Festival at the U.S. West Fa Conference

(Long applause) Let's be seated.

It's been a long time again since we last met up. Seems like a lot of people knew I would come to this Fa conference. You're all pretty in the know! You're getting more and more amazing as you cultivate. *(Applause)* Today I'll first tell you about the state of Fa-rectification, as well as my situation, and then I'll talk a little about some issues that have come up among our students as the Fa-rectification progresses and in your cultivation.

On different occasions, and from different angles, I've talked about the immense force of the Fa-rectification of the entire cosmos. Today I'll explain the form of Fa-rectification to you from yet another angle. As you know, this cosmos is extremely huge, so huge it can't be measured—and I don't mean the ways human beings measure things, but even the ways Gods do. I've said before that there are countless sentient beings. None of them can figure out exactly how many molecules make up the earth, and, every particle is a being. And then there are so many planets in the cosmos, too many to count. And how big is a cosmic body? Even if you let your imagination go, it's still only within the scope of a particle of a small cosmic body. In the enormous cosmos, it's not just beings that are countless, but levels too. Even to Gods they're countless, and that's even how Kings and Lords at extremely high levels see it. That's why in the latter stages of teaching the Fa I stopped talking about how big the cosmos is—it was totally impossible to describe it with human language anymore. But the higher the level, the more huge those beings and dimensions get, and they get so huge that they're beyond description. The volume of one being up there surpasses all of the cosmoses below him. That's how big. With the Fa-rectification, twenty percent of the beings of the old cosmos got involved and arranged all the things they wanted in the Fa-rectification; at all the different levels a group of beings got directly involved in this Fa-rectification. They never could have imagined that their involvement would be precisely the real demonic obstacle to this Fa-rectification. But their involvement has created a gigantic obstacle to the entire Fa-rectification, and has resulted in countless sentient beings getting destroyed. "Isn't Master merciful? Just forgive them and it'll be okay." The old forces have exactly been taking advantage of my great mercy and playing games. The Fa is merciful to all beings, but at the same time it's solemn and dignified. And the Fa has standards, before sentient beings it's unchanging and unbreakable, and it's not something that can be influenced casually. I can be merciful to sentient beings, but, when a being has really violated something to that extent, the Fa is there to judge him, and any further mercy would be excessive, it would be the same as destroying itself, so beings like that are marked for elimination.

During the Fa-rectification, the number of sentient beings in the cosmos that have been weeded out due to the old forces' involvement is countless. So, the specifics of their involvement, the way they've done it—which is the way they think can best enable them to reach their aims, and their most typical way—is to have all the huge, gigantic cosmic bodies extend a foot into the cosmos's lowest level, the Three Realms. This is just a figurative description. In other words, they all have a part of them pressed into the Three Realms. Think about it, when such enormous cosmic bodies and gigantic beings enter the Three Realms, what state does that bring about in the Three Realms? Today's humankind has degenerated to such a degree that it can't be likened to any of those in the past. Even the earthly gods have felt the gigantic pressure. I asked them about this change, and they said, "We thought it was caused by our cultivation state." So even the powers of the earth's deities don't work anymore, since those gigantic beings have a restraining effect on everything at this lowest level of the cosmos. And after coming down here, they have been causing unimaginable harm in terms of the warped changes of beings and matter in the Three Realms. If it weren't for the Fa's rectification of the human world,

which will ultimately readjust things completely, this place would have been beyond redemption, nobody could have done anything about it, and it would've crossed the point of no return.

The method they usually use is to have enormous cosmic bodies and countless firmaments compress together and squeeze into the Three Realms. The higher the level of those huge beings, the larger their volumes, but the particles, the elements that they're made up of, become more fine and more dense, that is, more microcosmic. So when beings that enormous are all squeezed and compressed together, think about it, what's that like at this lowest level of the cosmos? It formed a big and strong screen. Actually, the cosmos's Fa-rectification is done in the wave of a hand. It's just that in the process of the wave the differences in what's felt by the beings in the cosmos's many space-times are huge. The boundless, measureless dimensions all have their own times, and the differences among the times, and the number of times, are also boundless and measureless, and that's what has caused the huge differences among the times in different dimensions. While the wave of the hand takes place, in some places it's almost in sync, while in some places decades, centuries, millennia, or tens of thousands of years have passed, and in other places some hundreds of millions of years, or even millions of millions of years, or some boundless and measureless amount of time has passed. Here where human beings are it's not that bad, it's only been over a decade. What this means is that it is time that caused the differences.

Let's think about it, there's this difference among different dimensions and times, so even though those enormous cosmic bodies that have pressed into the Three Realms have entered this human place, they're compressed. If you understand it with the concepts of human thought, [you'll figure that] the overall volume of their bodies has shrunk, but that doesn't mean that the structures within them have changed. And if their internal structures haven't changed, then think about it, if you entered inside them you would discover that they are still dimensions just as huge as before. When I started to do Fa-rectification, I did things outside the Three Realms—I went around the Three Realms. And why did I go around it? If I had done it inside the Three Realms, then the Three Realms would have, to put it in human terms, become the focal point of the cosmos's Fa-rectification—this would be the place where nuclear fusion and the fission of more microcosmic particles happen, it'd be the main battlefield of Fa-rectification, and all of the massive changes in the gigantic beings and cosmic bodies would have taken place right here. Think about it, then, the Three Realms would have been destroyed to the point where nothing remained, where nothing was left. That's why I went around the Three Realms.

I started to do Fa-rectification from outside the Three Realms, going up all the way, not just along one course, but in all directions, expanding and spreading out toward the microcosm and macrocosm simultaneously, going both upward and downward, because what's more microcosmic and what's more macrocosmic are the same concept. Wherever I've gone, I've done it in a manner that transcends all times. Looking at it from above, the enormous speed of expansion and the gigantic impact, even to Gods who see it, it's astounding like nothing ever before. Wherever I've reached, all the cosmic bodies are bursting and re-forming, most of them are meeting with a benevolent solution, and some are eliminated. Recently you've seen the discoveries in astronomy in the United States that have to do with the phenomena of different galaxies and planets re-forming. Those are scenes of re-formation that are in the scope human beings can observe. At present humankind still doesn't know that although the differences in the times among dimensions that are at different distances are very big, they're still in fact within the same, one big time, and it's just that the divisions of dimensions have formed different spheres of time. In reality, though, things are happening at the same time. Everything is happening in this astounding way. The explosion of that enormous amount of energy, the re-formation... the process of that kind of re-formation is extremely macrocosmic and extremely microcosmic, and the wonder of its fine detail, the intricacy of its microcosmic extent, the hugeness of its complexity, and the enormity of the firmament, even the gigantic Gods marvel at all of it. Despite all of that, the current of Fa-

rectification takes place and finishes very quickly, it's done in an instant, and everything is done—done as perfectly as could be. But the part that has pressed into the Three Realms is associated with what's above as one entity, they're connected together, and the space inside their gigantic bodies is extremely vast. I've said before, that to go from what constitutes an enormous being's surface to its most microcosmic part, or, the distance within its own body, that's something a gigantic God couldn't traverse even in its whole lifetime. And think about how long a God's life is!—that's how gigantic those beings are. But in the Fa-rectification it's done in an instant. It's extremely fast. In the Three Realms, though, understanding it from a human perspective, they've been compressed and now are so narrow and small that it's indescribable, but their times, dimensions, and structures are the same as those up above. When a gigantic layer up above has been passed through, what's down below corresponds, and in the same amount of time a very thin layer has been passed through. So many firmaments and cosmic bodies have been pressed into the Three Realms, and the number of beings that have entered the Three Realms along with them is countless. So, the Fa-rectification is seen progressing furiously along up above in the cosmos and at its microcosm. Using an analogy from the understandings at that level, the speed is even faster than that of the laser explosion at that level. I'm just describing it using the words people can understand as the fastest. So when an incomparably huge cosmic body has been rectified by the Fa up above, in the human world it's as if a very thin layer of skin has been scratched off. Do you understand what I mean?

So why is it that during the Fa-rectification the breakthrough toward the surface is so slow in the Three Realms? That's the reason. When the Fa-rectification returns to the human world, all the cosmic elements and beings in the cosmoses up above will have all been fully taken care of. They happen in parallel, and they're finished at the same time. When the Fa-rectification is completed up there, our Three Realms are broken through here. I'm now talking about it from yet another angle, which is, I'm explaining to you why I didn't do it inside the Three Realms when Fa-rectification began. Some students are thinking, "Master doesn't acknowledge the old forces' arrangements. So why doesn't Master instantly destroy the old forces?" Master is able to do that, and no matter how large they are, Master could still do it. But have you thought about this: if I were to redirect the enormous, gigantic energy in the Fa-rectification back here into the Three Realms to do things, it would be like hitting a mosquito with an atomic bomb, it'd be a clumsy use of force. If I were to redirect my huge energy back here, it'd be like creating a battlefield right here in the Three Realms. Even though they've entered the Three Realms, their gigantic bodies are still up there. What was pressed in here is only a portion. So when I would disintegrate and re-form them [here], the associated, larger masses up there would continually replenish them here, as I'd continually disintegrate them they would continually press into here, and the other cosmic bodies would do the same—the cosmic bodies that had pressed in would keep coming here like a relay. Then think about it, if gigantic, countless cosmic bodies and beings continually came here, this place would become like a site for the fission of all particles, and it would become the focal point of the cosmos. My force is also a gigantic mass, so if that much force were used on this one spot, it'd be an ineffective use of it, and besides, it would drag on for a long time. Even if in the end I could really break through all of them and complete everything, think about it, here where humans are, here in the Three Realms, there would be nothing left. After that gigantic impact nothing would exist. That's one of the reasons why I didn't directly do it here. And why don't I directly and immediately deal with, in an exceptional way, the situations that come up in the Three Realms? Because when I got rid of them they would keep coming to block me nonstop, and the scenario I mentioned above would occur. So unless major problems come up inside the Three Realms I can't do things in this place. The Fa-rectification as a whole is being done comprehensively, and you can't emphasize only this human place. If because of that the salvation of all the final elements of the colossal firmament bodies were delayed, that would be even more awful.

But, you've heard this before, and Master has told you this: for the overall Fa-rectification, I've also left a large mass of *gong* here among everyday people. It has no problem guarding the students' cultivation and validating the Fa, it can definitely handle that. But there's another thing: why are the old forces able to affect things? The reason is, all the beings that have pressed into the Three Realms are old forces, and they've formed a screen, and anytime I want to do things in a special way they gather together to obstruct it. And if I insist on doing it, then they concentrate all of their power to block it.

Before, when I was at the Asian Health Expo in China, to allow more people to learn about Dafa, I used to personally do healings for people. Some people really had a lot of karma, and when I was treating them, the old forces wouldn't let me heal them. The method the old forces used to obstruct me was to arrange countless, innumerable Gods to instantly block where the root of the person's ailment was. They became very small. Sometimes a Dafa disciple often sees a bright, golden speck flash before his eyes, and that's them. They became tiny, but their density was quite high, they'd pack together densely, and block where the root of the ailment was. But in fact, they couldn't block me. I could grab them and throw them away, and I could strike them down. In the Fa-rectification, there's a principle: however I handle something, it's righteous. Remember these words from Master: however I handle something is righteous, and those who are dealt with are always wrong. (*Applause*) The reason is, that's the choice of the cosmos, the choice of the future. However, in order to heal an everyday person, I had to strike down those Gods, and after they were struck down by me they would immediately be stripped of their Attainment Statuses, and they'd be cast down. But, in order to safeguard the old laws of the cosmos—they couldn't see the laws of the new cosmos—they stubbornly blocked there, and after I removed a batch of them, another batch would come, continually replenishing. Master didn't have the heart to do it, I couldn't destroy so many Gods just to be compassionate to an everyday person, even though they didn't understand the Fa-rectification.

I talked about this to tell you that the reason many things in Fa-rectification haven't turned out as well as we'd like is that both the low levels and high levels of the old forces have been doing that together, and they've been using their massive density to obstruct things. As I just said, I have the ability to break through it, but if I wanted to break through it, I'd have to redirect my enormous energy back here to thoroughly eliminate them, but, then they would gather the gigantic matter, all the matter, in the cosmos right here, and that would cause problems that would be difficult to solve immediately. Of course, in this Fa-rectification when our students act righteously, then those problems won't exist. When the *gong* and energy that I left at this place in the cosmos, in the Three Realms, do things, if our students don't act righteously, then the old forces resist, and a state of obstruction appears. That's why I've told our students to walk a righteous path and not to let them find an excuse. Once they find a big one they'll ruin you. And that's especially so when it's at the end and they're making a last-ditch effort. When they can't find an excuse they don't dare to persecute you, because then they too would be violating the laws, and they understand that, so there'd be no need for me to eliminate them—the old cosmos's laws would eliminate them. That's because they are old beings who take strictly safeguarding the old laws to be what's most essential.

So having said that much, I'll talk about another thing: Master's situation. Earlier I told you that as I was going around the Three Realms, those final elements of the cosmos's cosmic bodies took advantage of it and entered. So those gigantic and numerous beings who haven't been rectified by the Fa created a partition, even between my surface flesh body here and my divine body and enormous *gong* on the other side. This partition is different from the idea of putting an object in between things to separate them, it's not like that. Rather, it comes from the microcosm of everything, and even though it looks like it's assimilated into all the spaces between, they have their own levels and realms and are distinct from particles lower than their levels. But, the distances among particles depend on the existence of dimensions and time, and when those highest-level, numerous, gigantic cosmic bodies

entered the spaces among all the particles in the Three Realms they also changed the original expanse in dimensions and lengths of time and the times and dimensions were increased by countless multiples, so they formed a screen of huge distances made up of faraway dimensions and protracted time, and this allowed the old forces to do the things they wanted to do under the protection of this screen of distances.

I can tell you, they interfere with people and interfere with people's thinking, not only from the outside, they can also pass through the human body. When high-level factors restrain the surface of a human body, those Gods of the old forces can pass through the bodies of everyday people under protection. From another perspective, when you look at the surface of our human bodies with human eyes, the human form and the skin and flesh tissues are very fine and tight, but when you look at the human body with a large, high-magnification microscope, you find that a person's particles and his body that is made up of those particles are as coarse as sand, and there are lots of gaps. And if people had the technology to magnify things more, the gaps would be shockingly large. In the concept from a more microcosmic level, the gaps among particles are so large that they're just like the spatial distance between molecules and planets. With such a large distance, isn't it easy for beings and matter that are made up of even more microcosmic particles to pass through freely? So sometimes they burrow into a person's surface, and on the surface it looks like that person, and in the microcosm it's still that person, but another being has stuck itself in the middle.

Having said all this, I want to tell you that you don't have that problem, and I've completely sealed up for you the part of you that's been fully cultivated. If a Dafa disciple acts righteously, then nothing dares to enter the surface part that hasn't been fully cultivated yet. For one thing, old beings don't dare to disrupt the old cosmos's Fa, and another thing is that you have Master and you have Law-guardian Gods. If the attachments at your human-surface side aren't removed, then Master and the Law-guardian Gods are put in a tough position. But if your righteous thoughts are strong, then Master and the Law-guardian Gods can do anything for you.

My situation isn't something that ordinary beings can imagine. During the Fa-rectification Master has taken into his body the lives of all beings in the cosmos and the lives of all the various elements. First off, it's for safety reasons in the Fa-rectification—the lives of all beings are here with me, so no one can do things that would jeopardize the cosmos. Secondly, it's to have no being or any of the various elements in the cosmos evade Fa-rectification. And thirdly, it's to protect their lives during the Fa-rectification. That's why all over Master's body are images of the different-size and different-type beings at various levels of the cosmos, as well as the images of Daos, Gods, and Buddhas, and those of humans are included, too; some of them are large, some are small. But they can't interfere with Master, and they can't exert any influence, as what's happened is that I have taken in all beings' lives. Some of them can be seen by human eyes, and students' Third Eyes can all see them. I haven't talked about that before. When some students who had *xinxing* problems saw them their imaginations ran wild.

I've said that your different cultivation states create different levels and different states of cultivation situations. People with closed Third Eyes are to enlighten from the Fa's truths, while those with open Third Eyes encounter interference from false visions. In order to test the students who can see, those highest-level, final old forces who haven't been rectified by the Fa would in the past direct low-level old forces to do bad things in the increased distances in space and time. Their doing this during the Fa-rectification is sinful—it has severely shaken Dafa disciples' righteous faith and righteous thoughts.

But you should always remember one thing: no matter who is interfering, it's all temporary, all illusions, not the main body, and it's all just like air flowing through. There are all kinds of material elements and beings everywhere in the dimensions, there are so many of them they're immeasurable. They are there with or without an image, and they are beings in microcosmic dimensions and in

different dimensions. Before the Fa-rectification is done, the microcosmic Gods in the cosmos are all in their own dimensions, which exist at the same time and same place. Whether they stay here or don't stay here is just a concept. Those elements, form or no form, exist there naturally, and they have no influence on you at all. Nobody can manipulate Dafa disciples who have righteous thoughts and righteous actions.

I'll also tell you that although the old forces' enormous high-level beings and elements seem to be separating my surface, they can never separate [me from] my more microcosmic part, because no being can surpass me. (*Applause*) That's something they can never see, and that's something the sentient beings in the cosmos can never see—only I myself can control it. In other words, the phenomenon I discussed above has created a false impression for people and caused some wrong understandings. Now I've told you what that's all about.

I can tell you: the me that you are seeing with your human, flesh eyes now—the most surface me—is the real me, Li Hongzhi. What you see over on the other side is my Buddha-body. The me at the outermost surface right now which you see is *the* Main Body of me, Li Hongzhi. (*Applause*) Why? Because in order to do this, in order to save all beings, I've come down to the lowest level. (*Applause*) So don't worry about anything you've seen. Even if you saw my Law Body, saw my Gong Body, or saw some part of my body at higher levels, don't develop any attachment. All of those exist with this surface me being *the* Main Body. My human skin at the outermost surface is *the* Main Body. (*Applause*) But since Master is among ordinary people, in order to live here I have to conform to the rules for human beings in this world. If I didn't people would think I was kind of strange. The old forces want to do some sly things to me, and they've kept on doing some bad things. In order not to affect Dafa disciples' righteous thoughts, I don't use any foreign elements other than those lives of all beings in the cosmos that I've taken in here with me. All the fake me's in the cosmos were purposefully created by the old forces. Doing that is sinful, regardless of whether it was meant to have a positive effect or negative effect. I think I've thoroughly explained this issue to you now.

Even though I've come here, no one can see how microcosmic I ultimately am. They can only see the part of my human body's most surface particles. Every single object and every single thing in the cosmos is composed of layers upon layers of different microcosmic particles, going all the way to the surface. Gods can see all those, trace them to their root, and trace down to their origins. Just like a path, they extend down little by little, to where they come from. I came from the inside, and came from the outside; I came from nothing, formed into something, appeared at the pinnacle of the colossal firmament, and then from there I descended step by step to the most surface, the Three Realms. No being knows who I am.

There used to be another situation. With my Fa-rectification, the old forces have played a lot of tricks and done a lot of things. Not only did they arrange those things, but they also wanted to show to those enormous beings in the cosmos who aren't involved what they do, and so they tried their best to do things in a more slick way. They used some of my substances, or some of my *gong*, added in their influence, and created images of Master, Buddha images. I didn't tell you this before so as not to confuse you. There was another reason, which is, their intention wasn't to cause damage, in their own words, they wanted to help me by playing a positive role. These are the two parts arranged by the old forces: one part is to play a negative role, and the other is to play a positive role. Some of them entered students' bodies to do certain things—there have been a few isolated cases like that. So some people who could see it would say, "Wow, you are Master!" And then they'd take him to be Master. But that wasn't arranged by me, and strictly speaking, that's not me, and I don't acknowledge them, since they were arranged by the old forces. This in and of itself shows the cosmos's degeneration. Once people saw that, it caused false impressions for the students' righteous thoughts, and severely damaged the

students' righteous faith and righteous thoughts, so those had to be destroyed. Now they have all been cast into hell. In bringing up this issue today I'm also telling you all: those very few students of ours, be absolutely sure you don't fall because of this. It's no joking matter. Some people are already half way out into thin air, and they're already a bit irrational. There have been a few cases like this. You've got to watch this.

Just now I talked a little bit about my situation. There's another issue, which is, a few students recently have had some incorrect states. This problem is very serious, too. It's the result of many different things. One primary reason is, since your levels have risen and Master has told you the Attainment Status you'll achieve, you are more confident and bold now, and you feel pretty self-assured—I can only describe it with these lower words of human beings, since there aren't any fitting words for it. So some people have said, "We don't need to respect Master anymore. We just need to follow the Fa, and take the Fa as teacher."

Of course, I told you to take the Fa as teacher—that's not wrong. But that wasn't why I told you to take the Fa as teacher. Why was it, then? As you know, I have 100 million Dafa disciples. If my Main Body were to tell every disciple in person how to cultivate, and look after you in person, if when you each had questions you all came to ask me directly, and if the transformation of each person's *gong*, the Consummation of your paradises, the elimination of your karma, and each and every thing were done by this Main Body of mine, then think about it, that'd be impossible to handle. It couldn't be done before the Fa rectifies the human world and clears away the final obstacles. So when that many students can't see me, how are they to cultivate? The Fa is there for them, and that's why I told you to take the Fa as teacher. That was the essential purpose. I've also told you that this Fa is so powerful, and that I have melded my immense abilities into this Fa, so this Fa can do anything for you. (*Pause. Applause*) There are also students who... with my situation that I talked about earlier, a very small number of students aren't able to recognize that situation, and as a result they've become disrespectful of Master, and they've begun to dare comment on how high the level of this Fa is and on different things about me, their Master. This Fa forges the countless Kings and Lords of all the massive colossal firmaments, and it's what ensures the existence of all beings and different elements in the cosmos, which includes the tiny you. Of course, it's not that I don't let you, the students, talk about those things. But from your words I see your attachments and the terrifying direction you're heading in. Besides, what you've seen is just so low, some of the things aren't at all what you think they are, and a lot of them are false appearances that result from your thoughts being unrighteous.

One thing I said earlier is that the cosmos has countless and boundless levels. But under the influence of the highest level, all the countless and boundless levels below it, all the way down to this human place, have manifestations at different levels. Think about how complex and how vast the manifestations can be. The manifestations at any level are the truths of that level, and are expressions of truth at that level. But none of the scenes you see at any one level are ultimate.

I let a lot of students see some phenomena in Fa-rectification at different levels manifest so as to increase your confidence in Fa-rectification, to help you study the Fa well, to increase your confidence in cultivating diligently, and to increase your confidence in clarifying the facts and your confidence in sending righteous thoughts. Be absolutely sure you don't take the phenomena you see at very low levels, at the lowest several levels of countless and boundless levels, as the ultimate situation of the cosmos's Fa-rectification, because everything of Fa-rectification has its different, concrete manifestations at every level.

You know what? Just on the one issue of cultivation alone it's so complex at the cosmos's lower levels. But it becomes simple at higher levels, where there's no longer any concept of cultivation but only the concept of karma elimination. At levels higher up, all troubles are to pave the way for ascending to

Heaven. And at even higher levels, concepts like eliminating karma, enduring hardships, and cultivation no longer exist, and it's just a choice! This is the principle at high levels of the cosmos: you think someone is good enough, so you choose him—that's the principle. "Cultivation? We didn't arrange cultivation for him. What's cultivation? We just want to cleanse it, cleanse it step by step, all the way up. Cleanse it—it's as simple as that!" Yet when manifest at different levels, it becomes paving the way, having troubles, enduring hardships, eliminating karma, cultivating, and so on, cultivating one way, practicing another way...

As I was talking about this I revealed a major truth. In this cosmos it's actually not important whether the sentient beings know who I am. But one thing has to be clear, which is, *I* am doing Fa-rectification—no matter who I am, *I* am doing Fa-rectification. I told the old forces before, "It's fine that you don't know who I am, and it's fine that you don't believe who I am, you're not sinning by virtue of that. But, where I'm going—in your concept I'm also cultivating—or what I'll achieve, *that* you do know. So turn around and look at what you've been doing—haven't you been sinning?" Also, at even higher levels the concept of wanting to achieve something doesn't exist, either. It's just a matter of the cosmos's choice. Everything I've been doing during the Fa-rectification and everything I want, to spell it out, are the choice of the future cosmos and the needs of the future cosmos. (*Applause*) So for the beings of the old cosmos, and this includes all the elements of beings, when it comes to the Fa-rectification and what I choose, all beings' harmonizing and completing things according to my choices and contributing their best ideas and approaches—not to change what I want, but to harmonize and complete things according to what I've said—is the best thought a being in the cosmos could have. (*Applause*) But the old forces haven't been doing it that way. They've considered *their* choices the most essential, and have thought that everything I do should harmonize everything they want—they've completely reversed it. I don't want to state their crimes too harshly, right now I don't want to name their crimes. But it's absolutely wrong, they absolutely can't do it that way.

All the Fa I just talked about was to tell you one thing: whether you respect me or not, as your Master, I really, truly don't mind. Back then, as I was saving you, a lot of you were cursing at me. There were people who were cursing at me even while at my classes. I don't mind. I just want to save you. (*Applause*) What I'm trying to say is, personally I don't mind at all how you treat Master. I'm not affected by any factors at any level of the cosmos. But there's one problem, which is, if you don't respect Master, it's wrong according to the principles of the cosmos, and the old forces will take advantage of the gap and destroy you because of this. They'll have seized the biggest excuse to destroy you, since they've seen the entire process of my saving you.

In fact, today's human race would have been destroyed a long time ago if it weren't for the Fa-rectification. The standard of the human race's thinking is already at a level lower than hell. It's because of the Fa-rectification that I atoned for the sins of all sentient beings in the Three Realms. (*Applause*) So think about it, as far as our students are concerned, it was as if I scooped you out of hell back then. (*Applause*) I have truly borne for you the sins you committed over hundreds and thousands of years. And it doesn't stop at just that. Because of this, I will also save you and turn you into Gods. I have spared no effort for you in this process. Along with this, since you'll become Gods at levels that high, I have to give you the honors of Gods at levels that high and all the blessings that you need to have at levels that high. (*Applause*) Never, from the beginning of time, has any God dared to do this. Something like this has never happened before.

Even though the old forces are influencing this affair and want to do things their way, do you know something? All of the old-force beings respect me absolutely! (*Applause*) Even though they created some obstacles to my Fa-rectification, they've never done anything bad that directly targets me, because they respect me. (*Applause. Repeated applause*) So, for those students of ours who are

momentarily in a fog and whose states of mind aren't right, think about it, once you become disrespectful of me, the old forces will do ruthless things to you, and they'll think that this person is just awful. Of course, they absolutely won't annihilate you right away. They'll guide you, have you see more and more false visions, make your mind less and less righteous, make your heart toward Master change in a demonic way, lead you down an evil path, and by doing so make you commit huge sins.

Do you know what principle I go by in Fa-rectification? I disregard all the sins beings have committed in the past! (*Applause*) During this Fa-rectification I only look at beings' attitudes toward the Fa-rectification! (*Applause*) I've left all the gates wide open. As I've told you, if I didn't even look at the attitude toward Fa-rectification, then the new Fa and the new cosmos wouldn't exist. That's why the attitude toward the Fa-rectification is critical. When you've really made a mistake with this, I can't even say anything when the old forces destroy you.

When you're disrespectful of your Master, do you know what I think? I don't mind in the least. Right now, do you know who I am? You only know the human image I manifest. What manifests before you over on the other side are also images *within* the cosmos. In the future you won't know who I ultimately am. No being in the cosmos will know who I ultimately am. Whether you treat me well or not, I don't mind in the least, but the old forces will destroy you in the tribulation. Watch out!

Now that I've said this much, I'll talk a little about what I ask you to do in the Fa-rectification. As you've seen, you are clarifying the facts, sending righteous thoughts, and cultivating yourselves. Right now these three things are the three most important things for Dafa disciples to do. Clarifying the facts, when you view it from the surface in light of the truths at this human level, is exposing the evil persecution. And sending righteous thoughts, that's eliminating those hopeless, filthiest beings' persecution of Dafa disciples. Viewed in light of the truths of slightly higher levels, then, the true point of clarifying the facts is to save sentient beings and to prevent the human race from being eliminated. The old forces have used evil beings to do evil things to Dafa disciples in order to, for one thing, create tests, and secondly, to have me clean out that garbage from the cosmos. Dafa disciples' sending righteous thoughts is fundamentally rejecting the old forces' arrangements and eliminating the evil's persecution. I can tell you, all those things that you do are actually done for yourselves—not a single thing is done for me. At the same time, I can tell you that since the day you started cultivation, and all the way up to today, none of what I've told you or what I've asked you to do was for others. Your cultivation can benefit humankind and society, in cultivation Dafa disciples can become more mature toward one another, and while being persecuted Dafa disciples can reduce the pressure and the losses from the evil persecution. But all of these are by-products. The real purpose of all those things you do is for you to succeed. In the future, you can take a look back at this. Right now none of you need to say how magnificent I am, or this and that about me, your master. In the future, take a look back and you'll see that everything I did was to establish things for you. (*Applause*)

Do well what you should do. This predestined opportunity is hard to come by. Cherish all of this, there won't be a next time. Developing any attachment will ruin you halfway along! Don't entertain or get attached to any human thoughts, and just do what a Dafa disciple should do. Everything that's wonderful, that's the most magnificent, and that's the most glorious awaits you! (*Applause*)

That's all I'm going to say this morning. If I don't leave, I think I'll answer some questions for you in the afternoon. (*Long applause*)

That's all I'll say. Thank you. (*Applause*)

Li Hongzhi

February 15, 2003

Explaining the Fa During the 2003 Lantern Festival at the U.S. West Fa Conference

Teacher: Now that I think about it, it seems like I haven't sat down at a Fa Conference to answer questions for you after July 20 of 1999, right? (*Warm applause*) (*Reply: "Right."*) Then today I'll use this time specifically to answer questions for you. (*Applause*) Things that you haven't been able to resolve for long periods of time in your personal cultivation, in the process of validating Dafa, or in the things that you've encountered—you can bring up all of them. The time is still limited, so not everybody's can be answered, but Master will answer them as much as possible. (*Applause*)

Question: Hello Master. On behalf of the entire group of Shenyang Dafa disciples we pass on greetings to Master.

Teacher: Thank you. (*Applause*) I know all about the situation of practitioners in China.

Question: Dafa disciples from Chengdu pass on their greetings to Master.

Teacher: Thank you. (*Applause*)

Question: Beijing Dafa disciples send their greetings to Master. (Applause) Please allow me to represent Shanghai Dafa disciples to pass on their greetings to Master.

Teacher: Thank you. (*Applause*) Let's just forgo the greetings, since I've read all of those greetings to Master on the Minghui website. (*Applause*)

Question: In our work we often have the opportunity to interact with some high-level officials in the Chinese government. How can we clarify the truth to them better?

Teacher: Actually, as for the specifics of how to do things, you've done them already, and in your actions you've all done very well. Whether things are done well or not is up to the Dafa disciples, and as for what a worldly person chooses, that's up to him. But in saving sentient beings, no matter what you do, still there will be a group of beings that can't be saved. In clarifying the truth, making calls to China, and on the Internet, you will run into people that can't be saved at all. But don't be affected at all by it, and save as many as possible of those who can be saved.

In clarifying the truth, don't pay any attention to the other person's social status, and don't have some sort of concept—first and foremost they're people, and they all have a chance to choose their own futures. No matter what his occupation, first and foremost he needs to have a future, and that's the most important thing for any person. In clarifying the truth, when you hit upon a person's fundamental issues, and at the same time he feels that Dafa disciples are truly saving him, then I think the side of him that's clear about things will show itself.

Chinese people who are living abroad have countless ties with Mainland China, as their relatives and friends are all in China, and there are a lot of people who travel back and forth often. When they see the situation with Dafa around the world they'll talk about it when they're in China, talk about it with their family and friends—they're a form of one-on-one media. Regardless of how much they understand about Dafa, whether they're able to comprehend it or not, they'll go back and tell people about the situation. And with those government officials in particular, don't look at the person's official position. Back when Master was disseminating this Dafa, I too only looked at the person and didn't look at the person's social status, didn't look at the way any group is organized, and didn't look at whether they had good jobs—I didn't look at anything but the person's mind. You shouldn't regard him as some "high-level official," as you're saving his life. That's only a job at this place of ordinary people. Today they're being allowed to do this, so they're officials, and tomorrow if they're not allowed to do it then they'll be nothing at all. So in offering people salvation and saving people, those

things aren't looked at.

Question: Why did the old forces in the cosmos arrange two entirely different social systems in this world?

Teacher: This is a really big thing to discuss. I will just briefly talk about it from one angle. You know that the Roman Empire of 2,000 years ago was very powerful. Actually, when any people are dominating in the world, that's an honor Gods give them. However, if they then turn around and persecute Gods, then Gods will take back that honor and severely punish them. The old forces in history wanted to leave behind a testimony for the righteous Fa of the future, they also wanted the Christians at that time to eliminate their karma amidst the tribulations, to establish the mighty virtue of Gods, and to leave behind that legacy, so they chose a person named Nero to be the king of Rome. He undermined people's morality, did many stupid and bad things, and committed a most evil deed in persecuting Christians. And so the powerful, flourishing Roman Empire declined from that point on.

The old forces believe that that Nero wasn't enough for Dafa disciples in today's Fa-rectification, so they had to find an even more wicked, stupid, and shameless villain, and at the same time create something before Dafa's wide spreading in the world, something for Dafa in the future, and that thing, it would have to be capable of being used to that degree, so that thing was the **** Party. They created it, and had to, through a process in history, allow it to accumulate experience in ruling with an iron fist, and allow it to develop all kinds of strong-arm tactics in an effort to sustain itself amidst constant crises. It was made to abolish belief in Gods on the basis of atheism, because the people of the world who believed in Gods could never have reached the desired state, where people fear no Gods or the authority of heaven, where man fights against heaven, the earth, and his fellow human beings. That process went on for almost 100 years, and they had already considered how to put an end to it when they were working on it, so how it began definitely wasn't glorious either. Actually we all know that the Paris Commune of 1871 was a gang of scoundrels in society rebelling.

It's not that I'm badmouthing the **** Party, and that's because they too talked about themselves as the "scoundrel proletariat." I remember that during the Cultural Revolution when they had political studies, there was this issue discussed, where people talked about whether the conflict with those "scoundrels" of society was one with enemies or one within the people. When discussing this, some people would say that the issue with those scoundrels could be elevated to the level of a conflict with an enemy, and others disagreed. The reason for the disagreement was that they said the Paris Commune of 1871 was an uprising of scoundrels, and that it was the ancestor of our **** Party. This isn't a joke, as they really acknowledged the "scoundrel proletariat," but now they think it doesn't sound so good, so they took out the word "scoundrel" and just say "proletariat."

It's against the cosmos, or to put it another way, the two types of elements in the cosmos, positive and negative, are all against it. In fact, this cosmos is composed of the two types of elements of life, the positive and the negative, so that's to say that even the cosmos is against it. So, the Buddhas, Daos, Gods, and Demons of the cosmos all want to get rid of it, so it constantly faces the possibility of being surrounded layer after layer and eliminated. But, its very emergence was not a simple matter, and to allow it to sustain itself for nearly 100 years was not a simple matter either. That's because the cosmos's old forces would have it ready for today's Dafa after tempering it into maturity, and also because no political power in the human world could do such things. But, why was such a long time needed? I've said that it needed to be tempered to that degree, so it needed to undergo a process, and that process was dangerous for it because the entire cosmos is against it. The beings on the earth correspond to the beings in the heavens, after all, so from the earth to the heavens, the beings of the entire cosmos pose a threat to it. So the old forces then had to think of ways to sustain it. The phenomena at the ordinary human level can reflect the phenomena in the heavens. The old forces in the

heavens were directly controlling things, and the people on the earth were also quite important and couldn't be annihilated on the surface, so it was allowed to achieve a military balance, and at the same time form a large bloc.

In normal societies, people and governments are living a normal way of life that's been given to humans by Gods of the cosmos. So in order to eliminate this element, the Party, the cosmos's many Gods caused the normal nations on earth to become strong militarily. But that strengthening posed a threat to it, so the old forces made it strong, too. So that's why the arms race appeared in the last century's decade of the 60's—human beings were in the Cold War crisis, competing with each other militarily, developing the military industry on a large scale, and researching and producing cutting-edge weapons. The old forces' goal was to stop it from being demolished or to lose its capacity before being used, so it had to be sustained no matter what and had to go through that process in history, and at the same time within the crises it was made to be more authoritarian. It's really been hard for it to survive for as long as it has. But it wasn't allowed for it to be too powerful when the time came to put it to use; way back when, its coalition was very large.

Now I'm not deliberately criticizing that Party—I'm talking about just how exactly this cosmos was set up. We don't get involved in politics, but I know about everything, and of course, I only talk about the reasons behind it when you have persecuted the Dafa disciples. Let me say more about the question that was just raised. So when it was time to put it to use, it couldn't be that large. All the people in the world were to be saved, so if there were so many countries that had that system, how could the people in those places be saved? The old forces then caused normal societies' economies to decline steeply, at the same time dismantling that enormous system that had been laboriously sustained for a century. That form of dismantling wouldn't cause retaliation or conflict—it was a steady, smooth dismantling. It only left behind that place, China, because Dafa was to be spread there—that party had been tempered to a satisfactory state and was meant to be used there, so that was the only place where it was left, whereas it had collapsed everywhere else. That's why in our time, 100 years after its appearance, all of a sudden it collapsed—something the world's people couldn't have imagined. Gods control absolutely everything of the human race, and humans have never been in control of their fate—it's all been controlled from above. Then China looks very isolated, so a few little ones are left, like North Korea and the like, who can't do anything on a large scale in terms of economic or military capacity, but do serve as companions, giving it a little bit of hope of survival.

So you've seen this, in the last few decades the United States has been very powerful militarily, and economically too, and the U.S. always gets involved in handling a lot of matters, such as the violation of human rights, the violation of religious freedom, and so on, and maintaining a certain amount of justice in the international community. These aren't things that people can explain clearly. The gang of scoundrels that persecute Dafa disciples says that the U.S. is the international police. Actually, the U.S. really is the international police, as arranged by the old forces. China is the stage for carrying out this historic play, and the countries all over the world are the audience as well as the actors. But, order in this society does need to be enforced by somebody—it can't be allowed to go unchecked. In the past the principles of this place had it that the victor governs the country, the world is conquered with military force, and the strong are heroes. That's the opposite of the principles of the cosmos. But the reason you can do that is because Gods allow you to do it—if you can do it well, Gods will give you glory and allow you to be strong and prosperous. That was man's law in the past. If the entire human race becomes peaceful, the U.S. will resign from that historic role of its own accord. What I've talked about is the old forces' arrangement for this affair, that's where it came from.

Question: Recently there's been some difficulty and confusion in my relationship (audience laughs), and I've experienced a lot of hardship in this regard.

Teacher: I can answer you this way. As long as you exist in this social environment of ordinary people, whether you're a human, a rock, a plant, or an animal, you're all immersed in emotion, and even the gaps between particles are immersed in emotion. So it's not possible for an ordinary person to escape from emotion. It can only be done through cultivation. But as for the form our cultivation today takes, I've already told you what kind of cultivation form it is: By having that little bit of ordinary people's stuff left there, you can validate the Fa right now. Without that little bit of ordinary people's stuff, I'm telling you, you wouldn't be able to validate the Fa here, not to mention the issue of saving sentient beings. It's impossible to have Gods here rectifying the Fa, to have Gods come to save sentient beings—the gap is too great. There's no way Gods could take humans to be that important. Only by being among humans can you take the beings here as something important, and it's only because you still have human things left at the surface that you can do that.

You know that human beings are one level of the cosmos, and a level that can't be omitted, so it must be saved and the Fa must be right. So when you have that bit of human stuff you're able to do Dafa work and cultivate. But, if you don't pay enough attention it will interfere with you—that's where that comes from. Recently I read a few articles written by practitioners, and one was by somebody who's homeless and wandering about. He was talking about how his wife is a Dafa disciple and how wonderful she is, but in those words I saw his emotions. And there was another person who talked about how wonderful her husband was, and I saw emotion there, too. I'm not saying that you did something wrong. Some ordinary people read those articles, too, and during Fa-rectification they're effective when ordinary people read them, so I can't say that that's not good. In fact, that's just caused by that little bit of human stuff you still have.

But I think that as cultivators you shouldn't be affected like that by emotion. Yet you might think, "If I really cultivate well in this regard, if I'm really not affected by emotion, I'll be just like a big rock." No, it's not like that at all—cultivators are compassionate, and if you look at sentient beings when your righteous thoughts are really strong, then think about it, will that kind of thing still happen? Of course, sometimes you say that you've tried hard but still can't do it. Then with that effort you put in, were you trying to solve only that specific problem? Did the state of your cultivation really get to that point? Of course, I'm not just talking about the practitioner who submitted the question. No matter what, as cultivators you need to deal with it in the right way or else the old forces will make trouble for you. Except for newer students, from July 20 of 1999 on, Master hasn't created any personal cultivation tests for you, and that's because overall your personal cultivation has changed in every respect so that it's in the direction of saving sentient beings and validating Dafa. (*Applause*)

Question: Are all of the people that we meet in clarifying the truth people who have predestined relationships with us? Are they sentient beings in our worlds?

Teacher: My Law Bodies will arrange it like that, and the old forces will arrange it like that. Of course, maybe you're very resourceful in clarifying the truth, and you're able to touch more people's hearts with the way that you clarify the truth, so perhaps you'll be asked to save sentient beings that don't have a direct relationship with you. With compassion, you'll have ways to change them. That kind of situation is possible. That also means that when it comes to saving sentient beings, there's no separation of responsibilities into those that are mine versus those that aren't. You can't distinguish them. That'd be having thoughts of differentiating, and that's not the compassion of a Great Enlightened Being. It's not like how it is with ordinary people, where I'll be especially good to the people in my family and it's different for outsiders. How could that work? Compassion... Compassion... It's *not* a human emotion.

Question: Sichuan Province Dafa disciples and their families send their greetings to Master.

Teacher: Thank you. (*Applause*)

Question: Dafa disciples being persecuted in jails, forced labor camps, detention centers, and mental hospitals in various places in Sichuan send their greetings to Master.

Teacher: Thank you. (*Applause*) I'm fully aware of the situation in Sichuan, too. Master is very much aware.

Question: In the face of the old forces' persecution, cohesion among Dafa disciples is very important. How can we quickly improve as a whole?

Teacher: You know, I never talk about the word "solidarity," and that's because that's about ordinary people forcing something, it's a form. What cultivators talk about is improvement in *xinxing*, fundamental improvement. A cultivator should know all that needs to be done, and if he doesn't do well, I'd say that's because he hasn't studied the Fa well, right? What to do and what not to do, aren't we all clear on our own? In fact we should be clear. But, every location has contact persons, and there are Dafa Associations and Assistance Centers, so in other words overall there's a need for coordination. So the kind of state where whenever someone thinks about what we should do now or what needs to be done tomorrow and everyone just immediately knows, right now we still can't get to that point, so we had to have people step forward to do the coordination and communication, to do those types of things. Right now, whether Dafa disciples are validating the Fa as a group or clarifying the truth as individuals, all of those are what Dafa requires. As long as Fa-rectification requires it, you should do it well, and there's no room for negotiation. And don't get conceited because of your roles, and don't think you're different from others. You're each a particle. And in my eyes nobody is better than anyone else, since I scooped all of you up at the same time. (*Applause*) Some are more capable when it comes to one thing, others with another—you definitely shouldn't let your thoughts run wild based on that. You say that you have such great abilities and so on and so forth, but that was all bestowed upon you by the Fa! Actually, it wouldn't work if you failed to attain that level of abilities. Fa-rectification required your wisdom to reach that point, so you definitely shouldn't think that you're so capable. Some practitioners want me to check out their abilities and skills. But actually, what I think is, all of that was given by me, so there's no need to look. (*Audience laughs, applauds*)

Question: Sometimes I really feel so perplexed. Emotion (qing) is truly so hard to let go of during cultivation, and it's as if ever since the beginning of my cultivation, every test is a test of emotion, as if the most difficult test in life is the test of emotion.

Teacher: I guess you all heard it clearly, right? You've treated emotion as a test, and that's because you haven't let it go, so you constantly have to pass it. (*Audience laughs*) But I'm not forcing you all to let it go today, I'm just pointing this out to you clearly. I'm not saying you can do it right away. When I tell you what's going on, you should just study the Fa more. When the righteous thoughts get stronger and stronger, when you truly have compassion toward sentient beings, then there won't be any more emotion to trouble you, and none of your family members that you have an issue of emotion with will again say that you're heartless towards them, and there won't be any more conflicts because of the issue of emotion. You can talk all you want about it, but it still comes down to you needing to improve.

I can sense the state of your thinking—"It's hard, really hard." But didn't you wait those thousands of years just for today?! Could your future Consummation compare with this little bit that you're enduring today?! (*Applause*) Well, sometimes I think, if today I wasn't here to save you and was one of you, I have to say, it'd be so easy for me to let go of those little things! (*Applause*) It's probably

just because Master sees through all of it that I say this, hah hah. (*Teacher laughs*)¹

Question: Because of attachments, I've been in a poor state for a long time. I want to do Dafa work well, yet I'm afraid that my poor state will affect other practitioners. Should I set the work aside and really put a lot into cultivating myself for a period of time?

Teacher: It won't affect anything if you study the Fa while you do Dafa work. Master doesn't have any objection to that. Also, those of you here, whether you're a student or you have a job, none of you can neglect the role that you play in the ordinary people's society. You all have to do well in everything that you should do, and at the same time it makes things easier in your work of validating Dafa and clarifying the truth. Otherwise, if you can't even be financially stable, if on a daily basis you have to worry about shelter and food, if the most basic needs of life can't be assured, how can you have extra energy to validate the Fa? Isn't that interference? Don't make unnecessary troubles for yourself, and don't just follow along without much thought. If you have a better source of income and want to change your way of living, I'm not against it. What I'm saying is, if all of you go and stop working that's just totally unacceptable.

Do you know how important this form of cultivation of today's Dafa disciples is? In the time to come, here at this place of humans, a human becoming a God will no longer be a myth. Previously in this place of humans, when people talked about cultivation of this or cultivation of that, it was all just cultivating the assistant spirit—humans weren't cultivating at all. In the future, the future that you're forging, you'll have left behind in this place the path for humans to become Gods! Everything you're doing today is the actual practice that will be used as examples in the future, [including the aspect] of being able to cultivate while doing ordinary people's work. If you go to extremes you'll wreck this path, so you cannot go to extremes. You should just openly and nobly do well in what you should do in society, and then cultivate. Then you'll definitely be able to meet the standard that cultivators should meet, the standard for Consummation, because this is the path that the people of the future will take.

The human society of the future is one without religion, and everyone will be a part of society, people will be participating in everything of that society, and perhaps the Fa-truths at this level of human beings and their inner meanings at higher levels will be integrated throughout the textbooks that students study. So in this Fa-rectification it's being made possible for man to become Gods. It's not a change at this level of human beings—it involves a systematic harmonizing and perfecting of the entire cosmic system, it's the harmonizing and perfecting of the Fa. This type of event where people persecute Gods who are here to save people won't exist again. Situations like Jesus being crucified will absolutely never be allowed to happen again. So how we walk the path of cultivation well in this place of ordinary people has become of utmost importance.

Question: How can Dafa disciples do our part as a whole during Fa-rectification?

Teacher: Cooperate and coordinate with each other. When doing things as a group, by yourself, or as a few people together, you need to cooperate and coordinate well. With the Fa here you won't really make mistakes, because you've been tempered to maturity and should know what to do. In the most recent period, I haven't intervened in anything you've done, but I have been observing all of the various problems you have brought to my attention. That's because I can't let you rely on me forever, and I can't deprive you of all your chances to establish your own mighty virtue. You have to walk your own path, and it's okay to trip and fall, you know how to pick yourselves up, and you know how to treasure everything that you do, and do everything afterwards even better. So I won't lead you by the hand anymore. As much as possible I try to have you reflect on things more, and that means giving you

¹ Translator's note: The Chinese word used here and throughout the lecture is flexible and can mean any of a few things, such as a smile, a friendly laugh or chuckle, etc.

opportunities, giving you opportunities to walk the path yourselves. I'll speak up when problems arise at the level of the whole body, but as for a lot of specific things, I'm not going to speak up anymore under normal circumstances.

Question: When sending righteous thoughts, does the hand's posture affect the outcome?

Teacher: Well in principle, as long as you're rational and clearheaded, making hand gestures or not won't affect anything. But, it's apparent from your hand gestures whether you've entered into tranquility or not, or if you've fallen into a foggy state. (*Teacher laughs*) So when you send righteous thoughts you have to be alert. And what's that state like? It's very pleasant, as if everything is still and quiet and the whole body is enveloped by energy.

Question: During this special period of Fa-rectification, some disciples in the United States have lost their jobs due to the economy...

Teacher: That's the old forces' doing. You should always remember this: I don't acknowledge any of the interference that's occurring among Dafa disciples today; all of the things that shouldn't happen are the old forces' arrangements. They see your personal cultivation as the first priority. Of course, personal Consummation *is* the first priority, since there's nothing more to talk about if you can't reach Consummation. But today's Dafa disciples are doing something different from the cultivation ways in every other period in history, and that's because you are shouldering a greater responsibility that surpasses your personal Consummation. Saving sentient beings and validating the Fa, these far surpass your personal cultivation, they're even greater things. And that's something that the old forces can't handle correctly, and they're interfering with you. Negate them, and face all of it with the right thoughts!

Question: For a period of time while validating the Fa, I was able to remain steadfast and continue down my path when encountering a lot of tribulations and tests. After leaving China, especially over the past few months, the thought karma has been very severe. Within it there's even elements of being disrespectful to Master, having me give up cultivation, and so on.

Teacher: I think that as long as you study the Fa more, your righteous thoughts will be strong. For some practitioners, sometimes you've really gotten caught up in doing things to clarify the truth and have overlooked Fa-study. The things of Dafa disciples surpass personal cultivation, such as our currently validating the Fa, clarifying the truth, and saving sentient beings, but all of these are actually based on a foundation of personal Consummation, so if you can't reach personal Consummation then everything else is out of the question. Validating the Fa isn't something ordinary people do; only Dafa disciples are worthy of doing it. So now study and study the Fa more, study the Fa more. Also, whatever we do, we have to do it in an upright way, to really do it like a cultivator. Don't let the old forces take advantage of any gaps. When they take advantage of your gaps they'll do those kinds of things [you mentioned].

Did you know this? When the high-level old forces arranged this tribulation, the ultimate reason was to clean out in one shot those not-so-good beings of the cosmos while doing so-called "tempering" of Dafa disciples during this period, while at the same time cleaning out the universe. That's what the old forces arranged to be done. They've made what they want their first priority, instead of making my objective of the Fa-rectification the number one need. So when you encounter those difficulties, do more checking on your own part, do things in a more upright way, and don't let the old forces take advantage of any gaps. Those wicked beings that are being controlled by the old forces have already seen their impending doom, so it's like they're in chaos, and they act desperately like cornered rats—they'll do anything, no matter how bad. Pay attention to these things and don't let them take advantage of any gaps.

Question: Disciples from Weifang City of Shandong Province pass on their greetings to Master!

Teacher: Thank you. (*Applause*)

Question: A Falun Gong practitioner who was forcibly brainwashed still wants to cultivate, but he says that Master no longer looks after him now. Master, will you still look after him?

Teacher: He's thinking that way because he feels that he's let Master down and has let Dafa down and those thoughts have formed new attachments. And having done what he did, he's still thinking about things with a human mind and is still not clearheaded—that's why he said that. This affair hasn't ended, so aren't what you do well and don't do well before it ends part of the cultivation process? Yes! You know, in the past it was hard to cultivate the Dao. When facing a test, as soon as someone had one sub-par thought, he would lose the chance forever to cultivate the Dao, and that was for sure. The old forces think that's how I look at it too. "Okay, now that we've forced him to write some kind of document, you, Li Hongzhi, you can't keep him now since he betrayed you. You've done so much to save him, yet he betrayed you. You definitely can't keep him. And what's to be done if he can't be kept? Eliminate him."

That's how the old forces think, and that's how they've arranged things. But I haven't done things that way—I *will* save him. He didn't do well today, but aren't you old forces still persecuting people? I'll have him do things over tomorrow, and definitely have him do them well! (*Applause*) Hasn't what's happened proven that Dafa disciples have become more and more rational, become more and more clearheaded, and done better and better? Aren't they more and more determined?! (*Applause*) When you ultimately really do become determined, then all of what you did in the past can only be the cultivation process playing out. That's really how it is. Master is handling this matter with the greatest compassion. (*Applause*)

But there are some people who really have let me down, and in reality it was all caused by that thinking. You've seen this in the news on Clearwisdom that's sent to us from China: Some people did things in an open and upright way, without fear, and so they weren't persecuted; and when they were sent to forced labor camps, the evil in other dimensions couldn't take it and had to let them out. Some people have all kinds of fears and their human thoughts are many, so they're persecuted severely. Even when they've been persecuted to the brink of death, they still can't break out of human attachments, and the Fa-guardian Gods are anxious about it but can't do anything. Those who've departed while holding onto their attachments of fear, will I have you Consummate, or not? The truth is, those are all displays of human attachments. Of course, it's easy to talk about that here and now, but it's not easy in that type of evil situation. That's the path of a human walking towards Godhood—that's why it's hard!

Question: I'm a practitioner from Korea, and I often run into quarrels and conflicts during Fa-rectification activities and in cooperating with fellow practitioners. For sure it's because I have attachments. What should I do?

Teacher: It's not like that just in Korea, because conflicts unfold in other areas too, and those problems used to happen among Mainland Chinese practitioners as well. If each person thinks that he has some skills, they all think that they're capable, each of them thinks that he's right, and they refuse to give ground, then actually, at that point there are problems with those people who won't give ground. What they're thinking is, "This idea of mine can serve the Fa better," and they never think, "I'm showing off." But the old forces will latch on to his not giving ground and constantly strengthen it—"You're right, you're right, what you're doing is exactly right!" So at that time he's not clearheaded. Truly think about yourself rationally and then think about other people's ideas, and I think things will

be done well then. Why is it that at those times nobody looks at themselves? Don't worry about losing the chance to implement your own ideas, and even less should you be unwilling to admit that others' are better.

Now a God, he doesn't look at whether your idea was adopted. At those times he looks at whether your attachment was let go of. If you let it go, and your idea wasn't implemented—with regard to that matter you were able to let it go, and were even able to help do it better—then you improved, and you were able to raise your level. What's cultivation? *That* is cultivation. If you insist on holding your ground and emphasizing your own ideas, then while it may look like it's for the Fa, in fact it's being irrational, and you have not truly thought about it deeply or considered things from all angles more. But of course it won't do if [you don't speak up even when you see others] really not considering problems fully and bringing losses to Dafa, and it really won't do if you spot attachments and impure thoughts. So you need to become more mature in the Fa.

I talked about this while teaching the Fa in Philadelphia, so whenever you run into it, students can read that again. Since this issue is so prominent, be on your guard whenever it comes up. Of course, when you're arguing there's always ample reason, the environment and setting are different each time, and the specific circumstances are different. As for how to deal with it specifically, it still goes back to your doing well in cultivation.

Question: Is it true that the old forces are controlling Europe especially severely?

Teacher: The way I see it, they're only controlling China severely. (*Audience laughs*) It's just like back around July 20 of 1999, when the heavens were crumbling, and level after level was brimming with evil—it's just that people couldn't see it, and every dimensional layer was saturated with all of the evil that the old forces had prepared for Dafa. I've told you before that I'd do this in two steps—the Fa-rectification and the Fa's rectifying of the human world—and if I combined them and did it in one step, then the entire world would launch an attack against Dafa disciples. Of course, doing it in one shot would mean more Dafa disciples, and there would be three and a half billion Dafa disciples. I split it into two steps: The first group consists of Fa-rectification period Dafa disciples, and the second group consists of those during the Fa's rectification of the human world. In the beginning when the evil came, at once it blotted out the sky and covered up the earth, but it couldn't exert itself outside of China. So they would rally those wicked things against all of the existing Dafa disciples, and it was really terrifying for you back then. So to lessen the pressure and the persecution of Dafa disciples, I separated Dafa disciples and those things. I had those evil things come at me, and eliminated them quickly and on a large scale at the same time, so back then there was a lot of harm done to my surface material body. Later on I'd almost cleaned out all of those things, it took a year to do it, and otherwise my Dafa disciples really couldn't have borne it. I blocked all of it. In fact, what the Dafa disciples endured couldn't compare to the enormous number of those things and how wicked they were. (*Applause*) Didn't Nostradamus say several hundred years ago that a great King of Terror would come from the sky in July of 1999? If all of it had been done in one shot, it would've been a huge tribulation on a global scale, and everyone would have known that it arrived. So the old forces were actually happy that I did it in two steps, since that way the people outside of China couldn't detect it. So during the persecution the evil spread huge, outrageous lies, but the world's people were just numb to it.

Question: What special significance is there for the process of spreading the Fa and Fa-rectification here in the United States?

Teacher: I've never said that there was some special significance. I can choose to go anywhere, and it's right that I chose to stay in the United States. In the beginning the old forces arranged for me to go to France, and it was even mentioned in prophecies. For various reasons, though, I came to the U.S.

But it's not that I have some special preference for the U.S. Let me tell you, every person in the entire world was at one point part of my family (*applause*), including the worst people, or else they'd have no chance to be a human being during this time. What happened in history is what they have gone through and what they chose for themselves. The most despicable are the old forces. They dare to massacre my people at will since they don't belong to them. What's held in Master's heart are all the people there are. (*Applause*)

Question: Master said at one point that there are still some people with strong predestined relationships who haven't obtained the Fa. May I ask revered Master what the situation is now?

Teacher: It's hard to tell based on the current situation. Why do I tell you to save them? You don't know how many relatives from the past you have in this world. Do your best to save them!

Question: How many more people with predestined relationships are there?

Teacher: I can tell you, without a predestined relationship, you can't be a human being in this world today—not a single person without a predestined relationship could be in this world. (*Applause*) It's just that in the course of history they arranged different roles for themselves. Your being able to become Dafa disciples, that's what you arranged for yourselves in history. And those who were weeded out for persecuting Dafa, that too is what they arranged for themselves in history. When a being has deviated, keeps on doing bad things, becomes that bad, and gradually progresses to that point, that's actually a choice.

Question: What's the relationship among: Negating the old forces' arrangements and removing attachments, continually improving through cultivation, and not giving the old forces gaps to take advantage of?

Teacher: When you're able to walk a righteous path, that means your righteous thoughts are strong, you're doing things according to Dafa's requirements, and you're doing things according to Master's requirements, then you are negating the old forces, and you are walking your path in a righteous way. Those rotten ghosts that are intent on disrupting the Fa really like it when you're in disarray, as the old forces' whole goal is to have all this end up according to their arrangements. I'll tell you, when all that you're doing today is in line with what I have taught you to do, then that's not letting them take advantage of your gaps and not letting them find excuses to persecute you. I don't acknowledge the persecution that's going on in China today, and the old forces are becoming more and more fearful because of that. It's because they know I absolutely can't acknowledge it. They're now facing this with great fear and trepidation. The high-level beings of the old forces have already been destroyed in the Fa-rectification, yet those who were separated inside the Three Realms in the early days still can't for the time being see the true situation—that their highest levels have been destroyed—and that's the state of affairs.

Question: Ever since the Fa-rectification period began, my state has been up and down, and I haven't been able to let go of my pursuit of comfort all this time, so I'm quite distressed.

Teacher: Master can help you, but only as long as you know to strive to improve. (*Applause*)

Question: When the Fa rectifies the human world, the vast majority of Dafa disciples will return to their rightful places and Consummate. So who will help Master in Fa-rectification during the latter ten years?

Teacher: As for this, (*Teacher laughs*) you're still thinking with a human mentality. While you've been spreading the Fa, a lot of people have obtained the Fa, but they can't understand the Fa deeply since once they understood the Fa they'd become Fa-rectification period Dafa disciples. There's a line drawn there, so those old forces don't dare let them obtain the Fa. I didn't push this any further,

since I needed to focus on the matter of the overall Fa-rectification and on resolving things in the Fa-rectification, plus, they'll still have chances in the future. But these things that you're doing won't be in vain, they're all magnificent and terrific, and that's because you've established a foundation for the cultivators of the future, you've chosen the cultivators of the future. So that's been done very well.

When clarifying the truth, have you discovered the following problem? They can accept everything when you talk about people being persecuted. Talk about freedom of belief getting trampled, the violation of human rights, and so on, and they can accept it all, but as soon as you talk about the Fa principles they're blocked off. You're probably all aware of that. The reason that happens is, when somebody can follow you in understanding things based on the Fa principles, he's already obtained the Fa and he's about to cultivate, so when it comes to his obtaining the Fa the old forces will definitely block it. It's a test for him. If he really wants to obtain it, and no matter what he still wants to obtain it, then he can obtain it. So in other words, right now there really is a very big obstacle for people who want to come and be one of the Dafa disciples. There are special ones that can enter, though. If they can give up everything then they can enter, but otherwise they can't enter right now. But for him to learn the exercises during the period when Dafa is being persecuted, even though he hasn't joined the ranks of Fa-rectification Dafa disciples, he's already laid the foundation for his future cultivation. That's how it is. *(Applause)*

Question: When Gods and Buddhas are all majestically displayed, and people are all cultivating after seeing the truth, will it still count as cultivation?

Teacher: Your clarifying the truth is selecting the cultivators of the future, so whether someone is able to learn it now is extremely important. For the rest of the people, it's not that they'll be cleaned out if they can't cultivate, for humankind will become an important level of the cosmos and be part of what Dafa will encompass. So there will still be people on this earth in the future. Of course, only those who are bad and completely unacceptable will be weeded out.

Question: Shijiazhuang and Beijing disciples pass on their greetings to Master!

Teacher: Thank you!

Question: What does "Looking with a smile, at the Gods being foolish" mean?

Teacher: You know what those old forces did? At the beginning they were making fun of me, especially the ones at low levels. Now they don't dare to laugh, because they've seen all of the truth, and they're clear on everything. So I'm smiling at their foolishness. *(Audience laughs)*

Question: How should we understand the fact that Zhuan Falun is to be left for the future, and other lectures are all explaining Zhuan Falun, and that we should cultivate strictly according to Zhuan Falun?

Teacher: You should indeed cultivate strictly according to *Zhuan Falun*, and other books can be read as reference, they're all Fa. The people of the future won't have as much mighty virtue as today's Fa-rectification period Dafa disciples, because they won't go through a tribulation like the one today's Fa-rectification period Dafa disciples are facing, and there are historic reasons too of course. So the Fa's manifestation won't be as grand as today's. There are endless Buddhas, Daos and Gods behind every word of *Zhuan Falun*. Maybe in the future it won't manifest like that. That doesn't mean the Fa won't be good anymore, just that not as much will be shown. Dafa disciples, I won't set a ceiling for you, as you're now in the midst of establishing mighty virtue. *(Teacher laughs) (Applause)*

Question: Not acknowledging the old forces is very important, so could we ask revered Master to talk about how to do well in this? Thank you.

Teacher: Well, what I just talked about was all about these things. Don't acknowledge the old forces' arrangements, and negate this entire persecution they arranged. They want to have the Dafa disciples become mature through this persecution—that's the aspect of it that has unfolded before people's eyes. The aspect of it that hasn't shown itself is that if everything they want to do succeeded, then that'd be something the future couldn't acknowledge. What's manifest here on this human side is very simple. The side of you that has completed cultivation knows what's going on, and I don't acknowledge any of the old forces' arrangements or this current persecution.

Let's take an extremely microcosmic, enormous being in the cosmos, one that no Gods can know, it saw that the cosmic celestial bodies would head towards disintegration during a certain period, and because of a being's one instinctive thought of not wanting to head towards destruction, it set in motion the layers and layers of firmaments as well as the layers and layers of cosmic bodies inside those layers and layers of firmaments, all the way down to the layers and layers of universes inside the multitude of cosmic bodies and layers and layers of beings inside the multitude of universes, and it caused the gigantic Gods in the various firmaments to arrange ways to save themselves. From top to bottom there were more Gods participating at level after level, making even more detailed arrangements, all the way down to the Three Realms. Because that one thought came from an extremely high level, the cosmos's sentient beings all thought it was the Will of Heaven, and that there was no question they'd meet with complete success, rescuing this grand firmament and cosmic body from destruction. Because of the meticulousness of the arrangements made by the Gods at many levels of cosmic bodies, the arrangements looked so perfect that they excited the multitude of Gods, gave their confidence a big boost and made them believe that they finally had a chance to be saved. At the time, twenty percent of the Gods out of the levels upon levels of beings participated in the affair, and that's how the old forces came about.

The sentient beings don't want to be destroyed, and that's only natural. But the layers upon layers of beings are all contained within the grand firmament, and over the long course of history everything had been progressing toward the end according to the Fa's law of the process of formation-stasis-degeneration-destruction, and no being or element could escape it. For sentient beings, when everything disintegrates and there are no conditions for life to exist, then not a single thing can exist. That's much more terrifying than the re-formation of the cosmos's cosmic bodies. The Fa's law of formation-stasis-degeneration-destruction created all of the elements, matter, and life in the old cosmos, and at the same time established the Fa's law that everything would degenerate. That's the deterioration from within of all of the elements that make up the cosmos, manifesting itself among the beings as the degeneration of the standard of thoughts and conduct, and once they decline to a certain point they're unsalvageable, and from there they head towards the final stage of destruction. The old forces pushed to the very limit the Gods' power and wisdom in arranging what they thought to be the most perfect future, and got so excited that they completely forgot about a key point: That is, when the cosmos progresses to the stage of degeneration, all of the sentient beings and elements in the cosmos are, without exception, in the process of degeneration—the beings, the ways of thinking, the elements, and standards are all impure—and the point at which the standards and everything of beings became no good was arrived at gradually over the gigantic course of history. The Fa's laws and standards have, over the long course of history, all lost their original magnificence and righteous purity, and so the sentient beings are even more powerless to detect this type of change. That's because those Gods who are at very high levels never cared about the conduct of the beings below them, much less did they heed my warnings during Fa-rectification. In other words, when the cosmos has reached that point, no matter how good those ideas are that the beings in the cosmos come up with to save themselves, that's still the conduct of beings in the stage of degeneration and destruction, and falls short of the standard during "formation-stasis" at the cosmos's beginning and middle stages; and that falls even shorter of the

standard of the new cosmos, which is countless times higher than that of the old cosmos. So none of the things the multitude of Gods have done are acknowledged by any of what's outside of the cosmos. During Fa-rectification I traversed all of the firmaments and saw that those ultimate arrangements of theirs all have omissions and can't be made complete or harmonized. During Fa-rectification I also traversed every final part of what's related to the old forces, yet I discovered that the enormous being who had the one thought that led to gigantic disruptions of the true Fa-rectification is not the final being, and there are lots and lots of elements that are higher than it. There, all of the old forces' arrangements were suddenly gone—all of their arrangements were without foundation, they couldn't resolve anything, and they disappeared without a conclusion. Yet all of those arrangements by the old forces formed true disruptions and demonic obstacles to the Fa-rectification, and they've become enormous tribulations in Fa-rectification. In Fa-rectification it misled all of the Lords, Kings, and sentient beings, and the pressure during Fa-rectification also came from the direct manipulation by all of those sentient beings and old forces. When all of this came to pass, when the sentient beings saw all of this, suddenly it was like they couldn't think. They saw that what I had said originally and my warnings during Fa-rectification were all true, and they were shocked and speechless—they immediately realized that the sentient beings had all committed crimes against Fa-rectification. They had always thought of me as doing cultivation, or even that they were bringing me along as a cultivator. I think that at this point they'll never dare to think like that again.

This tribulation that the old forces arranged in the human world, on the surface it's being responsible to cultivators, to Fa-rectification, and to me, but in reality the goal of what they arranged was being responsible to what they wanted to do, and all of this that they arranged is not at all what the new cosmos of the future would want, and at the same time it has done a huge amount of damage to the true Fa-rectification. A great deal of what I'd wanted was forcibly destroyed by them. History has passed, and what was lost is hard to recover. How could they possibly bear the responsibility for all of that?!

Now as practitioners, if in this tribulation you can manage not to acknowledge the old forces' arrangements, then you can make it through. And those who haven't done well, the bottom line is, aren't you acknowledging the old forces' arrangements? Once you acknowledge them isn't it like you're one of them? Because you haven't done well amidst the persecution it's caused instability among the practitioners and aggravated the persecution, so aren't you, too, adding fuel to the fire and helping the evil? Negate them, completely negate everything of the old forces!

Question: Why do the old forces dare to kill Dafa disciples in the persecution?

Teacher: There are two situations here. One is that in the past the old forces felt that a type of mentality arose among Dafa disciples, which is, once you cultivate in Dafa you think it's like having insurance, and there's nothing to be afraid of, there's no sickness or death, this or that won't happen, and everybody just has good fortune. But, once that mentality arises there's going to be trouble. The old forces will do what they want to do, and once you unknowingly acknowledge their arrangements they'll have excuses to control you and create various types of danger for you. Of course, Dafa disciples won't die like ordinary people, and even for those who've departed ahead of their time what awaits them is the very best—that's for sure. (*Applause*) So during this period, what they do is take a few away first. Of course, among those who've died, there's also what they'd arranged in previous lives. What's their goal? To have you see that studying Dafa isn't like having some kind of insurance and that you still need to do well, and that not doing well is a problem. So they're doing that kind of thing, and it's because they see personal cultivation as more important than validating the Fa. Also, they're doing these things in this time during Fa-rectification when Dafa disciples are urgently needed in saving sentient beings—aren't they causing serious trouble? How many beings can a Dafa disciple

save while he's in this world, right? Isn't that doing something bad?

The old forces will interfere with practitioners from time to time, but think about how important saving sentient beings is! Why do they have to cause all that interference. Don't acknowledge it! Since none of them are worthy of participating, what I wanted was for none of the sentient beings to interfere, for them all to wait there, and I would have gone forward rectifying things, and the worst beings, however bad they might be, and no matter what kind of mistakes they'd made in history, all of them could have reached Consummation while just staying put. Wouldn't that have been great?! (*Applause*) Of course, that wouldn't have been done without principle, as I would have been transforming everything that a Dafa disciple owed into benevolent returns for sentient beings, and everyone would have been given the best compensation. If he couldn't do it, then Master would help him do it. When the cosmos isn't up to standard it's because all of the sentient beings aren't up to standard, and I would have helped all sentient beings do it, I would have helped you do it and I would have helped him do it. Then wouldn't everything have been benevolently resolved? (*Applause*) With all of the beings being no good and no longer clean, I would have helped all of you do it. So wouldn't that have been fair? You see the logic of it, right? But they insisted on doing things their way. Of course, even in that kind of situation there would still inevitably have been reactions from beings that were affected in Fa-rectification, and trouble and interference would have emerged out of it. That's natural, and from it some suffering and trouble would have been created for me in Fa-rectification, and that's natural, too. That, I could accept and acknowledge. But doing these things systematically has severely interfered with Fa-rectification, and it's something that I can't acknowledge. That's how everything relates.

Speaking from another angle, my disciples, when the old forces are able to do what they want to do, isn't that because you've silently consented to what they want to do? When they tell you to go you go, when they tell you to write something you write it, when they tell you to do something you just do it, and when they arrest and sentence you, you just helplessly, silently consent to it. Of course, that's caused by your having attachments inside and not being able to let go of them, but the more you can't let go, the more severely you're persecuted, since the wicked beings that are controlling and ruining Dafa disciples can see your attachments and what you're attached to. In contrast, those disciples who've let go of life and death aren't afraid of anything, and the evil beings are in fear of them. But the reason they can let go is that they've cultivated well.

Question: I really want my family and friends to cultivate in Dafa, but the Fa-rectification is in the final stages, so will you arrange for them to return to the heavens with us? Or is it that they'll cultivate in Dafa when the Fa rectifies the human world?

Teacher: I really can't tell you anything about that. For one thing, that's something that can't be told, and secondly, you have attachments. Some people say, "Once I've Consummated, what if I have this or that to take care of?" Do you know how Gods look at that student when those words are said? (*Audience laughs*) And you still want to Consummate? But you know what? Those who have thoughts of Consummation in their minds can't reach Consummation, not to mention those who want to reach Consummation but can't let go of attachments to things like emotion and wealth. Pursue nothing and gain naturally! All the things that Dafa disciples are doing today are in fact the responsibilities that have been bestowed upon you by history. Just do what you should do openly and with dignity, and everything will be covered. (*Applause*) As long as you're thinking about wanting to Consummate you won't be able to Consummate... And then you're saying, "How can I leave when I have this thing that I haven't taken care of, that thing that still has to be taken care of..." which means you don't want to leave yet. Just look at how many human thoughts and attachments are bound up in those words.

Question: Poetry is a form of human culture. Why has Master chosen to use this special form, poetry, to teach us and to use as a part of the Fa?

Teacher: These things from Chinese culture, as with the things of the world's other cultures, were retained for people to obtain the Fa. As for my using a particular part of the culture, that's a personal choice of mine—there wasn't any special thinking, I just used it as I wished. I sometimes use classical Chinese to write some things, and sometimes I'll use poetry, rhymes, or literary couplets, and there are also times when I use vernacular prose, which is currently the prevalent form of writing. The fact is, I prefer to write with classical forms, as they can express things really clearly and thoroughly. But of course, what students study nowadays is the vernacular, and they couldn't understand things if I wrote that way, so I just use it less or don't use it at all. The old forces have pushed today's human race to this point. They've actually created huge difficulties for the cosmos's Fa-rectification and the future. The Fa that I'm teaching to you integrates things from science, and that's not the culture of human beings, so what will become of it if it's left for the future? You know, why do I always want to use those old classical Chinese sayings to teach? Because they don't have that stuff in them. But things are just this way now, and people can only understand these principles within this kind of culture, so I can only teach in this way. As for things later on, we'll just have to wait until the future to consider them.

Question: You've said that everything of today's human society was brought about by Dafa disciples' thoughts. I often find that my own attachments have caused things to turn out even worse. May I ask Master how to break free from this?

Teacher: It's not a big deal if you haven't done well. Just do things well next time and try to find out where the problem was. There's a prominent phenomenon in you folks' cultivation, which is, after you haven't done something well, you're only overwhelmed with regret, and you don't do it over. If you regret it too much then that's another attachment. Once you've done something wrong, seen where it was wrong, and recognized it, then do it well next time, do it over. If you trip and fall, and just keep lying there instead of getting up, (*audience laughs*) then that's no good.

Question: After hearing Master's teaching of the Fa in the morning, I felt very sad inside. I want to ask Master, did you teach us those Fa-truths ahead of their occurrence?

Teacher: No, that's not how it is. Right now there are a lot of things that I don't intervene in, because you have to walk your own paths well yourselves. That's the case for everybody. It's what you will leave behind after you reach Consummation in the future, and also a chance for you to establish mighty virtue. What you do well is everything that you've validated and enlightened to. Put that part in order and remove the unwanted dregs, and the essence that remains is the path to your success. As for the truths of Fa that I taught this morning, actually, I only teach them when as a group there are about to be deviations. If they were just isolated phenomena that didn't have much bearing, I wouldn't mention them, and practitioners would quickly handle it well. Even with that matter I talked about in the morning, I know that in the end you'll understand it well, but the losses would have been terrible and I would lose a few Dafa disciples. So I wanted to talk about it. (*Applause*)

Question: Revered Master, practitioners use the Internet to exchange understandings and experiences. Is that format good or bad?

Teacher: I think that's not a problem outside of Mainland China, but don't talk about the specifics of what you're doing to validate the Fa. If it's in Mainland China, it's best that you give priority to your safety and don't allow the old forces to take advantage of gaps. This isn't a matter of being afraid or not, it's about not letting the evil take advantage of any gaps.

Question: If our thoughts are very pure and righteous, then the old forces have no way to interfere. So if there's interference, does it reflect our cultivation state?

Teacher: When interference comes up it's usually caused by those old forces. Then when we do

everything righteously, should we expect there to be no interference? That can only reduce a lot of the losses, because your gaps would be taken advantage of due to the fact that you yourselves still do have undetectable elements, and the old forces insist on forcing in what they want to do. At the same time, there are some students, especially the third group of students, who still have a certain amount of karma, and so they'll use these things to exploit the gaps. But all the same, Master doesn't acknowledge them. And you shouldn't acknowledge them either. Do things well in an upright and dignified way, negate them, and strengthen your righteous thoughts some. "I'm Li Hongzhi's disciple, I don't want other arrangements or acknowledge them"—then they won't dare to do that. So it can all be resolved. When you can really do that, not just saying it but putting it into action, Master will definitely stand up for you. What's more, there are lots of Fa guardians around Master, there are lots of Buddhas, Daos, and Gods, and there are even greater beings, and they will all participate, because forced persecution that's not acknowledged is a crime, and the cosmos's old laws don't allow it either—irrational persecution absolutely is not allowed, and the old forces don't dare to do it if that is the situation. So you should do things as righteously as you can.

Someone might think, "Now that I've done things righteously and done them well, there can't be any more tribulations at all from now on." Maybe that thought of yours will lead them to create tribulations for you, since the old forces believe that's another form of acknowledging them. "Ah, he wants it not to exist, and he wants to be carefree. That doesn't work. That thought of his needs to be removed." Then isn't that having your gaps exploited? Actually, as long as you can maintain a very upright state of mind in your daily life, you should be fine for the most part.

Question: After Fa-rectification will we still know Master?

Teacher: Master has an independent system. You are all beings within the cosmos, and no matter how big the enormous cosmos is, Master isn't within it. I'm not a part of all of this, yet I have an independent system of my own, I don't need anything in this cosmos and I don't need to put anything in it, I have an independent, self-sustaining system of my own. Then in other words, no being in the cosmos can see me, and no being can know me. In reality I'm formless, and to any internal or external element I don't exist, it'd be the same as nonexistence, yet I'm able to display my image at any cosmic level, which is the elevation at different levels of this image that you can see today. It's like that here among humans, of course, and in the future it may be very young—my innate body is very young. Speaking in human terms, at every level there's an image that has elevated based on this foundation, it all looks like me, it's just that it seems like the more microcosmic the elements that form it, the bigger its volume. Of course, I can also compress each level into one body and become bigger or smaller simultaneously, and I can also split the body infinitely. That's the general idea. (*Applause*)

Question: After Fa-rectification and when the disciples have Consummated, will there still be opportunities to improve?

Teacher: You've brought up the time after Fa-rectification when all of the disciples have Consummated—will there still be opportunities to improve? Actually, I've talked about all of this. Your Attainment Status is validated and enlightened to during cultivation, or in other words, whatever Attainment Status you can achieve is obtained through the process of cultivating. You want to ask, "When I'm in the heavens, can I keep on cultivating and improving?" There are elements and mechanisms for that purpose, but to improve just a little bit is a considerably long and gigantic project. It's not as easy as it is on Earth. But nobody dares to come to Earth, as after coming here you might not run into a God or Buddha coming to this world to save people. After coming down, that mind of yours will be wiped clean, and you'll know nothing—there's a chance you'll even be against cultivation. So nobody dares to come.

Question: For Dafa disciples as a whole, what are some of the most fundamental areas and shortcomings that need improvement?

Teacher: For Dafa disciples as a whole, in the process of validating the Fa, when you work together in concert, the Fa power is great. Whether you're doing things as a group or doing things individually, what you're doing is the same kind of thing, and that's what we mean by one entity. You're all clarifying the truth, sending righteous thoughts, and studying the Fa, so the specifics of the things you're doing are different but the division of roles is orderly, together there's a form, and separated there are particles. When you as an entity have some problems come up Master will definitely talk about them, and when there's not an obvious problem Master won't say anything. So when it doesn't affect the situation of the whole entity I don't say anything.

Question: Respected and beloved Master, please save me. I have great sins, so I have a mentally retarded son.

Teacher: Master will definitely save all the sentient beings in this world. *(Applause)* I will use different forms of salvation during different time periods and in different ways.

Question: My thoughts weren't very righteous in my dreams, and I'm afraid that I may have harmed a being.

Teacher: Don't worry, a dream is just a dream, a dream isn't cultivation, and it won't necessarily be like what you imagined. As long as you can complete cultivation, Master will think of ways to perfectly resolve all of the mistakes you've made. *(Applause)* Don't think about those things. If you think about them too much it'll become an attachment, and you won't be able to cultivate.

Question: May I ask revered Master, during Fa-rectification, is there an issue of balancing the importance and the urgency of things when we do them, and how should we handle this the right way?

Teacher: Well, that's about specific matters. And specific things, they're all part of your establishing your mighty virtue, and they're part of the paths you have to walk, and what you do on your own. Of course, you need to weigh the importance and the urgency, and prioritize things on your own. If you don't prioritize well, then it could affect what you need to do since, let me tell you, all of what you do is for yourself. Being able to prioritize things well is remarkable in its own right, and it will result in your walking the path the right way, and that's mighty virtue. It's hard for me to talk to you about the specifics. Master can't deprive you of the opportunity to consummate your own paths.

Question: I often blame myself for not being able to cultivate a heart of compassion, and I feel discouraged and apathetic, especially about those friends and acquaintances around me that refuse Dafa materials.

Teacher: I can tell you, we're cultivators, so you need to treat all of the sentient beings around you as compassionately as you can. Perhaps some people's predestined opportunities haven't matured yet. Perhaps some people have been poisoned really deeply but can still be saved. Of course, there are also some who can't be saved, but the vast majority can be. Right now you can't tell them apart. I think that you absolutely shouldn't be discouraged or apathetic. Do this compassionately no matter who it is, and with a compassion that can melt steel you'll be able to do it well. *(Applause)*

Question: A lot of countries are being fooled right now by the facade of China's economy, and this has become a major obstacle to our clarifying the truth to the governments of various countries and to the business community. We hope revered Master can give us some direction in this area.

Teacher: Yes, the Chinese government has expended one quarter of the country's and people's financial resources to persecute Falun Gong. If it weren't capable economically, would it be able to

persecute Falun Gong? Would the people in that society listen to its commands? Would a person do something against his conscience just because someone told him to? It is all because it's being propped up by money. And why is it that in the international community so many media outlets and governments are all so quiet on this, and why are they able to look the other way in the face of this catastrophe? They have a lot of vested interest and a lot to gain wrapped up in this.

During this evil persecution, everything in China, whether it is advancement in the government or the financial returns of enterprises, it's all tied to Falun Gong. And this includes students' entrance exams and academic records at graduation, everything has to be tied to Falun Gong. In order to persecute Falun Gong, a great deal of funding is being allocated to public security, political law, the judiciary, foreign affairs, the wicked 610 Office, and security special agents. And in order to deceive people, a great deal has been invested in various propaganda machines, in radio, television, newspapers, art and literature, cultural events, and even in blockading television, radio, and computer networks. And great numbers of agents were sent out into the international community to persecute Falun Gong. But those people would take the money with them abroad and then, as soon as the money was deposited into their personal accounts, they'd right away start immigration procedures—"In normal times, if I wanted to leave they wouldn't let me, but now I'm given money to do that... It's really great. But how could I go and commit crimes in such a society? I better leave myself a back door." The tricks used in the persecution are the stupidest, but they're not shy about spending the people's money that was earned with sweat and blood to turn around and persecute the people, and the amount they've spent is pretty huge.

It looks like as long as the Falun Gong issue isn't resolved, that society really won't have any hope for change and nothing can be stabilized, since it's entirely focused on Falun Gong and doesn't have time to worry about anything else. It's all existing for the sake of Falun Gong. That set of worthless machinery is running entirely because of Falun Gong—what else can it do?

This is all made possible by foreign investment, and the old forces did it. They're just using money to prop up the evil. During this period when the evil is persecuting Dafa you're investing money there. It's about those people with a lot of money who are choosing their futures, knowingly throwing away their money. In this persecution, investing your money there is the same as supporting the evil's persecution, and you've committed a sin. If there weren't any persecution of Dafa over in China it wouldn't matter how much money you invested. On the surface people don't know, but people all have a side that's aware. You really can't say that you didn't know.

Question: If those in charge of the Assistance Centers or Falun Dafa Associations can't keep up with the progress of Fa-rectification and aren't able to hear out criticism...

Teacher: Is that the situation with our Assistance Centers and Falun Dafa Associations? You need to look, hands-on-heart, deeply within yourselves, and listen to practitioners' suggestions with the right attitude. But if we look at the other side of it, isn't it true that practitioners are lacking something in the way they've been looking at things? If you were in that role, how would you end up doing? This isn't criticism, let's just set things aside and take a look—do they really have problems, or is it that our own way of considering problems isn't comprehensive. Or if they really do have big problems, then since they're the persons responsible for Assistance Centers, there's an issue to consider here. Their responsibilities are even greater, since if a Dafa disciple is weeded out because of their mistakes I think that sin is just so enormous. Of course, it won't be that severe, as there's still Master watching over things. But you're all cultivating, and no matter what, you can't take your own shortcomings, attachments, and things that you can't let go of to Consummation. So no matter what you're doing, you have to think of Dafa first and foremost, and not place too much importance on your own things.

So I'll also note in passing that in reality, those people who are in charge at various locations are cultivators too, and you shouldn't regard them as Master or hold them to such high standards. It's easy to make mistakes with certain things, so just share your thoughts with each other when that happens and discuss a little. When you truly look at things from the perspective of being responsible to the Fa and truly have a heart that can melt steel, I just don't believe that things can't be handled well. And don't insist that another practitioner is no good based on some rigid concept you have—I, your Master, believe that he's fine. And don't think that it's hard to communicate. Neither side has lived up to "great compassion" when doing things. If you can truly embody great compassion, I think those things that aren't right will definitely be rectified.

Question: Are our efforts to clarify the truth to overseas Chinese very much lacking? Especially in the western U.S. there are a lot of Chinese organizations, and lots of Chinese people from Mainland China. Is their being able to be overseas part of their predestined relationship?

Teacher: You could say that about the predestined relationship, but as for those who have a positive effect and those who have a negative effect, there are both, and that's just how the old forces arranged it. I don't acknowledge that at all. A minute ago I said that everyone in the world was part of my family. Don't acknowledge the old forces' arrangements, and do as much as possible to clarify the truth. Whether it be the western U.S. or the eastern U.S., we should do it as best we can. But Master isn't suggesting that you put everything else aside, it wouldn't work if you disregarded everything else. Instead, just manage your time well, and do the best you can to save people. Another thing is, that Chinese person you saved, he'll go and tell others too, so it's giving him a chance to gain some merit. In this persecution people have committed sins, and they've had a hand in helping along this persecution and fuelled the evil's fury, so they will be given chances to redeem their sins. After they discover the truth they'll talk about it everywhere, and that would be redeeming their sins, so you should do your best.

Question: When elections were held in our district, there were people who went to help a few congressional candidates that supported Dafa. But some people thought we shouldn't get ourselves involved in politics, and that we shouldn't rely on ordinary people to do things for Dafa. Is that understanding correct?

Teacher: It's correct in principle, but for this specific matter you should look at it this way. If you say Dafa disciples can't get involved in ordinary society's politics, I wouldn't say that's 100% correct. What I told you was that *Dafa* doesn't get involved in politics. And a lot of our Dafa disciples work in politics, that's their job. So if there's a government election, should you take part in it? If you take part in it and cast your vote, well then you've gotten involved in politics. A Dafa disciple cultivating in the ordinary society means that you try your best to cultivate while conforming to the ordinary society, and then there won't be a problem. You, too, are a member of the ordinary society. And the existence of the ordinary society is necessary for Dafa, for the cosmos, and for sentient beings. We can only help maintain it and can't disrupt it. When you're supposed to vote, just go vote, that's not a problem. If you say that a certain Congressman is your personal friend, and you'd like to help him do something, then of course there might be things that involve elections and you'd be doing volunteer work—that doesn't matter. But our Dafa as a whole doesn't get involved in politics, and we can't do anything political in the name of Dafa. For Dafa disciples, validating the Fa should be the priority, though.

The last time there was an election in Taiwan, I had a veteran practitioner call the person in charge of the Taiwan Dafa Association and make it clear to the public that Dafa Associations take no stance on elections. If an individual practitioner wants to support someone, that's his personal business and it doesn't represent Dafa. There were Dafa disciples supporting both of the parties. The Falun Dafa

Association has no political opinion regarding any party's election, and it doesn't get involved. As individual practitioners you can support whoever you'd like. That's how it works.

Question: Recently there's been a lot of pressure while doing Fa-rectification work. It feels like an invisible pressure. I don't know if this feeling is related to the overall Fa-rectification situation.

Teacher: I think that the old forces that haven't been rectified by the Fa have indeed felt the pressure becoming greater and greater, and the closer it gets to the end, the more pressure there is on the side that it works on. So sometimes this creates a complicated situation for us, and that's all it is. Just send more righteous thoughts to drive away the interference, and don't see it as something significant. In fact right now I see something very clearly, and you see it clearly too, and that is, nobody can damage Dafa. All hopes of damaging it are in vain, and nobody could touch it even if I, Li Hongzhi, weren't around. Each of you is like an Assistant, each of you is a particle of Dafa, each of you is immersed in and being tempered in the Fa, and each of you knows what to do. The Dafa disciples in Mainland China have already verified, in their actions and without the benefit of Master's presence, that Dafa is indestructible. As long as you do what Dafa disciples should do, everything can be resolved.

Question: Master has told us that we should have immense tolerance, but occasionally I'll still get hung up on little things.

Teacher: Then just make a change. You should exhibit compassion and tolerance, and consider others more, and here among human beings it will become a habit for you. I don't like it when you blame yourselves, it's completely pointless. I'll just repeat what I said: If you've fallen don't just lie there, get up right away!

Question: If somebody identifies with Zhen, Shan, Ren, but not Falun Gong, what will be the final outcome for him?

Teacher: Actually, let me tell you, you shouldn't give too much weight to what ordinary people say, because lots of ordinary people aren't rational. Human beings, you know, are affected by many concepts in the ordinary society, and they're constantly forming different concepts, which severely affect their original nature and true thoughts. So the things some people say seem right but are actually wrong, are insincere, or are poorly thought-out. Don't think that ordinary people are as rational as you are. Lots and lots of people are pretty irrational right now, and actually, you were like that too at the beginning. *(Audience laughs)* You only became more rational after you matured and bad things were removed. When an ordinary person comes to understand things, or decides whether something is good or bad, it's done at a very shallow level. Even what he says to his family and to people who've done a lot for him seems right but is actually wrong, it's insincere, he doesn't make good on promises, and he avoids responsibility for any consequences. So don't think it's significant. If you want to save him then you need to help him become rational.

Question: In order to conform to the way of ordinary people while clarifying the truth to China, we put the truth-clarification material together with content that conforms to ordinary people's attachments. How should we handle this properly? Even though some unhealthy content conforms to ordinary people's attachments, it still shouldn't be used.

Teacher: Some students have actually mentioned this to me: When some of our students who didn't step forward before or who haven't done well step forward, they immediately want to do more good things, to make up for their mistakes with merit. But they'd dropped in levels previously, so now there's a gap between them and those practitioners who've been part of Fa-rectification all along; but this gap isn't something the person can see, though other disciples can see it, and it especially shows

itself in specific Fa-rectification work or understandings. So when he does certain Fa-rectification work or says certain things, other Dafa disciples can pick up on that. Now, I'm not saying that these practitioners aren't any good, I've said that if you fall, pick yourself up and keep going forward—Master won't abandon you, and you mustn't lose confidence. There are still opportunities, and I'll save you no matter what. Now do you still lack confidence? (*Applause*) So now as practitioners who've always done well, you should help them with kindness, and don't be so severe in your words like you are with other practitioners. Even if your words are without intention he might hear them differently, so you need to talk with kindness and tell him how to do things. Of course, you shouldn't allow him to detect this, because once he detects it he'll feel like you're treating him differently, and then obstacles will form in his mind and cause problems in his thinking. Some of our practitioners who've stepped forward recently should pay some attention to this problem too—it's beneficial to listen to others' advice, it's cultivation after all. Honest advice is hard to take, but it's good for you.

Question: In addition to producing a large amount of truth-clarifying films, can we make a small number of wholesome films to meet ordinary people's different needs?

Teacher: I have to tell you, we really don't have time for that right now, because Dafa disciples are giving their all in validating the Fa. If those are made, they'll benefit ordinary people, no doubt about it—normal people's culture is sliding downwards. But that's not for you to do today. That's to be done in the next stage in the future. So right now Dafa disciples should put more into and do more in the area of clarifying the truth.

Question: Should we put large quantities of truth-clarifying programs on the Internet so that Dafa disciples in China can use them to produce Video CD's?

Teacher: Of course that'd be good. And not only should you do it, you should do it in large quantities if you can. The Chinese people's minds have been poisoned so deeply, and you do need to help them learn the truth. Let them know that we're not after some political goal, and that we're innocent yet being persecuted. Looking at it from an ordinary person's perspective, we indeed want to tell the world's people what we're all about. And from a Fa perspective, we're indeed saving them, rescuing them from the fate of being eliminated because of that.

Question: When Fa-rectification disciples validate the Fa, aside from their own Consummation, is it also validating the Fa for the sake of other beings?

Teacher: Other beings... you don't need to worry about them for now. (*Teacher laughs*) But, I can tell you that back around the time of July 20, 1999, when those swarming hordes of evil were pressing down, they were actually controlling all of the evil people in the world. All of the ordinary people were being controlled as well, and not just human beings, even animals and plants were being controlled. You could see that even each blade of grass and each tree seemed to bear a lot of malice toward us. In the second year things were better, because all of the evil that had been pressed down was cleared away, and at the time only the part in China remained, and it was being quickly cleared out bit by bit. Right now the people of the world are the most important, because nobody is in the world today without a major reason.

Question: I have two questions. I often feel like every day I'm busy, every day I'm caught up in doing things, and yet the results aren't good. And sometimes I feel indifferent towards certain Dafa work and rescuing fellow students. How should I change this state?

Teacher: I can only tell you to schedule your time reasonably. Everyone's time is limited, and Master knows that. So [you should try to figure out] how to budget your time reasonably. You have to rescue your fellow cultivators and Dafa disciples—we can't let the evil persecute them wildly and

without restraint. Actually, I'm going to tell you, all of the ways they use to persecute Dafa are as stupid as it gets, and when you look back at it you can see that that's true, since that's how the old forces arranged it. How could they arrest other countries' citizens? You know what? When you're clarifying the truth and once Americans find out, the American public is furious. Ever since the reforms and opening up to the West, the Chinese government has been racking its brain to show the world how great it is so that people will go along with the existence of the **** Party's government. Isn't that right? Yet for Western society, especially among the American public, they already had a feeling of disgust towards the **** Party. When they do those things it only makes Americans have even more negative feelings inside, and it makes the other nations all over the world feel extremely negative towards them. They're losing the hearts of the people even in other countries now, constantly doing these stupid things.

Question: We still haven't done well in exercising the entire body's power, and sometimes I feel like the main coordinators or the people with responsibilities at the Falun Dafa Association aren't doing things according to the Fa. They don't want to let go of the reins and allow others to do things, and we have problems finding common ground during discussions. Then we hear that they were personally chosen by revered Master, so sometimes even though we know they're wrong, we still have to support them. (Audience laughs)

Teacher: By very early last year I had already told practitioners in each Falun Dafa Association to let go of the reins when it comes to individuals validating the Fa, and that each person needs to walk his path of validating the Fa. Our practitioners might not be right 100 percent of the time, but our coordinators, did you hear this? Practitioners are thinking this way—did you all hear it? You are cultivators yourselves, of course, and Master can't expect you to do things perfectly without any faults, but, now that practitioners are having these thoughts don't turn around and blame them—they're doing it for the sake of the Fa, and I can see their messages in every word and every line. It's not for their own sake, it's for the Fa. *(Applause)*

Question: Making investments can make money. But some disciples think that the money we'll make in two or three years will come too late to be used, and that if we have some money we might as well just use it now to save people.

Teacher: That looks somewhat reasonable on the surface, but in reality it's still going to extremes. I think that you can't neglect your lives and ignore everything. I'm telling you that what you're leaving behind now is the cultivation path for people in the future. If all the people in the future go to extremes like this, not caring about their jobs or businesses, or even going and begging for food while they validate Dafa, that absolutely won't work.

You should make sure that your life's in order, and do your job well. Let me tell you, you're a member of society, and you should try your best to do well everything you're supposed to do at whatever job you have in society, you should be a good person wherever you are, and thus lead people in society to all say you're a good person. *(Applause)* Don't go to extremes when you do things. Every aspect of the path we take has to be upright.

Some people say, "I'm making plans to make a large amount of money so that later on it can be used for the Fa." That far-off water might not quench the immediate thirst, but it's not wrong for you to plan some everyday-people things. You don't need to talk about making some amount of money to use for Dafa—you don't need to think about giving it to Dafa. If you want to talk about doing some big-time business, and make lots of money with that big business, you can leave it at that, *(audience laughs)* and you don't need to mention Dafa. That last part always sounds like a stretch to me. *(Audience laughs)* The reason is, I've told you that it's fine for Dafa disciples to make a lot of money,

and you can do whatever type of work—that’s not an issue. It’s only that in everything you do, you need to follow your conscience and be a good person. (*Applause*)

Question: When bad energy comes over, I can feel it, and I try to send righteous thoughts to block the evil force, but I become drowsy and sleepy, and manifest sickness karma. How can I stop the bad energy?

Teacher: You’re too afraid of that bad energy. If it comes, you’re able to dissolve it, to dissolve it into primordial *qi* for your use. I’ll tell you something: Before I spread the Fa, and before those high-level elements came here, there weren’t any old forces, and back then I had other ways to handle coldness. This is what I’d think: “You’re cold, and you try to make me cold—are you trying to make me freeze? I’ll be even colder than *you*, I’ll make *you* cold.” (*Audience laughs. Applause*) Or, “You’re trying to make me hot. I’ll turn it around and make *you* hot—so hot that you can’t stand it.” I’m just telling you the idea. You might not be able to do that. But you should handle it with righteous thoughts, and you shouldn’t be afraid of it. I was just explaining something, but don’t go and act irrationally! As for some newer students, don’t be afraid if someone actually sends some bad things over. You’re a Dafa disciple—you have Master and the Fa! Perhaps you owed it something in the past, in which case just repay it. But you’re a cultivator, so you should let go of your worries, and Master will definitely take care of you. Even if it is able to get certain things into you, Master will soon turn that into something good for you. (*Applause*) Master will take care of you since you’re a cultivator. But if you become attached to it, if your attachment develops—“I’m not afraid now. I have Master taking care of it. Bring it on!” (*audience laughs*)—then your mentality of total reliance is again an attachment. And when Master sees this attachment he won’t take care of you, and he’ll wait until you let go of the attachment first. I’m just telling you the idea. Cultivation... cultivation is about the mind, right? You can’t let up and not handle yourself well. Approach everything with righteous thoughts, and don’t be afraid of anything—“I cultivate in the righteous Fa, so what do I have to be afraid of?!”

The reason a lot of the students in labor camps have been severely persecuted is their fear. It’s easy to just talk about it, but things are different in that kind of evil situation and when you’re under that kind of pressure. But no matter what, you’re somebody who’s progressing toward Godhood, so what should you do?! Of course, of those who’ve died there are also cases that were arranged in history by the old forces. For instance, back during those students’ last lifetime, the old forces might have said, “If you want to obtain Dafa when Dafa is taught, you’ll have to die like that. Otherwise we won’t let you in.” Without a doubt, at that time the students would agree to it, they would agree to being beaten to death when the time came. Of course, I’m just giving an example. In history they have indeed taken advantage of many, many loopholes like this and made many arrangements.

There’s another reason that happens: History is so long. You’ve seen that some of the evil policemen in labor camps have killed so many of our Dafa disciples in this persecution. If this hadn’t been happening in the Fa-rectification period and the persecuted person were an everyday person, and if when the evil policeman reincarnated after he’d died he came upon this period, obtained the Fa, and became a Dafa disciple, then wouldn’t the person who’d been beaten to death want him to repay his life? If that being says, “I don’t want any other compensation. I just want him to repay my life”—then it’s really a tough situation. I can tell you that Master is able to give *anything* a benevolent resolution. Whatever the student owes him, I can help the student compensate him with the best. And if the student doesn’t have it, I, his master, can give it to him—“I’ll give you good fortune. Because of your death, you can now get the reward of ascending to Heaven, so won’t that be an even better outcome then?” But that being has too much hatred, and he just won’t let it go—“You’d let me ascend to Heaven? Even if you let me become a God I wouldn’t do it. I just want revenge.” Then that’s where it gets tough. It’s

not as simple as you think! Tell me, what can we do *then*? The number of students who have owed lives in the past is not a small one, but Master has given *all* of them a benevolent resolution for you.

But no matter what, even if you really pass away in advance, what awaits you is Consummation! (*Applause*) That's how I'd put it from that perspective. Although I've said this, as long as you walk a righteous path I can actually give everything a benevolent resolution. I can make that extreme thinking become good for sure, and then I can make him not want his life back, since I can untie the knot in his mind with the Fa—I can do anything. But when you have attachments and can't let go, then it can't be untied and Master is put in a tough position.

Question: There's this phenomenon: At some places when they study the Fa as a group, they tend to read the new articles Master has published a lot, and don't repeatedly read Zhuan Falun as much. And when they study the Fa in a large group, a few persons in charge often talk about the Fa Master has taught to small groups.

Teacher: There are two issues here. The first one is that what I've said recently in different periods is supplementary to *Zhuan Falun*. Just remember their relationship, and that what you should study frequently is *Zhuan Falun*. The second issue is, after some of our students heard what I said on unique occasions, they went and spread it through the grapevine. I've already talked about this many times. What I say on unique occasions doesn't have universal application, and perhaps it was aimed specifically at those people who were present. If you go back and tell others, when you say it to them it won't have the inner meaning that was included in my words, and, those others aren't the intended audience. So it will lose its effect, and when others hear it they'll feel uncomfortable. At the same time, when you say it you're also putting your attachments into it. Most of the time there's some kind of showing off at work, it's subtle, subconscious. I think in the time ahead you should stop spreading those things. After you hear things I say, just let it be. You know, those thousand-year cultivators, after they learned a little bit of truth they'd hold it in inside. They'd hold it in for hundreds of years, or even a thousand years, and not tell it to others (*audience laughs*)—"If someone wants to know about this little bit of stuff I have, they'll have to trade something for it!" But you folks, "Yap yap yap..." You go and tell it all! (*Teacher laughs*) You don't hold things inside. (*Audience laughs*)

Question: In what form will Dafa disciples in Mainland China Consummate?

Teacher: It'll be the same, the overall form is the same. But there's one thing: If the person isn't received by me and sent off by me, it doesn't work. So for those who passed away early, even though I determined that they'd Consummate, they're actually waiting at a certain place. It has to be that I receive them. Those who aren't received by me are not acknowledged. So they're all waiting for the final conclusion. Of course, they don't have any hardship now while they wait. Their consciousnesses are perfectly clear and in a God's state, and it's just a matter of returning to their positions.

Question: At this critical time in Fa-rectification, some fellow veteran cultivators have, at different times, had tribulations to varying degrees. How should we treat and help these fellow cultivators who are experiencing tribulations?

Teacher: In cultivation it doesn't matter whether a person started earlier or later. And whether somebody cultivates well isn't determined by whether he started earlier or later, either. If a person is able to have righteous thoughts and righteous actions, and to let go of his attachments, then he's different. The evil gang of scoundrels in Mainland China that has been persecuting Dafa disciples has thought about it like this, "Ah, he's a veteran student. If we get him to write something the others will follow." But how could that be possible?! When everyday people persecute cultivators they can't ever understand them. Everyone is cultivating himself and walking his own path, and nobody looks at anyone else, at whether someone else is old or young, or at whether someone took up the practice early

or late. As the master, I guide all disciples the same way. So as for how you can help the person, what you can do is, first off, to help him understand things from the Fa and improve. And another thing is to have all of you send righteous thoughts together, and do more of what a Dafa disciple should do to save sentient beings. All these things can help the person.

Question: Whenever we make significant progress in Fa-rectification, some ordinary events always come up suddenly to interfere. For example, the “9-11” incident, the shuttle accident, the Iraq issue, the [North] Korea issue, and so on. How should we view this interference?

Teacher: That’s right. Why do those countries that uphold justice turn a blind eye to the Chinese government’s persecution of such a large number of grassroots people who are part of the mainstream society? Why do they keep silent? There are reasons on their part, but there’s also interference arranged by the old forces, who keep them busy with those terrorists. That’s why terrorists surface every now and then, distract them from time to time, and prevent them from focusing on the true purpose of their existence.

Question: Greetings to Master from disciples in England.

Teacher: Thank you!

Question: In order to rescue our family members who have been incarcerated in China, we’ve created some skits and perform them on the street. One of us has to play the role of an evil person. Master, is it appropriate to have a Dafa disciple play that role?

Teacher: It doesn’t matter. It’s okay for him to play it. But, when I see our Dafa disciples play the roles of bad people, I feel uncomfortable. If it’s needed, then just do it, it doesn’t matter, and it doesn’t actually affect anything. What else can you do, after all—it has to be Dafa disciples who validate the Fa. I used to help them come up with some ideas, and I suggested that when we produce television shows maybe we could ask our friends to play the negative roles. *(Audience laughs)* You’d just be asking them to be actors. There is no money now, but in the future when you are profitable, you can pay them when you do have money. *(Audience laughs)* Just joking! Really, though, it doesn’t matter.

Question: Will the human race and other beings exist simultaneously in the future? How should disciples think about this?

Teacher: Will the human race and other beings exist simultaneously in the future? Once the Fa’s rectification of the human world happens there won’t be that many changes just yet. As for what will exist on Earth later on, that will depend on the needs of the human race. Everything in Heaven is just wondrous, so wonderful that it’s indescribable. Even Gods, or that is, the Gods who enter the new cosmos after being benevolently resolved, they’re stunned. *(Applause)* Human beings think that Gods are wonderful, and that Gods’ worlds are wonderful, but if they went there and took a look, they’d find that the old places aren’t that wonderful anymore—that’s how big the difference is. As for demons, they’re also members of the cosmos. In the cosmos, the correspondence between the positive and the negative beings can’t be missing.

What time is it? *(Applause)* Should we conclude here? That’s all I had to say. *(Long applause asking Teacher to stay)* Then I’ll answer some more questions. *(Applause)*

Question: Could you tell us what you think about suing that wretch, that head demon in China? (Audience laughs)

Teacher: In China it’s not possible for everybody to know the facts and thus learn about Falun Gong with a positive view, but everybody is cursing at that wretch—that’s how bad it is. *(Applause)*

Shouldn't it be sent to court then? *(Applause) (Teacher laughs) (Applause)*

Question: Revered Master, please make this clear to me: When we demonstrate in front of the Chinese consulate, the evil manipulates policemen to bring us trouble. I think that according to what you, our revered Master, have said, we should do three things well, the first being clarifying the facts. And you said that when we run into problems we shouldn't take a detour but should face them...

Teacher: That's true. When we encounter that kind of situation we should resolve it. Remember: Wherever a problem occurs, that's where you need to clarify the facts. *(Applause)* As for whether the result is good, don't look at the other party, it comes from your minds. If you want it to be good then it will be good. And if you don't intend to make it good, or if your mind is unsteady, then it won't be easy to rectify things. In other words, you need to have strong righteous thoughts. If you're thinking, "I'm truly saving you. I'm truly telling you the facts," then the result will be good. Try your best to approach the people outside Mainland China with kindness too. Of course, outside of China, too, there are people who are hopeless. Maybe you'll run into them, maybe you won't. But no matter what, we have to conduct ourselves in an upright way. At the very least we must not let them down, let the sentient beings down. The outcomes of a lot of things depend on how people handle them. Try your best, and don't aggravate things.

Question: My wife has lost her freedom because of validating the Fa. Since I have a child who's only a few years old, I won't validate the Fa like my wife has, rather, I've been doing things that are safer for myself. Is that correct? I'd also like to pass on Zhengzhou Dafa disciples' greetings to Master.

Teacher: Thank you. As a Dafa disciple, if you think what you're doing is right, then do it. In the cultivation process people have different understandings and are in different states. Those aren't problems. The level you're able to understand things at in your cultivation, and the extent to which you can do things, are both manifestations of the realm of your cultivation. In other words, if you can do exceptionally well that's better of course, but it can't be forced. I have no other requirements for you. I've never said that you *have to* do well to such and such extent. It's always been you yourselves handling things. However high your understanding based on the Fa-truths reaches, that's the extent to which you can do things. Everything you've been doing is done for yourselves, and it's absolutely not for me. *(Teacher laughs)* Let me put it this way: It's only Master helping you, never you helping Master. *(Applause)* In the future, when you see the true situation, you'll say, "Wow, so that's how it was!"

Question: Today is the Lantern Festival. We thank our revered Master for teaching the Fa and saving us, and for spending the Lantern Festival with us. These students don't want Master to leave. (Applause)

Teacher: Oh, I actually didn't think of that. When it comes to festivals and holidays, if you don't tell me about them I'll forget, that's how I am. Today's the Lantern Festival, then aren't we having a big reunion here? *(Long applause)*

Question: When we send truth-clarifying materials to Mainland China, can we also send them your poems and articles, and Dafa books?

Teacher: That's not a problem, not a problem at all. You can send those to everyday people. It's not a problem, as long as the person wants to read them. The persecution has gone on for so long now, and a lot of people really want to learn the truth about Falun Gong but they can't find the books. Do you know what excuse the old forces used when they had the evil burn the books way back when? Why did they burn the books? At that time there were so many copies of *Zhuan Falun* in Mainland China

that they were just everywhere. But a lot of students didn't realize that they should respect the book, and everyday people treated it with even less respect. The Gods couldn't stand it, because that's the Law of Heaven, the one that created the cosmos! So the old forces wanted to create a severe shortage of books, and they made people look for the Fa, respect it, and realize how precious this Fa is from then on. That was the excuse they used to do that back then.

Question: It seems that some fellow practitioners in our area still don't understand the Fa-rectification. Their understanding in other regards isn't that good, either. How can I help them improve?

Teacher: Nothing can be forced. Whether a person wants to cultivate is all up to him. We can only advise him to do what's good, and can only try our best to remind them, tell them about certain things, and explain the principles to them clearly. Coercion doesn't work. When you've made your points, maybe it will be resolved, or maybe the person has attachments.

Question: In our Dafa work, some people in positions of responsibility don't tell the truth and do things in human ways in order for things to go well. Is it because they haven't studied the Fa well, they have selfish interests, or do they have ulterior motives?

Teacher: Motives? You can't put it that way. Of those sitting here, there's one or two who are a bit unusual, but I'm going to tell you, Master still doesn't want to give up on you, and I'll have to see whether you can make it. (*Applause*) If you can, I'll take care of you. It depends on you. As for the others, if you're saying that among the people sitting here someone wants to damage the Fa, or someone wants to do some other things, that's impossible. The people in positions of responsibility are cultivators too, and they'll also exhibit their human thoughts, for sure. I'd say you shouldn't have too high of expectations for them. But they *are* people with responsibilities, and what they do has a certain impact. So when you see problems you should point them out. If they won't listen, then you can report it to the Dafa Association.

Question: I am your disciple, but I'm troubled by debt. Can I even things out through the form of Fa-rectification?

Teacher: Using Dafa for your personal affairs... I don't think that kind of thinking is right. As a Dafa disciple, when you can truly do well, I think your troubles won't be as absolute as they look to you. It's because when you can't look at things from the Fa, everyday people's troubles are just everyday people's troubles. In the eyes of human beings things don't change, but in the eyes of Gods all of this changes. You're troubled, and Master is troubled for you too—I'm troubled that you haven't let go of your attachments and that you haven't reached a high level of understanding of the Fa, and that when you resolve one problem you create new problems. (*Sigh*) This isn't criticism! Everything Master says is Fa.

Question: I've always been perplexed, maybe we shouldn't use a large amount of human and material resources on studying a tool for breaking the Internet blockade? Maybe we should do things that take a short time and are highly efficient?

Teacher: There are different understandings on this. I can only say that there are different understandings. Things that are highly efficient should of course be done, there's no question about that. But as for breaking the Internet blockade, think about it, the evil is persecuting us and spreading huge lies—how could we not expose them? We have to let the world's people see their evil nature, see the wicked acts, and see the truth! So we have to break it. There's a large number of world-class scientists among the Dafa disciples. We have the ability to break it. They've never been able to block the Minghui website! (*Warm applause*) But it's also correct that we shouldn't use too much of our

human resources. We don't have overly many people involved, though, right?

Question: When the Fa rectifies the human world, there won't be any blockade. Is it that all of this has to be realized through disciples' ways in the human world?

Teacher: When we break this blockade we are negating the old forces' arrangements. We just won't accept this persecution or the blockade. When the Fa rectifies the human world, and Gods and Buddhas are majestically displayed, people will have no choice but to listen! It'll be a different situation.

Question: Will disciples know ahead of time the moment when the Fa rectifies the human world? (Audience laughs)

Teacher: The extents to which you've cultivated are different, and your cultivation states are different. Some students will be able to know ahead of time, and some students won't. It doesn't matter whether you do or don't, and it doesn't affect the progress of your Consummation or your level. Not at all. Why think so much about it? The Fa's rectification of the human world really does not, to put it plainly, have much to do with you. You are Fa-rectification period Dafa disciples! (*Applause*)

Question: At present some disciples have symptoms of being ill, very serious ones. They can hardly read the book, do the exercises, or send righteous thoughts.

Teacher: I'd say these are *real* problems. Some students show their attachments, but some students don't, they keep them inside and they're incredibly attached, and in the end they can't let them go on their own. The evil will make you more and more abnormal, and make you fall hard—so hard you'll never forget it for the rest of your life. That's how they do it, so don't get attached so much. Then when problems come up you ask Master what to do, but it's in fact caused by your attachments. Master will do something about it.

There are also some people who have false hearing. The only thing I can call it is false hearing. In fact, you really did hear something, but what you heard wasn't Master—they fake Master's voice! And they even fake my image, and take advantage of your attachments to deceive you. As Dafa disciples, you should understand things from the Fa. You are Dafa disciples who are upright and dignified. You should rationally think about whether something is in line with the Fa. And then there are students who are always interested in supernormal abilities. I let some students see some of the Fa-rectification's situations in different dimensions, with my intention being to increase the students' confidence in validating the Fa, yet some students still can't handle it right, they don't cultivate based on the Fa, and when something happens they even go ask a student who has supernormal abilities to look at things for them, and then they take what's seen as guidance on how to do things related to Dafa and how to cultivate. That's already very dangerous. Who could possibly see the essence of Fa-rectification? And who could possibly explain the states of those who cultivate in Dafa? The manifestations at the extremely low levels aren't the ultimate, true situation. If you don't cultivate based on the Fa, if you don't act according to the Fa, then are you still a Dafa disciple? Whenever something happens you go ask that other person to see what it's about, but what's he seeing? Who could possibly see your ultimate situation? Even your own child can't see it. I've already said that even internally, among Dafa disciples, you aren't allowed to see it. If the true state of your cultivation could be seen, then what would there be for you to cultivate? If you were told, then everything would be solved. It can't be seen! The reason is, at different levels there are different manifestations, and to the beings at a given level the manifestation at that level is the truth, so at each level, at levels upon levels, there are truths. But those are the different manifestations of one thing at different levels, whereas the manifestation of the most fundamental thing is at the top, and when it gets to the end, only then is the most final fundamental thing found. So from which level could you possibly see the ultimate, true

situation of a Dafa disciple, the true situation of Fa-rectification, or the true situation of Master? If today you could see the ultimate true situation of Dafa disciples and Master, and the truth of Dafa, then today you're the Lord of this boundless cosmos! Do you see all that? Is everything before your eyes? How could you be so foolish?! I've already talked about this many times in the Fa. Why is it that you just have to be interfered with? *(Teacher laughs)*

Question: If disciples use their jobs to tell people about the Zhen-Shan-Ren Fa-truths of the cosmos, and pass them on in subtle ways to more people in the world...

Teacher: I don't think there's a problem with that. You can do that.

Question: Someone can no longer directly give to Dafa like he did a while ago. Would you please tell me if he still meets the definition of a Fa-rectification period Dafa disciple?

Teacher: Have you done well what a Dafa disciple should do in every regard? If so, then what you've done is right. *(Teacher laughs)* Don't worry, and this includes some of those who've stumbled. Just hurry up and get up.

Question: As a PhD student, doing my scientific research well requires that I'm completely committed to it, but I also need to study the Fa, clarify the facts, and do the exercises. I always feel like I don't have enough time.

Teacher: There are still people who ask this question. Master has answered it for you many times. I think that as cultivators, you should put Dafa first, but you should also do your job well. You should try your best to do things well. As far as how to balance this, when it comes to the specifics you still need to prioritize things yourself. If you say, "I'm too busy, so I won't read," then that's equivalent to not cultivating. Say, "I'll just completely devote myself to my job," and then you'll just be an ordinary person. Could it just be that you're not balancing these things well? Then just prioritize and plan things well. It's really simple. Actually, I've already discussed this very clearly in *Zhuan Falun*. Studying the Fa well definitely won't affect anything of yours in your cultivation, and on the contrary, it will help you get twice the results at your job or with your schoolwork with half the effort.

As for science, it's already come to this stage. Humankind can't do without it, and society is still trying its best to push it forward. But it won't exist in the future society people have. In the future there won't be any science. But all the same, science is a product of the cosmos, and that's why I've never rejected it. I've only said that it's not in line with humankind and can't be given to humankind, especially in the future, when people will take the path of becoming Gods, which makes it even more the case that this science thing can't be given to humankind. Science, in fact, blasphemes Gods, and it's playing the role of making matter warp and it's destroying the environment. It not only causes matter to warp, but also causes human beings' concepts to warp, and causes many elements of matter on Earth to warp, and it harms the cosmos to a certain extent. So in the future it won't exist here at this place of human beings. It is how it is right now, and that's because before the Fa's rectification of the human world arrives here, however chaotic humankind gets, we'll just let it be. If you don't do scientific work it won't make science good just because you don't do it. If you do it, that's fine, and your doing it isn't considered bad, since that's how things are overall. So that's the relationship.

Question: I'm your disciple, and am busy with a lot of Dafa work. I hardly do the exercises, and I can't always make sure I study the Fa, either. I feel pained inside.

Teacher: I think you should still find time to study the Fa, unless you are translating Dafa, *(audience laughs)* in which case I think you must be studying, too. Otherwise you still need to study the Fa.

Question: I think that the Fa's rectification of the human world is already proceeding quietly,

and that the advanced science has led to the economic recession in modern times. Is this the prologue to a new economic situation? If Dafa disciples start new companies, will they have good prospects? (Audience laughs)

Teacher: It's not like what you imagine! The Fa's rectification of the human world has nothing to do with science. There won't be any conflict between them in their manifestation, either, but it won't drive science's development, either. As far as starting new companies, those are your own affairs and if you have what it takes then just do it.

Question: What I've enlightened to is that I don't have a problem of being interfered with, but only the problem of not doing well myself. Is this understanding correct?

Teacher: There's no problem with thinking that way. It's very good that you don't have any interference. Being able to realize where you haven't done well and your shortcomings is cultivation.

Question: Master, the content of the Fa you taught this morning was very grave. As a disciple, I wonder if it's something that has already happened or something that might happen in the future?

Teacher: I'd seen some indications that are really bad, and some disciples will be ruined. It's that serious, so I talked about it. You can say that it will happen in the future, but the beginnings of it have already sprouted up. That's what it was about.

Question: I'm your disciple, and I have enlightened to the following: Master is the manifestation of the Fa in the human world, so Master is the Fa, and this is a part of the implication of taking the Fa as teacher.

Teacher: Let me just reveal it in plain language: The Fa was created by me. (*Enthusiastic applause*) In the colossal firmament, as long as you're something in the cosmos—so this includes everything—no matter whether you have a form or not, be it emptiness, nonexistence, or whatever, as long as you are something, you were created by the Fa, and you're in this living environment created by the Fa. The Fa has standards for beings. The Fa created all beings, and in its renewal the Fa also makes all beings assimilate and saves all beings. Since Dafa disciples are studying the Fa, they're actively assimilating to the Fa. Nothing in the cosmic body is good enough anymore. The reason why it's still kept at the present time is to assimilate all the beings in the cosmos and to allow all beings to be saved. Otherwise it would have been long gone. The colossal firmament would have been rebuilt, and the Fa would have re-created all the levels and all the beings. I didn't do it that way, though. I had all beings in the cosmic body learn about the Fa and assimilate to the Fa with righteous thoughts. This is the best benevolent solution, and the approach taken exhibits compassion toward all beings. All the beings before history were created by the Fa, and no one is an exception, everyone's included. If somebody talks about how *Zhuan Falun* is at such-and-such level, then he's speaking demons' words. In the measureless and countless colossal firmaments, in the measureless and countless dimensions in the cosmic body, there are measureless and countless beings in each dimension! All of them were created by the Fa. No being can comment on the Fa (*applause*), and yet everything of the Fa is manifested in that book of *Zhuan Falun*! That's how immense this Fa is.

Question: Master mentioned in the morning that at present the old forces are attempting to shake Dafa disciples' righteous faith and righteous thoughts in the Fa by using certain matter to form false images of Master. Would you please tell us how we can tell them apart?

Teacher: You don't need to try to tell them apart. What the students can see or know at present is limited by their levels. The old forces are Gods, and right now to you it's as if they can change into a myriad of forms. If the students don't take the Fa as teacher, and focus their attention on those things, then the old forces can conjure up for you any false vision they want. Today I'll make this completely

clear to you: What you see—what you see with your human eyes—is Master’s principal body. Right here. It’s me. (*Applause*) The other me’s, no matter how high their levels are, they’re just my bodies at different levels. Even though I’m at the lowest place, that’s because I came to the lowest place; and even though those bodies of mine at different levels are at high places, that’s because I made them be at those high places. I could take back all the me’s at all the levels and combine them into one body so that they’re all here with me at the same time. And I could manifest myself in a way so that at each and every level of the entire cosmos it’s all me. (*Applause*) But sometimes the old forces interfere, and when they really see that a student has gone awry they’ll show him false visions, block his vision, not let him see the Master over on the other side, and from a mental standpoint not let him have righteous faith in the Master here. They’d get a fake one, and make it travel back and forth in that dimension, or stay here, and that would lead you astray. So you shouldn’t look at those things. Just ignore them. With the Fa here and with Master here, isn’t that enough? (*Applause*)

Isn’t it from the me right here that the Fa is taught? It’s this mouth (*pointing at the mouth*), see it? (*Audience laughs, applauds*) It’s all taught by me. No one can control me. Don’t worry. The old forces can’t see the source where the Fa I teach flows from at all. No being can see the origin of the Fa I teach. Even if a being were to go through layer after layer of matter and life, he still wouldn’t be able to trace it to the origin. One of the reasons why I ask you to take the Fa as teacher is that I don’t want you to be interfered with this way. I ask you to take the Fa as teacher, and this Fa is right there, so just act in accordance with the Fa and cultivate openly and with dignity. If you didn’t have the Fa, then think about it, could you possibly cultivate just by going on the little bit that you can see? You couldn’t, right?! So why don’t you go by the Fa’s requirements? The fact is, all of those fake ones are now being destroyed.

Question: A few overseas students went to Mainland China and were arrested. Is it true that they didn’t act according to Master’s requirements?

Teacher: You can’t say that. Dafa disciples are all trying to come up with ways to do things for Dafa to the best of their abilities. You can’t say that the students’ doing things a certain way is wrong and a certain way is right. Everyone is walking his own path, and we can’t impose our own concepts on others. When there’s a problem, don’t talk about who’s right and who’s wrong. When a problem surfaces, you should all help each other and try to think of a way to resolve it.

Question: I think that kindness isn’t just shown in having a friendly and pleasant appearance on the surface. I feel that stopping the evil is also a display of kindness. For instance, our disobeying the Hong Kong policemen’s and German policemen’s unreasonable demands was a type of kindness, and was a display of Dafa’s mighty virtue.

Teacher: When it comes to human beings you should be kind, and when it comes to the evil beings you should purge them. As far as those policemen, they weren’t aware, and they were being controlled. If you don’t handle it well, then when they treat you evilly they aren’t rational, and you’ll suffer losses while the conflicts intensify, so you should try to avoid the losses. Be as kind as possible to people, but you have to seriously deal with [the beings over on] the other side. When something has negatively impacted or harmed Dafa, you should also seriously resolve it using everyday people’s laws. The evil did infuse the German policemen with a lot of bad things, and they treated us quite unreasonably at that time. What should a nation’s attitude be toward Dafa, and what should it be when the evil and the righteous are before them? What should I do with their future?! After those things happened you should have handled it promptly and gone to the legal system. Theirs is a democratic country, and even if their president commits crimes he is taken to court, since he was elected. Of course, the matter has passed, so it’s hard to do much about it now.

Question: Sometimes I feel that I'm not worthy of being saved by you. How can I contain my selfishness and meet the standard?

Teacher: Don't be so pessimistic. Each individual's habits are different, and every nation's customs are different. In different settings people have different cultural backgrounds, and those give rise to different customs. And the negative aspects of different cultures affect our students who are of different ethnic backgrounds. But it's not a problem. Master doesn't look at those things. As long as you cultivate, you'll be able to reach the understanding, and gradually you'll be able to do everything well. It's not realistic to think you could do everything well right away. As you constantly deepen your Fa-study and as your understanding gets better and better, you'll be able to do well.

Question: How can we clarify the facts better to the U.S. government?

Teacher: You've been doing these things all along, and you've done pretty well so far. Going forward, it's a matter of doing it on a deeper level, and on a broader scale.

Question: I wrote an email to many fellow practitioners. What I wanted to say was good, but the approach was somewhat negative. My fellow practitioners stopped sharing things with me afterwards. Was what I did wrong?

Teacher: You've already realized that your approach was somewhat negative, and that's why they didn't accept it. They didn't accept it because they too have human thoughts. Maybe, since you're Dafa disciples, both parties should look at things the right way. Dafa disciples should handle everything positively. Don't look at the negative side of other people. You should always look at their positive side. Actually, did you know that back when I was teaching you Dafa, during the classes a lot of human thoughts were sent out from the audience down there? The thoughts sent out by some people were really bad, but I didn't look at any of that. I just look at your positive side, and thus I can save you. If I were to always look at your negative side, how could I save you? The more I looked at it the angrier I'd get, and then how could I save you? (*Applause*) So in any situation, don't be affected by human-type behavior, don't be affected by human thoughts, and don't be affected by the feelings and emotions in this world, either. Look more at the positives in others and less at the negatives.

Question: When we study the Fa as a group and share understandings, I don't have anything to say, and don't have any opinions. Is that okay?

Teacher: Maybe it's caused by your cultivation state. If you don't want to speak, then don't speak. If when other people talk you're embarrassed that you don't have anything to say, then don't speak if you can't, that's okay. If you want to speak, it'll come naturally, and you'll speak. But don't let your habit of not speaking impede you.

Question: Master has said that the people of the future will play a major role at this level of the cosmos. What exactly is the important role? Could you explain?

Teacher: In the future this human place will be an extremely special place. And why do I say that? No matter how long humankind's history is, humankind was created to save all beings and for the Fa-rectification, and that's why this level of human beings was created. In the past there wasn't any human race. In this spot here where Earth is there were other planets before, and those planets had different structures from that of today's Earth. It was for the existence of human beings that so many things, like water, plants, animals, and so on, were created on this Earth. The beings and the environments that were on the planets here before were worse. The highest-level beings there were like aliens. In other words, there weren't any human beings at this place. And no matter how many times the planets at this place were destroyed and created, there weren't any human beings. In all of history only two planets have had human beings: The last Earth and this Earth. The last Earth was a trial run

that was arranged by the old forces for the teaching of the Fa this time. This time it's the real thing, the Fa-rectification has started. It's the old forces who arranged that process.

Before I came here I knew that the old forces would arrange all of this, and within the arrangement I chose what I wanted. But when it comes to a lot of fundamental things, the old forces aren't able to change them. Even though things were set in that way, after the Fa-rectification began, the old forces still changed more than eighty percent of what was determined before history. I can't acknowledge that kind of behavior, with their using me to satisfy their selfishness and disregarding the safety of all beings and the colossal firmament. That's one of the reasons why I purge them. Another reason is, I set out to do Fa-rectification because I knew that all of this was no longer good enough, that no matter how much wisdom the beings inside it have they still couldn't change the fate of disintegration, and that only when things were fundamentally changed could they be saved. But everything old wouldn't understand my doing things that way. Yet I could accomplish it, and whether they could understand it or not, saving beings is what's critical. So I've been breaking through all the obstacles and going all-out to resolve all of the numerous problems. In the process, the beings at different levels have seen that everything I do is the hope for truly saving everything. Having done it to this point, all the beings have also seen that everything the old forces wanted to do can't resolve things, since those things have no roots.

As the Fa-rectification progresses along further up, the old forces are no more, and there are no longer any of the factors related to the old forces' arrangements—they end without a resolution. The old forces are, with regard to going toward the renewal and rescuing all beings, like an obstacle that's the biggest, the most difficult to push away, the most likely to cause one to lose direction, to make one unable to easily distinguish the true from the false, and the most difficult to overcome; they are a critical, life-or-death lock at the brink of the new colossal firmament's birth, and a gigantic obstacle to renewal. But I chose this place back then because I wanted to give the beings in the cosmos who've dropped down a chance to go back, and to make this a part of the cosmos' ability to allow beings to enter the harmonizing, all-encompassing, and no-destruction mechanism. So the path for the people of the future to become Gods has truly been blazed. People used to say, "Oh, after I die I'll go see God." You say that you're going to see God, but will God see you? In fact, it's said very clearly in the Bible that only when the final time comes, which is Judgment Day, only then will the Lord receive and deliver those people who have truly met the standard for going to Heaven. Today, the sentient beings have all been waiting over the course of their continued reincarnations, one lifetime after another. In this process the sinners have been going down to hell. Going to hell doesn't mean they're destroyed, though. They need to pay for their sins there and suffer, and after they pay for their sins they return and begin to incarnate again. But after those who have especially huge sins go to hell they are directly destroyed and sent to the Endless Hell, and once someone enters the gate of no-life he can never live again. That's how it was in the past.

After the human race was created, Gods also appeared on the stage of humankind, and cultivation and righteous faith thus emerged. But it's never been the person himself who cultivated, it was the assistant spirit cultivating. The reason the assistant spirit could cultivate was that he'd entered the supposed range of the Three Realms without actually entering it. Why was that? For example, like I said earlier, when some beings have entered the human body, they haven't in fact really gotten into the human being, since that's only a dimension. I have sealed off all the dimensions of the side of Dafa disciples that have been fully cultivated. No one can get in. Anyone can pass through the side that hasn't been fully cultivated, but Fa-guardians and Master are watching, and they don't let them pass through. Of course, no elements can pass through me over on the other side. Master's situation here is that the outermost surface of my body has held the lives of all Gods, all beings, and all elements in all the immense, colossal bodies of the cosmos. That's the situation before the Fa's rectification of the

human world arrives. But those elements in the spatial gaps that maintain beings' survival are also Gods, and during this time they can pass through everyday people's bodies. Also, it's as if beings are immersed in them—it's just like when you breathe, when you breathe you've inhaled them. In the gaps among particles, the beings in the microcosm pass through the body of an everyday person at will. And those aren't possessing spirits. That's just how the cosmos is. Many people say that they saw this or saw that, when in fact most of what they saw were false visions formed by different dimensions coinciding. They haven't really gotten inside, and they haven't really melded into the person's particles. So those assistant spirits that were cultivating in the past were in their original, microcosmic realms, and in the supposed range. They didn't meld into the true particles of your body. If they did, they would have dropped down and never been able to go back. Before, not a single being who dropped down from Heaven was able to go back. And among humans, Socrates, the ancient Greek sage, also said that nobody who's fallen down from Heaven could return. He was really a prophet, but people have regarded him as a philosopher.

Question: A practitioner in our region has had symptoms of a serious illness. Some practitioners have suggested that we send righteous thoughts toward him as a group, while others raised the point that Master has never asked us to do such a thing. Would it be harmful to Dafa?

Teacher: You'd be helping each other, and that's not damaging Dafa. If you have everyone reading the book to him, or reading the Fa to him, sending righteous thoughts toward him, and surrounding him as a group, then these things will be effective since being in close proximity is a factor. And why is it a factor? Because this dimension has been divided into various segments by the final elements from high levels, and there are still differences existing in this dimension. But if a person's righteous thoughts are strong those differences can be eliminated. If your actions are very righteous it won't be able to stop you, since if it tries to stop you it will be violating the Fa. That's how it is.

Question: Master once taught the Fa that the sentient beings from the colossal firmament of the cosmos had entered into the Three Realms step by step. Master has also said that Shakyamuni directly reincarnated into the Three Realms from the sixth level of the universe. How are these two things related?

Teacher: Master has also said that the power of the Fa is boundless. Reincarnating directly from the sixth level of the universe to the Three Realms did involve a process. The process was that he had to penetrate six levels of the universe and reach the Three Realms, and he had to be covered by a layer from each of the universes in the middle as well as each of the various dimensions in it, or in other words, whenever he came down a level another layer of surface particles would be added on. When someone is cast down from Heaven, isn't this how he drops down too? This and coming down step by step just describe stopping versus passing through instantly. Of course, when a God comes down and reincarnates one level at a time, the significance and goal is completely different. As a being reincarnates he forms karmic relationships. He doesn't just have parents and siblings at that level, but also numerous family and friends who all have karmic relationships with him.

Question: When things don't go smoothly while doing Fa-rectification things, it is hard to tell whether it's due to interference from the old forces or a hint that Master doesn't want it to be done. How can we distinguish the two better?

Teacher: You should use the Fa to make the evaluation. That's why I tell all of you to study the Fa, and you should use the Fa as the standard for evaluating everything. You don't need to take the book with you all the time to compare what you're about to do next with what's in the book. After you've studied the Fa you should use your rational thinking to determine as a Dafa disciple if it's

something you should do. If you feel that you should do it, then there's no problem [with doing it]. And even if it does turn out to be wrong, that's only because your understanding isn't that deep yet; and it can't be counted as a big mistake on your part, since you truly thought you were doing things according to the Fa. Isn't that how it works? But don't then use this as an excuse. Being responsible to the Fa is being responsible to yourself.

Question: Many among the disciples currently have this thinking: When a practitioner experiences tribulations because of interference from the old forces, other practitioners think that even if he does have attachments, the persecution shouldn't be allowed to take place and everyone should send righteous thoughts. My question is, if the practitioner himself doesn't improve, will this work?

Teacher: That would be a serious impediment. If he himself isn't rational, whatever we do amounts to nothing. Sending righteous thoughts can eliminate what's outside him but not what's inside his mind. Whatever a person wants to do comes from a single thought of his—it's he who decides if he wants something or not. When this situation occurs, I think there has to be a knot in his mind that stems from attachments. If he's really not able to do it, you can go and help him. There's no problem with doing that. Try to help him understand things on the basis of the Fa-truths and by studying the Fa more.

Question: There is this viewpoint, which thinks that we should oppose the old forces' arrangements, create a peaceful period of time before the Fa's rectification of the human world, and help the Chinese people learn the truth.

Teacher: Wanting to stop the persecution, now that viewpoint isn't wrong. Helping the Chinese people learn the truth and saving sentient beings are things that Dafa disciples should do. But there's no such a thing as "a peaceful period of time." The evil will just become less and less, and have a smaller and smaller audience, and a large amount of karmic retribution will happen.

Question: If a practitioner in prison would rather give up his own life than give up Dafa, is committing suicide in violation of Dafa?

Teacher: Committing suicide is wrong. If you're truly solid and so steadfast that you aren't even afraid of death, why would you commit suicide? Indeed your being steadfast should be taken into consideration, but how should your committing suicide be looked at? Of course, for a Dafa disciple I'll make a full assessment, I won't just look at one thing, and I'll look at it in terms of the person's entire history. But even if that act doesn't have a specific consequence, isn't it still a stain? The reason is, Master has taught in the Fa that committing suicide is a sin. Why didn't you conduct yourself according to the requirements of the Fa?! This isn't just an ordinary problem of understanding, is it? I've said that the pressure felt under that kind of evil environment is tremendous, but, then again, why did you come to the world? Did you come here just to endure ordinary tribulations? Then what awaits you?

Question: You've said that you don't have any assistant spirits. Did you have any assistant spirits before? If you did, what's their situation right now?

Teacher: (Teacher laughs) I don't have any assistant spirits right now. When I was born I was the same as you, and had to have everything an ordinary person has. Later on during my cultivation they were gradually removed, and I made arrangements for them to all achieve Consummation. If you Consume and reach very high levels your assistant spirits will all be Gods, and some of them will even be very high-level Gods, so they all need to Consume.

Question: Revered Master said, "The old forces want to achieve the goal of what they want to reach." What does that mean?

Teacher: The goal they want to reach is that they want to restore the cosmos in Fa-rectification back to the way it was before Fa-rectification, back to that system of theirs—still their mountains, still

their water, still their Gods, and still the states they were in before. They did things in that way, so they don't want to make changes. The change they want is to have the surface appearance be better, just like washing a soiled piece of clothing clean. It's still the same piece of old clothing. Well, that's the meaning, but the analogy isn't totally accurate. That's the only way to describe it. They just want to, on the basis of not losing anything they originally had, through their careful arrangements, be able to cleverly dodge this catastrophe. But that will never happen. That's what they wanted. I have denied them from the very beginning; otherwise, even though they didn't mean to destroy all of this they would have.

Question: It's obvious to me that time has accelerated yet again. On the matter of clarifying the facts to the people of the world...

Teacher: Yes, it's true. It seems like I've just answered a few questions and it's already getting dark. *(Audience laughs)*

Question: On the matter of studying the Fa and doing Fa-rectification things, time seems to be especially pressing. Could you please go into a little more detail?

Teacher: Right now time is constantly accelerating. I can tell you that the faster I do things, the faster time gets since elements at the highest place in the cosmos have connected my Fa-rectification with time. The reason being, time is also a God from the old cosmos. They've connected everything in Fa-rectification together. When I'm fast they are fast, and when I'm slow they are slow, so the faster I do things the faster time becomes. But I, your teacher, have no choice but to do things fast. If I don't catch up with it in time, it would be too late to save everything in the end. You know that the universe is expanding rapidly, and humankind has also seen that the universe within this range is now expanding. Today's scientists already know that, right? The speed of expansion is getting faster and faster. What happens at the end of expansion? You've seen how it is with a balloon, right? You blow, blow, and blow, and when you blow it to its maximum point, "Bang!"—it explodes. Scientists have already grasped that, and they know this expansion is frightening. If I can't chase it down, all of this, or at a minimum the places where Fa-rectification hasn't yet finished, will be destroyed.

I have to act fast. Originally the distance was very far, unimaginably far. Right now as soon as something emerges I'm able to get hold of part of it right away. Say, for example, this thing has one hundred parts, so the moment it emerges I'm able to immediately get a hold of it and then resolve it in an instant. Things are at the final stage of the final stage of completely reaching that point. Things are the same whether I've completed Fa-rectification or not, because everything has already surpassed them, and during Fa-rectification the original time and space no longer have any real meaning that could hinder me.

Question: You've spoken for three hours straight... (Teacher laughs) (Disciples applaud)

Teacher: I'm picking out slips with fewer words written on them and answering those questions.

Question: Li Bai was a great poet, and a cultivator of the Dao. What kind of karmic relationship does he have with Dafa?

Teacher: As for historical figures, you shouldn't think about them too much. Many of them were you, and many of them were me. *(Applause)* But don't get euphoric over this! Your abilities and talents didn't originate there. Your abilities and talents were given to you by the Fa this time, *(applause)* and they aren't related to that.

Question: People from the ordinary human society, especially those who have relatively elite positions in society, initially not only didn't have negative feelings toward Dafa and Zhen-Shan-Ren,

but actually had positive feelings. But they dislike the way that many Dafa disciples do things, and think that it's too extreme and seems to lack kindness.

Teacher: Dafa disciples should pay attention to that. On the other hand, is it possible that it's caused by the concept of being so-called refined, having an even keel, and not being rushed that ordinary people have developed? Is it because they don't think well of doing things too quickly? The evil is persecuting us, and people are dying. We aren't in the mood to do things in such a leisurely manner. But at the same time, you should try your best to observe social etiquette. Our Dafa disciples are hustling to and fro saving sentient beings, yet those people are still being picky. In any case, Dafa disciples, you should do your best to conform even more! People are sliding downward while we're rising upward, so we have to do things that way if we're going to save them.

Question: Greetings, revered Master! When you taught the Fa this morning, you mentioned that the old forces are taking advantage of a small number of practitioners who display certain states. Is it the same as the qigong psychosis mentioned in lecture six of Zhuan Falun?

Teacher: Actually, they're causing interference in a variety of areas. What I said in the morning was encompassed by and supplementing *Zhuan Falun*. *Zhuan Falun* talks about things in a general sense but it contains very deep inner meanings. If you don't study the Fa often, then the Fa I'm teaching right now will seem hard to understand. The profoundness of the Fa-truths of the Dafa of the cosmos isn't something that can be fully grasped at low levels. The Fa can manifest itself at different levels, and it can manifest itself in broad ways and specific ways at the same level—it's all-encompassing.

Question: Liberty, democracy and human rights seem to be upright principles in the human world. Were they too arranged by the old forces for today's Fa-rectification?

Teacher: The second half of the statement is correct, but the first half isn't. Those aren't human principles, rather, they were arranged by the old forces. Human principles are very simple, and democracy isn't actually a human principle. Over the millions of past years of human history people were always ruled by kings. At its peak there were more than ten thousand countries on Earth, and there were more than ten thousand kings, princes, princesses, and queens. That was the civilization of the past, and that is why it's called "the king governing the country; conquering the world with military force; the strong are heroes." But in the eyes of Gods the strong one was a bandit. And it doesn't matter if humans thought he was upright, Gods saw him as a bandit. So then why did Gods have him fight battles and have him become a hero? Because Gods wanted to accomplish something on Earth and wanted a certain situation to appear among humans, and they had to choose somebody to do things. The one who was chosen then went on to do things according to the Gods' requirements. Even though he did it by force, since it was the will of Gods, Gods would give him honors after he accomplished it. And what kind of honors? Make him a great hero that everybody admires, and somebody who has the honor of ruling the land—that's all! (*Teacher laughs*) Man's principles aren't considered upright outside of the Three Realms, but they do become upright principles here among humans. The human principles of the past were like this.

During this recent period of time, with Fa-rectification to take place, a lot of kings have reincarnated in China, and nobody could declare himself a king any longer. And there's another thing. Different-level beings from many high levels have come down and reincarnated as humans, and this has changed the make-up of different ethnic groups. Who should be made king, then? This is an even harder thing to handle, and so the old forces simply let human beings choose for themselves, and that's democracy. Democracy, when you look at its essence from the heavens, came about because of these two things.

As for human rights, it doesn't stop at human rights—there's also protection of animals. Human skins ran out, so then many incarnated as animals and many as plants. All of these things happened recently, and they're related to Fa-rectification. As Fa-rectification was to take place, everything came for the sake of Dafa, was born for Dafa, and was created for Dafa. But not everything is meant to play a positive role. That's the situation.

Question: Master has said that the part of us that's been completely cultivated is separated from the rest during our cultivation. Now that we're at the final stage of Fa-rectification, how can we break through this separation?

Teacher: Since the final elements are also the largest elements, the gaps among them are big, and they can only be completely eliminated when the powerful force of Master's Fa-rectification arrives as the Fa rectifies the human world. These things can only be resolved when that immense force arrives. As soon as it arrives and the breakthrough is achieved, that's the start of the Fa's rectification of the human world. Or looking at it from another angle, the things that you do today can result in fewer losses among your fellow practitioners and Dafa disciples, but they can't fundamentally solve the problem. Still though, in the process of validating the Fa you can bring about a situation wherein a portion of the world's people become good, which can save more people, and which stops the evil from acting so vicious, but that isn't the end of it.

Question: Master, when are you going to tell us things about the primeval Gods? During Fa-rectification they...

Teacher: The old forces that I've talked about are primeval Gods. The Gods that I've talked about are all primeval Gods. Those old forces, I can tell you, were the most outstanding beings at each level, and they have been destroyed. Those who were the most capable were destroyed as a result of the arrangement of that final old force. Its intention was to achieve what it wanted at the cost of destroying this portion. The cosmos is so immense that it is boundless and endless. So, assuming it's boundless and endless, then when it faces disintegration it wants to save itself since it's a God. And in fact, the arrangements of the old forces are the method they came up with to save themselves. They made very careful and thorough arrangements. But they didn't realize that this type of self-preservation of theirs would result precisely in their annihilation. If they hadn't done things that way they would have truly been saved this time. But they did do things that way and they've destroyed many that I wanted, and their sins have become enormous since all of those sentient beings were destroyed by them.

Question: You've said that the U.S. is the former Ming Dynasty. During the Ming Dynasty many people were Daoist cultivators. Could Master please advise us on the situation of today's Dafa disciples in the U.S. clarifying the facts to the U.S. government? Disciples in the U.S. are so busy that it seems they've become a little apathetic. What should be done to inspire the type of compassion that shakes heaven and earth...

Teacher: We shouldn't say things that way. I'm going to tell you all, you have to do things rationally. When you're clarifying the facts, if you go above the human principles by just one little bit, people won't be able to accept it. So when you're clarifying the facts, you must not talk about high-level things. What you know are things that Gods should know. Those things are what I taught to you, not to worldly people. So you shouldn't tell those things to ordinary people. You can only talk about our being persecuted, about our real situation, about our being good people and being wrongly persecuted, about our freedom of belief being violated, about our human rights being violated. They can accept all those things, and they will immediately support you and express to you their sympathy. Isn't that enough? Why do you insist on having them know the principles at such high levels? Knowing those facts, the people of the world will say that Falun Gong is being persecuted and that the

persecutors are so evil. They'll say those things, and isn't that enough? Of course, your intention is for him to become a Dafa disciple. But at present that's hard to do since the old forces are causing obstruction. Master will look after all of the special ones. But that person you talk to doesn't have the desire it takes, and on top of that the old forces are causing obstruction. Our number one task at this time is to help them learn the truth of the situation. You might meet someone who's especially good and who can accept it no matter what kind of high-level things you tell him, then you can go ahead and tell him about those things. It'll be fine and there won't be a problem there. But with what I was saying, it's especially true for some government officials, since they're politicians after all, and they have nothing but politics in their heads, so when you tell them these things, they won't believe it at all. Then isn't it the same as not only failing to save him, but also shoving him down, instead? Isn't that true?

Question: Right now there are some people who do a lot of work to clarify the facts but seldom study the Fa or do the exercises.

Teacher: That's a very serious problem. Our Dafa disciples shouldn't neglect to make individual improvements. Saving sentient beings is the magnificent task of Dafa disciples. But because you don't study the Fa the quality of your truth-clarifying work suffers, and you yourself are limited by it. That's no good.

Question: Is it true that only those who obtained the Fa before the end of 2002 are considered "Fa-rectification period Dafa disciples"?

Teacher: I have never said that. Those good ones... haven't some entered in each of the different periods of time? Actually, there are still those who want to enter but haven't yet, and of course there are also those who've fallen.

Question: We should clarify the facts to the Chinese people. But my parents in China won't let me clarify the facts about Dafa over the phone. It always feels like there's something not quite right but I haven't been able to break through it.

Teacher: Do it with wisdom. It's possible that it still won't work even after you really have made an effort. And it's also possible that Dafa disciples inside of China will do it. If you can't accomplish it, they will do it. Dafa disciples inside of China have done that work like flowers blossoming everywhere. The main body of Fa-rectification period Dafa disciples is in China. I can tell you all that the 100 million people I've talked about is not the same as the 100 million people both inside and outside China that you talk about today. There were indeed 100 million people in Mainland China who were reading *Zhuan Falun* before. They had obtained the Fa back then, and I was taking care of them. You can't say that they weren't Dafa disciples. There were 70 million who were doing true cultivation, and back then there were in fact 100 million Dafa disciples total.

Question: When I give her new articles from Master, she takes them. But she refuses to participate in any activities to spread the Fa. Is there any hope left for such a student?

Teacher: She's probably still stuck at some spot. Since she still takes them, it means that she still has upright thoughts. So in that case, take a look and see where she's stuck and what's lacking. You're a Dafa disciple, so go and try to figure her out a little and help her out.

Question: Does the personal opinion of a member of the Falun Dafa Association, such as his opinion or conclusion about a fellow practitioner, represent the opinion of the Dafa Association, or even that of Master? Esteemed Master, please make this clear to me.

Teacher: Nobody can represent me—that goes without saying. And among you all, nobody can represent another person. As for the Dafa Associations, I've said that coordination is very important. There are a lot of things that can't be said from a different standpoint, and they need to say them. But

for sure there are things they haven't done well, and Master's well aware of them. But on the other hand, with a lot of things you should consider your own part in it, and figure out just how exactly the mess was made. A God isn't affected by anything. If something should be done, just do it in an upright and dignified way.

Question: Members of a Dafa disciple's family have slandered Dafa. Will they be targeted for elimination when the Fa rectifies the human world? Or will it be related to that disciple's conduct?

Teacher: It will depend on the choices they themselves make. When somebody has damaged the Fa and become quite wicked, would you say he should be Consummated and taken to a Buddha's world? That just wouldn't do. Those who've really committed grave sins won't be allowed to remain. Since you are cultivating Dafa they'll definitely have blessings. They will be given chances, more chances, and even more chances. But at the same time, you should do your best to clarify the facts and save them, and that will create blessings for them.

Question: Teacher, on behalf of all true Dafa disciples in Heze City, Shandong Province, I'd like to pass on greetings to you.

Teacher: Thank you! (Applause)

Question: Many Dafa disciples in Heze have been arrested and beaten. Those who have been arrested in Heze all refuse to be transformed and are sent to labor camps in the city of Jinan. Is that the arrangement of the old forces?

Teacher: I don't acknowledge things like "being transformed" or "not being transformed." It's what's in people's minds that should be looked at. I still think that... Do you know that in order to transform them, the old forces have put them through severe mental persecution? They know that I don't acknowledge it, so what kind of method do they use? They separate the side of them that has righteous thoughts, or in other words, the side that's been fully cultivated, and they prevent it from having any contact with their minds. Then they ask questions of their human surface. But their human surface contains too many human things and postnatal concepts, and the side that's been fully cultivated isn't allowed to take effect at all. Since you've persecuted them under that set of circumstances, I won't acknowledge it no matter what you made them write. The old forces know that I don't acknowledge it, so why do they still do that? Because there's one thing that they can still accomplish, and that's their wanting to break the students' will. The students who made the mistake would think, "Oh no, I wrote that thing. It's all over for me. Master can no longer take care of me. I've let Dafa down." From then on they're depressed and their hearts feel heavy. That's the technique they've used and I don't acknowledge it. It doesn't matter that you fell down, it doesn't matter! Quickly get up! (Applause)

Question: Dafa disciples in the city of Harbin send greetings to Master!

Teacher: Thank you! (Applause)

*Question: Dafa disciples who are being illegally detained at the **** Labor Camp send greetings to Master!*

Teacher: That dark den is very evil, I know! Indeed, it's true that the students have become better and better, and they're more and more rational. Let's not talk about what's happening in China for now. (Applause) Once we start talking about that it'll be a long story. No matter what, what awaits those evil ones are sins that they will never be able to repay, and what awaits Dafa disciples is magnificent, majestic Consummation! (Applause)

Question: I've recently come to understand the following: Whenever a conflict arises among

Dafa disciples over Dafa work, we should first send righteous thoughts to eliminate those evil forces that are using students' attachments and bad concepts to persecute Dafa disciples as a whole, and then talk about the specific problems related to our work. Is it correct to do things this way?

Teacher: I think that when Dafa disciples encounter conflicts, it's not necessarily the result of something that can be controlled by the demons. They will interfere, and it's okay to send righteous thoughts, but you should study the Fa a lot. If you send righteous thoughts before you do things, well, it's true that it can eliminate some interference.

Question: I'm a disciple who obtained the Fa after July 20, 1999. In the course of cultivating I've been subjected to a lot of interference from other dimensions, even completely groundless persecution from the evil forces. Why is it that while using righteous thoughts to eliminate the persecution I'm never able to be completely resolute and always seem to have things that I need to improve on?

Teacher: How should I put this... That happens because for those Dafa disciples who obtained the Fa after July 20, 1999, your process of cultivation and your validating the Fa have been merged together. While for those who obtained the Fa earlier, the period of time for their personal cultivation has already passed, and right now their main task is to save sentient beings, the focus has shifted to validating the Fa. The people who entered later and happened to run into the situation of validating the Fa have to do that, too, and at the same time some personal cultivation issues are included in the mix. So you'll feel that certain things appear rather complex, but that's okay, because in Master's eyes things are well-ordered, and if your righteous thoughts are strong there won't be a problem.

Question: At this stage, can sending righteous thoughts replace doing the exercises?

Teacher: Those are two different things. *(Teacher laughs)* Doing the exercises is doing the exercises. Doing the exercises is to strengthen the mechanisms and to transform the innate body into a divine body. Sending righteous thoughts is to utilize divine powers, or to put it plainly, to use your abilities. The purpose is to eliminate evil rotten ghosts.

Question: Esteemed Master, greetings! There are many students who use righteous thoughts to eliminate evil for the smallest things. Even when they suffer from minor ailments or little health problems they send righteous thoughts.

Teacher: Perhaps you yourselves haven't studied the Fa enough? If you really have done something wrong and then a problem comes up as a result, and you go and send righteous thoughts, then it doesn't seem right, and the old forces will make trouble. They'll think that not only have you done poorly, but on top of that you want to eliminate *them*. It'd seem that way, wouldn't it? So you should still try your best to see if you've done things well or not. If you haven't done things well, go do them well. But in your question you mentioned, "even when they suffer from minor ailments or little health problems they send righteous thoughts." What do you mean "minor ailments" or "little health problems"? They're signs of karma being eliminated, right?

Question: During the initial month when I first began to send righteous thoughts, once while sending righteous thoughts I saw clearly through my Third Eye that within the span of just five minutes a strong purple-reddish light annihilated in an instant everything of that big head demon in China which appeared to be human but also not human. The power was great beyond description. Is what was annihilated only a representative in our dimension? Is there a representative of it in each and every dimension?

Teacher: It's very complicated. Sometimes you disciples are truly able to directly eliminate the rotten ghosts inside the body of that big head demon. At those times it looks like it's about to die, but

then they begin to resuscitate it, and then another batch of rotten ghosts replenish it, so it comes around, just as if nothing had happened. Also, in order for it to be able to control all the rotten ghosts, way back when, the old forces propped up all of its cells' particles that make up its human body beneath its surface to the point where those particles were as large as the Three Realms. All human things inside of the cells were dug out by the old forces and cast down to hell, and the cells were refilled with those rotten ghosts. Since particles of a human being are in the image of that person, all the dimensions in the Three Realms had the head demon's cells in them, and all the cells had large numbers of rotten ghosts inside them. So when you disciples sent righteous thoughts at those times, you were able to eliminate a large number of the big head demon's particles and the rotten ghosts in the Three Realms. At the instant when you were annihilating it and blowing it up, you would see that it was destroyed, and that was real. What state have you put it in now? Everything but the particles that form its human surface has been eliminated and it is now empty. There's nothing left. What's left is just the human skin made up of a layer of surface cells, which includes the internal organs. And that's because all the cell particles in the Three Realms of the head demon that were propped up by the old forces have been annihilated, and there's nothing of it above or below, and all of them have been cleaned out. At present this human skin is being propped up by those last, worst demons of the old forces. So it no longer has any of the normal rationality a human being has. Everything results from those rotten ghosts controlling its human skin, which is truly like a layer of skin that's been painted on. All of the bad-person concepts and karma that the surface of its human skin has generated over the course of its life now seem very afraid. What it displays is simply fear. It's afraid of the consequences of losing power, it's afraid that Falun Gong's name will be cleared, it's afraid that it will be killed, it's afraid that the vast amount of money and property its family has embezzled will be confiscated—it's afraid of everything. Yet the evil on its other side feels nothing but hatred. It can see that the situation is hopeless, and it feels hatred, yet it's not able to muster up a lot of energy. It knows that it's all over for it. It feels hatred but it's also afraid, and it has to force itself to act energetic for people to see, and it tries to hang on to keep the show going. That's the state that it's in right now. Back when its cells' particles were propped up so much, and its inside was filled with rotten ghosts, the evil energy was truly running high, and its body was propped up so much that it felt like it was expanding and expanding; it felt that it had a healthy body and strong energy. It also became bold and had such a ferocious look to it that the people around it really got scared of it. Now it's like an eggplant after a frost, it's all shriveled up, and everything inside it has been purged. The more righteous thoughts Dafa disciples send, the fewer the number of rotten ghosts there will be inside its body, the more shriveled up it will get, and the smaller its body will get, because other than the human skin there's nothing of its microcosmic particles left.

*Question: Disciples from the Second Military Command University, Toronto, Pingxiang of Jiangxi Province, the city of Chongqing, Peru, China, Macao, the U.S., the city of Harbin, Shandong Province, the city of Jinan, the city of Kunming, Australia, the city of Dalian, disciples released from prison in the city of Jiamusi, disciples from Germany, **** Detention Center in the city of Shijiazhuang, Shandong Province, the city of Hezhe, Tianjin, Xinjiang Province, the city of Hengyang, and the city of Changchun—the above disciples send greetings to Master.*

Teacher: Thank you! (Applause)

Question: Recently when I've been studying Zhuan Falun I no longer feel like I'm developing new understandings and making progress each time I finish reading the book.

Teacher: However high a person's *xinxing* is, that's how high his *gong* is. There have to be reasons. Is it because your mind isn't calm? I think there have to be reasons. At higher levels the requirements are higher, too.

Question: Could you tell us what the basic process is when the transition is made from the Fa-

rectification period to the period when the Fa rectifies the human world?

Teacher: I can tell you, there isn't a process like you've imagined, not at all. I can tell you that the immense force of the Fa's rectification of the human world is something that the old forces couldn't see in the past. Now that they've seen it they're scared out of their wits. So a lot of those Gods who the old forces arranged to do certain things don't dare to do them now. What's manifesting in the current state of things is the rotten ghosts continuing to do bad things. Once the Fa's rectification of the human world arrives, all of these things will be over with. There's no process. At the time of the Fa's rectification, at the time when the *gong* arrives, there will be a certain phenomenon. What phenomenon? I've told you before that everything that human beings see with their eyes is composed of molecules. So on this molecular layer, if a hole were punched through or a rip were torn open—no matter where it was—what would you see? You would see the heavens, it would be exactly like the curtain on a stage suddenly being ripped open or a hole being punched through it, but this dimension can't be ruined since the Fa's rectification of the human world still needs to be done. Or, it could seep in from all the microcosmic levels.

Question: Besides being attached to their arrangements, do the old forces have other areas where they fall short?

Teacher: Other than being attached to everything that they want to have happen, there's nothing else for them. They just want to preserve what they had originally, and they only have that one aim.

Question: Will any Fa-rectification period Dafa disciples be left behind?

Teacher: No. (*Loud applause*) If I left you behind you'd be ruined, truly ruined. That's because if a person isn't going forward, he's going backward. Once you suddenly reached that state in this environment, then in this environment as long as you were here among humans and were mixed in with humans when you did things, your level would drop and you'd gradually be polluted by humans. Haven't I said that the Buddhas in the heavens and the Buddhas, Taos, and Gods in certain dimensions need to be replaced at set intervals? That's because it's easy for them to get polluted by the Three Realms, so they need to be replaced.

Question: Revered Master, please tell us what should be the direction of the Minghui Kindergartens.

Teacher: You've been doing a great job! You know, that big head demon is injecting kids in Chinese kindergartens with poison, it's so wicked! It truly wants to destroy the human race! When it sees us doing things this way it gets enraged. Actually, in the previous Chinese government, among the central leadership, out of the seven members of the Standing Committee, six of them were against persecuting Falun Gong. I also know that even the head of the 610 Office, who's been persecuting Falun Gong, was against the persecution initially. Almost all the central governmental agencies and various ministries of the government were against persecuting Falun Gong.

Question: While taking part in this Fa-rectification, the old forces made arrangements for time on two Earths. Why did the experiments have to be performed on the second Earth with the giants, dwarves, and medium-sized people? May I ask, what kind of people did they arrange on the first Earth?

Teacher: When the experiment was being done here where we are, arrangements were made for three types of people. On the first Earth five types of people were arranged. When that Earth finally ended there were three types of people left. This time around, right from the beginning there were just three types. They were continually exploring what they wanted to have happen, and only made the final decision before Fa-rectification was to take place.

Question: My question is this: When we send righteous thoughts, are the low-level evil beings that we eliminate also constantly replenished as they are eliminated?

Teacher: Dimensions have been made very complex by cosmic bodies that came from the outside. They've even divided particles into different segments. You really do eliminate them. But what's eliminated is a segmented portion. During Fa-rectification when I clear away a layer of gigantic beings, another batch of the rotten ghosts is then exposed, and that's why it seems like they can't ever be totally cleared away. But in fact, our cleansing is done on a large scale and at a fast speed. And what's more, the total number of things that have been cleared out is huge. We can see this from the overall situation of Fa-rectification: In the past, every blade of grass and every tree was under the evil beings' control, almost to the point where even the particles of air were under their control. It even felt hard for you to take a breath. Now things are different. People are waking up, and there aren't that many rotten ghosts left to control people. What a huge change!

Question: On January 22nd a U.S. disciple was arrested at the Guangzhou Airport...

Teacher: Since you're Dafa disciples, when there's a problem, everyone should work together as one. Since they aren't afraid of having their dirty deeds brought out into the open, we should expose them all to the whole world, and let all Americans know that a U.S. citizen has been arrested. Since they're not afraid of having their dirty deeds brought out into the open, we should go ahead and do those things. Every day that they don't release him is another day for us to expose them. (*Loud applause*)

Question: I'm sometimes clear about what the old forces are and sometimes not.

Teacher: They're just that twenty percent of beings in the cosmos, and they were arranged to take part in my affairs. In history they made many systematic arrangements, and I participated in many of their arrangements in history. If I hadn't participated at those times they would have chosen someone else, and there would have been even more problems at the time of Fa-rectification. They would have chosen another person to rectify the Fa. Then when it was time to rectify the Fa and I began to do things, they would have used up all the beings in the entire cosmos to go after me. If I eliminated them, then how could I save them? What Fa-rectification truly looks like is something that not a single being may know. Whoever knew it would escape it, and that's something that the cosmos couldn't allow. Even less could it allow beings in the cosmos to choose how Fa-rectification plays out.

Question: Recently a married couple who are both Dafa disciples gave birth to a baby who appears to have a lot of hardship and is born deformed. How should we look at this situation?

Teacher: Things are very complicated at this time. Since he's your child, you should provide loving care and do your best to take care of him. But put your mind at ease. As long as you can cultivate to Consummation, everything will end up to be the best (*applause*)—this is created for cultivators and Dafa disciples. If you can't Consume, though, then everything was for nothing.

Question: Master has told us that the main body of Dafa is in China. There are Dafa disciples in many places in China. How can we do better at improving together?

Teacher: No need to worry about that. They're all able to know about the Minghui website. Dafa disciples in remote regions all keep in touch with one another and information is being passed among them.

Question: Revered Master said earlier that those who wrote pledges while being persecuted to the point where they were no longer clearheaded still have a chance. But no matter what, I can't forgive

those people in Mainland China who have betrayed Master. It's not like they did things that they shouldn't have done because they couldn't endure the persecution. They actually stood on the side of the evil and aggravated the persecution.

Teacher: Yes, it's hard to say what will happen when they have gone that far. I've said that I want to save everyone. But if you have sinned so greatly, then the Fa will be used to judge you, and there's nothing more that can be done for you. Compassion and solemn dignity coexist for the sake of protecting the Fa. But the old forces deliberately arranged for some people to come in and do things that way, so it's very complicated. Before July 20, 1999, certain people appeared quite active, but when the persecution began, they participated in the persecution even more eagerly than anybody else. That happened in order to make the overall situation complicated for students.

Question: Master, please tell us if there are situations where your Buddha-picture is also passed through.

Teacher: I can tell you that they aren't trying to do anything to me. They're targeting students' attachments. If you act in a really upright way they absolutely won't dare to just casually do those things, as it has my Law Body on it. As for the old forces in particular, did you know this: Their Fa-rectification depends completely on me, they respect me, and the tribulations are created for you, not me. But if you can handle those things with righteous thoughts then you won't be interfered with. As a matter of fact, in many instances the reason behind it is that your attachments are at work.

Just a moment ago I talked about how it's not that the old forces want to destroy the cosmos. They just want to preserve everything in its original form. So, from the perspective of my Law Bodies, it doesn't matter whether it's old forces or righteous Gods, my Law Bodies are watching over everything. Only when you, the Dafa disciples, don't conduct yourselves well do they dare to do things. That's when they have an excuse to target you. Under normal circumstances they don't dare to do such things. Even though the situation that I described earlier does exist, it is an isolated, very isolated, phenomenon. If that phenomenon happens even once or twice the consequences are pretty big. That's why I said that as soon as they were seen they'd be destroyed. No matter whether they did it intentionally or unintentionally, as soon as they were seen they were destroyed, since they committed the sin of persecuting Dafa disciples' righteous thoughts and righteous faith. So, even if they can justify it, they're still very timid when they do those things. As a matter of fact, I'm already eliminating that type of thing and putting a stop to it.

Some students have seen the old forces do some bad deeds and bring bad things onto my body. Some students are able to see that. What worries me more is that you might be affected by it! That's because you would see that it looked like something bad was on Master's body. Do you realize that those things are *yours*?! I am suffering on your behalf. (*Loud applause*) Otherwise who would dare to bring things upon me? It happens because I'm protecting you, and somebody has to eliminate it.

Question: How can we more effectively clarify the truth on a large scale and save sentient beings? How can we make our newspapers and television have a bigger impact?

Teacher: All of those are specific matters. The fact is, you're doing quite well. You should keep on doing those things and come up with ways to keep on improving them. That too is walking the path of Dafa disciples and establishing your mighty virtue by saving the people of the world.

Question: When we send righteous thoughts to eliminate problems inside of ourselves, are we also eliminating the old forces that are passing through our bodies?

Teacher: When you send righteous thoughts, it doesn't just stop at what's inside your body, everything that's inside of your domain is scared away. So is it okay to just constantly send righteous

thoughts to keep them from coming and do nothing else? What I'm saying is, they just don't dare to come anymore under normal circumstances, but if you think about it too much it becomes an attachment. Other dimensions exist simultaneously. You don't feel anything when beings in other dimensions walk toward you and pass through you. That's how dimensions exist. The cosmos is just structured that way, and it won't affect you. Since the topic of the structure has come up, I'll tell you something that you'll enjoy hearing. (*Loud applause*)

You know there are many many plants, animals, and different kinds of things on earth. Specifically speaking, you know there are apples, bananas, oranges, and grapes, you know there are tigers, lions, rabbits, and goats, and you know there are many many different kinds of trees, plants, and flowers. Other dimensions have those things too. Faraway cosmic bodies that are at the same level as Earth and similar to Earth have those things too. Lower-level particles compose particles that are one level higher. Those bigger particles also have these animals, plants, and different kinds of things on them. An apple in the heavens is so big that it might be even bigger than a planet. Is an apple from those low-level planets a particle inside of the big apple of high-level particles? The answer is yes. There are lions on Earth, there are lions in the heavens, and there are lions at even higher levels. There are people on Earth, there are people in the heavens, and there are even bigger people—so big they're incomparably gigantic. And beings have kings, or in other words, every being has a king. The king of a being is the largest layer of that particle, and everything beneath it is spread out on particles of different sizes, some big and some small. The living being on the sphere of the largest particle layer is the king of all the beings, and its particles are displayed in all the levels underneath it.

So what kind of entity is this cosmos? Myriads of things that are interwoven and blending together. There are so many beings on Earth, but those living things don't at all belong to the same king, and they don't belong to the same system of beings. Yet they all live here and have blended together. But living things are connected to their own kings, and they aren't connected to other beings. That is, even though they intersect throughout the space of the cosmos, they have their own independent systems and are governed by their own kings. So lions have their king, apples have their king, bananas have their king, trees have their king, plants, grass, flowers—all things—they each have their respective kings. That's how all beings that exist in dimensions that are at the same level intersect and blend together. Human beings pass through gigantic beings. At each and every moment, extremely microcosmic living elements float through the bodies of ordinary people. Your surface is watched over by my Law Bodies and Law Guardians. And the side of you that's been fully cultivated is sealed up. As one layer is done it's sealed up. As another layer is done it's sealed up. And nothing can pass through it. So this cosmos is really complicated. I've described for you yet another form of the structure of the cosmos. (*Loud applause*)

Question: I feel that Master is higher than everything and has already arranged our path. So from that perspective, it seems that the arrangements of the old forces are used by Master with our improvement as the goal. So it seems that the arrangements of the old forces aren't actually very real. Is this understanding correct?

Teacher: Half of it is correct, because I don't acknowledge them. But I knew that they'd do things this way, so I was left with no choice but to go along with their ploys and turn their ploys against them. That's the situation.

Question: Dafa disciples from Liaoning Province, the Taiwan Minghui School, Sweden Central Park, and the city of Chengdu in Sichuan Province send greetings to Master.

Teacher: Thank you! (*Loud applause*)

Question: When we send righteous thoughts to eliminate problems in ourselves, are we also

eliminating the old forces that are passing through disciples' flesh bodies, and is it okay for us to copy Master's compassion and clarify the truth to them in our minds?

Teacher: That has left too strong an impression on you. I can tell you that that happens just because of the spatial structure and you shouldn't be concerned about it. If you don't want them to pass through you, just close your mouth and don't breathe today. (*Audience laughs*) The reason is that the air, too, is alive, and it too is beings that haven't been rectified by the Fa yet. So don't be concerned about these things. Human beings have lived this way for thousands and tens of thousands of years. Why is it so hard for a human being to cultivate, and why is it hard for a human being to become a God? It's because the old cosmos doesn't have the wisdom and isn't able to solve these problems. In order for these problems to be solved, the cosmos had to be fundamentally perfected from top to bottom. The path for future human beings to become Gods has been blazed, and that has happened because this undertaking is to be done from here all the way up to the very top. (*Loud applause*) So for a human being, the formation of postnatal concepts, along with interference from this type of element, make things very complicated. It's really hard to save people! Divine beings of the past saw saving people as something very hard to do, since they saw this phenomenon. Should Dafa disciples be afraid of this? Approach everything with righteous thoughts! I was only telling you that there is that phenomenon, that there is something like that happening. That's a part of the cosmos' structure, it's how things are.

Question: Lately when I send righteous thoughts my body feels incredibly warm.

Teacher: That's a good thing. The feeling of warmth comes from having a large amount of energy. Some people can feel it and some can't.

Question: I feel waves upon waves of pressure in my head. Is this normal or is this demonic interference?

Teacher: Generally speaking it's normal. The changes in your body, the reflections of your *gong*, and the raising of your level can all result in that kind of reaction.

Question: There is this lady in New Jersey who came from Mainland China. All four of her limbs were amputated three years ago due to a bacterial infection. But her mind is still sharp. A Dafa disciple lives downhill from her house. How should this Dafa disciple help her?

Teacher: Dafa disciples, the most important thing that you need to do today is to clarify the facts and save sentient beings. You should find out if she's been poisoned or not, and if she has you should go and talk to her. If she hasn't been poisoned, then you should go do whatever you're supposed to do. The government does provide care for handicapped people, after all, so you shouldn't think about it too much. If you're too attached to these things, then I can tell you, you can forget about cultivation. The misfortune and injustices in the human world are just so cruel, and there are so many unfair things in the human world. Can you be attached to them all? The only way to save a person is to save her on a fundamental level. (*Applause*)

Question: Some people say that there's no need for Dafa disciples to save money.

Teacher: That's going to extremes again. (*Audience laughs*) Do what you think you should do. If you say that you want to save money and purchase property, then in that case you should go do that, because that is how people will cultivate in the future. Or maybe you'll say that you don't want to do anything and you just want to wait here, (*audience laughs*) well in that case you won't Consummate. What a strong attachment that would be! But when the time of Consummation actually came, you wouldn't be able to let go of those things, would you? If you can let them go then they're not important. One's thinking at that moment is the thinking of a God. So why would you think about those

things? Don't concern yourself with anything. As a matter of fact, I can tell you that at the final moment of the Fa's rectification of the human world, in a flash everything will be disintegrated. What money? There won't even be a piece of paper left. *(Loud applause)* But that doesn't have anything to do with you.

Question: Saving money and planning financially for the future education of children isn't something that we should concern ourselves with since we're going to Consummate in the future and don't need to worry about that. (Audience laughs) There are also Dafa disciples who say that we don't even need to care for our parents, as they might be our enemies from the past. (Audience laughs)

Teacher: That doesn't sound like something a Dafa disciple would say. The attachment has grown that strong! Do you know what a magnificent thing it is for Dafa disciples to Consummate? Master has to take care of everything all around you. Is there any need for you to worry about anything? Do you have the ability to take care of those things? Will things go according to your wishes? Haven't I already explained this principle to you all? If their fortune isn't that good, it's totally useless no matter what kind of plans you make. But Master is able to arrange things for you. I can make arrangements, regardless of whether they have good fortune or not. What are you worried about? You should just cultivate and I'll take care of everything for you. Hasn't that been said already? But if you don't cultivate well, then there's nothing I can do. Your words don't sound like something a Dafa disciple would say, that's what I think!

Question: In the morning you mentioned that you went from nothing to something, and that in the future nobody will know you. I want to know, after we Consummate in the future will we still have these types of opportunities to listen to you teach the Fa? If I still have questions, will there be opportunities to have you answer them for us? (Audience laughs)

Teacher: You can't cultivate forever. *(Audience laughs)* You're still using human thinking to consider things. Gods don't think about things that way. When you have countless sentient beings to take care of you'll have a lot on your mind. Then you probably won't be able to think of Master this frequently! *(Teacher laughs)* Just joking. Of course, maybe I'll teach Fa on a larger scale in the future, and maybe I won't. Those are all future matters. The truth is, when you think about whether you'll be able to see Master in the future you're still using the human thoughts that are present to think about things. When that day arrives you'll be in a different state. But when you truly need me, you'll see the aspect that is the wide and far-reaching Buddha's grace. *(Loud applause)* That's because you are special. You are Fa-rectification period Dafa disciples! *(Loud applause)* You once existed alongside the Fa-rectification! *(Loud applause)*

You should cherish this predestined chance. There really won't be a next time. In the future you'll see the terrifying image of the Fa-rectification that lies in history's past. Some Dafa disciples really have performed poorly—one moment they were doing quite well and the next they weren't. Actually, even when gigantic cosmic beings witnessed the power of Fa-rectification they were truly shocked.

Today is the first time since July 20, 1999, that I've answered questions for Dafa disciples at a Fa conference on such a large scale and for such a long time. *(Long applause)*

From the question slips that you submitted this time I can see that they're very different from before. The words might be similar, but I can see that what's inside them is different. On top of that, the biggest difference is that the mindset of curiosity and fascination has been replaced by righteous thoughts. You've become rational and you're no longer hovering around the surface searching for knowledge. Of course, when I talked about the structure of the cosmos you were all interested. But it wasn't just you—even Gods were listening carefully since they didn't even know about it. *(Applause)*

So during this persecution, even though we've suffered huge losses and Dafa disciples have been groundlessly persecuted, I can really tell that you've matured during this persecution, and you are now composed and rational. The old attitude of saying one thing and thinking another and not being attentive to the Fa is gone. During this persecution, everyone has seriously reflected on which path he should take and what he should do. Actually, the old forces arranged for many people to come and play negative roles. Some of those people had abandoned that before the persecution started, and some did during the persecution. That's because the side of those beings that's aware knows. So, many people who were to play negative roles quit and are now cultivating in an upright and dignified way. It's because I absolutely don't acknowledge the ones who play negative roles. The old forces didn't expect that their arrangements—such intricate arrangements that appeared to be done for me but were in reality done for themselves—as well as everything they've done, would become the true impediment to Fa-rectification, and that they themselves would become the true demonic obstacles in the Fa-rectification.

And speaking of demons, I wasn't referring to normal demons in the cosmos. In fact, the cosmos' Demon King is the manifestation of another aspect of lives. It's also a guardian of the cosmos, only it uses evil means. So I wasn't referring to them. I was referring to the beings that are damaging Fa-rectification—they are the demons that truly damage Dafa. We've experienced so many things. A lot of times words were at the tip of my tongue but I had to swallow them, because once I brought it out into the open there'd really be just so many things that I had to say. We've experienced so many things, and you've all become mature. You should face the journey ahead of you with even more rationality, and you should handle everything that you're doing today with even more rationality. Don't be stuck in emotion anymore, and don't be mired in your very strong sense of self anymore. You all have abilities and talents, Master has affirmed you, and you don't need to display those things of yours to Master anymore. (*Applause*)

How are we to... it's just like what the student who submitted the question slip brought up, how are we to do a good job cooperating and coordinating with each other—that's what Fa-rectification needs the most from Dafa disciples. We don't dwell on surface forms. As long as you've studied the Fa well you will be able to do that. You know, in the old days before a group practice everybody would be talking and doing all kinds of things, and it would look really disorderly. But as soon as the music started—"Whoosh!" everybody stood together and gathered into a formation more orderly than a group of soldiers. There wasn't anybody drilling you and there wasn't anybody telling you what to do. Instead, it came from inside yourselves. That's cooperation and coordination, and that's the harmony of Dafa disciples. You shouldn't just display it in these certain things, you should display that kind of cooperation in all areas of Fa-rectification.

Of course, there are also some problems which I'm not going to bring up here. And I don't want to emphasize them, as the words that come from my mouth carry a great deal of weight. This is because a lot of problems are what you need to face, and they're also things that, as you trip and fall, require you to become mature, make you take heed and recognize them so that you can walk the road ahead of you well.

Also, don't think, "Fa-rectification has come this far, so it looks like it'll be over soon and we should start making plans for the future." I can tell you that any attachment will bring on tremendous tribulations. You absolutely must not form any attachments! You should cultivate in an upright and dignified way, and handle well everything in front of you that you should do. If you're to Consummate tomorrow, you still have to do well what you're supposed to do today and in an orderly way. That's because everything Dafa disciples are doing today is to be left for the people of the future, and this is the path of cultivation for the people of the future. This is extremely important. Do not walk a crooked

path. Dafa is the best at every level, and at this human level Dafa disciples should only make it even more complete and perfect, and not bring any losses to it.

That's all I'd like to say. I hope you will do well what you're supposed to do. Of the three things to validate the Fa, one is to study the Fa well, one is to clarify the facts, and another is to take sending righteous thoughts seriously. Put together, these things all validate the Fa and all save sentient beings, and they are all what Dafa disciples should do. In other words, your Consummation, your future, and all of your mighty virtue are established in these. Make your own contributions based on your individual abilities and specific talents in different areas. For example, in clarifying the facts, some of you produce TV programs, and some publish newspapers, a lot of different methods are used, and some distribute truth-clarifying material directly on the streets, some go to the Chinese consulates, and some work with the government. Not a single one of all these different approaches should be neglected. I can tell you, the fact that right now Dafa has been able to break through the evil persecution and have more of the world's people know about Dafa is inseparable from the things you're doing today. The overall situation right now is what you've established. (*Loud applause*) If you haven't done things well you should seize the day. You don't need anyone to affirm you, and you don't need to do things to show anyone. When you are able to live up to your conscience, Master sees it. (*Applause*)

I think I've already said a lot today. I won't say more. I'm a bit reluctant to leave—I really enjoy being with you. (*Long period of applause*)

Li Hongzhi

the afternoon of February 15, 2003 in Los Angeles

Teaching and Explaining the Fa at the Metropolitan New York Fa Conference

Hello! (*Applause*)

You've been working hard! (*Applause*) You may have seen recently that, through Dafa disciples' constant efforts, through clarifying the facts, and by way of sending righteous thoughts, studying the Fa, and cultivating yourselves, you have caused significant changes in the state of things before the entire, enormous force of Fa-rectification arrives. The evil beings in different dimensions are indeed very few now. So they're not able to form persecution and interference on a large scale anymore. But, as long as they still exist, they're going to interfere with students in places where there's inadequate understanding and attachments in the mind. Don't let them take advantage of the gaps in your *xinxing* anymore.

At present there are some frictions among students, and you all need to watch out—you can't let minor things affect the important things that Dafa disciples are supposed to do. I'm going to tell you that no matter what kind of conflicts arise, or what kind of situations emerge, it's bound to be that we have gaps in ourselves. That's for sure. If there weren't a gap nobody could exploit it. When there's a *xinxing* friction among our students or disharmony when you're cooperating with each other, and it doesn't matter if it's something big or small, I'm telling you, it's definitely demons exploiting the gaps. You're Dafa disciples, so the part of you that's completed cultivation meets the standard of Gods fully, but your surface is still cultivating in Dafa. Basically, as Dafa disciples, you should display the state of a Dafa disciple in every respect. So when there's friction that tries your *xinxing* from time to time, that's caused by your understanding or your own attachments related to your *xinxing*. Although those incidents are minor, they can easily be taken advantage of by messy, bad beings in the different dimensions. Pay attention to these things! You've gone through the evil test so you should understand everything.

In the audience there are people from Europe, Asia, Australia, and also South America and lots of other regions. It's not easy for all of you to sit together. There's something I said before. I said: although you're together now, when you reach Consummation none of you will be able to find each other (*laughing*). As you know, this cosmos is incredibly vast. Because of the Fa-rectification the Three Realms was created, and because of the Fa-rectification the human society was created, so high-level beings from many colossal firmaments came here in the past. At that time they didn't come in large numbers and they were of a representative nature, coming in different time periods to cooperate and do these final things. What this means is, a large portion of the Dafa disciples came with those cosmic bodies, and everybody formed karmic relationships. Once you've reached Consummation and returned it'll be almost impossible for you to see each other again, even if you want to. So, you should treasure this part of your karmic relationship. And what's more, those karmic relationships of yours have been intertwined with each other, and different karmic relationships were formed over every lifetime—it hasn't been easy. So, cooperate well when you do things. Each Dafa disciple's thing is everybody else's. Don't create distance and disharmony between each other over some little, trivial thing. You can't do that, and you should treasure all this. And also, you need to cooperate in Dafa things, and you should do a good job of cooperating.

For Dafa disciples there are just three things right now. One is clarifying the facts. One is sending righteous thoughts—sending righteous thoughts has an effect on your own bodies and things outside of your body. And the other is cultivating yourselves and studying the Fa well. These three things are of utmost importance. Now you're all clear on the purpose of clarifying the facts, which is to expose the evil persecution and to let the world's people know and to let the beings in the cosmos know. While you're clarifying here, layers upon layers of your bodies that have completed cultivation

are also clarifying at cosmic bodies of different levels. You have to expose the persecution and the evil drama, and you have to let the world's people see it clearly, and this too suppresses it and eliminates it. Clarifying the facts is most powerful, and it's an act of grand compassion since this persecution is completely based on lies and deception. So you're all clear on the purpose of Dafa disciples' sending righteous thoughts, which is mainly done to clean out the evil beings that control the human race and make it do evil against Dafa and persecute Dafa disciples and the world's people, and it's to save the human race and sentient beings, and to clear out the obstacles to Fa-rectification that were set up. So it's of utmost importance. No Dafa disciple can neglect this. Nor can you use any excuse to neglect sending righteous thoughts. That's because if you don't cleanse yourself well you won't be able to do well yourself, and if you don't cleanse yourself well you'll also interfere with others. The third thing is studying the Fa well. If you don't study this Great Law well your own Consummation won't be secured. What's more, all the important Dafa things you should do will be like ordinary people going about their business, with ordinary-person thoughts and with an ordinary person's basis, and then that's just ordinary people, at best that's just ordinary people doing good deeds for Dafa. Since you're Dafa disciples you can't dissociate yourselves from the Fa when you do things. You're still continually changing this most surface part that hasn't changed. That's why you can't go without studying the Fa. You must study the Fa well. In the process of studying the Fa you'll be able to keep clearing away bad elements in yourself, changing the last bit of stuff you have that hasn't yet been changed. Why did I always use to tell you so emphatically to study the Fa, study the Fa, and study the Fa well? Because it's of utmost importance.

As you already know, Dafa disciples have gone through the process of Consummation, and history today has bestowed upon Dafa disciples an even greater responsibility: not your own liberation and Consummation, but saving more sentient beings. That's why you deserve to be Dafa disciples. So, you've been granted such a great, historic responsibility, and along with it you are given corresponding honor. I haven't said who I am. But all the same, I am rectifying the Fa. Then, as Dafa disciples, today you're able to rectify the Fa together with Master, so I think that as far as what's in store for you in the future—I've never told you specifically but today I'll hint at it—it's going to be the most supreme, unprecedented honor! (*Applause*) Have you thought about this: whoever has persecuted Dafa, whoever has persecuted Dafa disciples, however high the involved being is, an equivalence between that being and you has formed. No matter how high it is it becomes equal to you. But, what's involved are Lords of very high colossal firmaments, Lords of boundless colossal firmaments, and even higher beings, and yet now those highest places of different colossal firmaments that have done bad things against Dafa have formed an equivalence with different Dafa disciples of mine. Think about it everyone, what's that mean? I can also tell you that although a lot of my Dafa disciples have been killed by the persecution, the Fa has been set: their beings will switch positions with those highest beings that persecuted them! (*Applause*)

That's how it is. Why have such high-level Gods gotten involved in this? Why have such high-level Gods influenced the beings below to have them persecute Dafa disciples? They didn't participate directly but their factors caused it, so how could they not be held responsible for it? They participated, so they must be held responsible for that interference. That's a law of the cosmos. Otherwise it would have nothing to do with them. As long as there's a little bit of connection with them they have to be held responsible. When they no longer deserve to be sitting there, Dafa disciples will be allowed to cultivate up and sit there. That's how it works.

Actually, there are many things here that ordinary people can't even imagine. They might seem ordinary, but all the things Dafa disciples do are the most magnificent, and they're unprecedented. You see, this persecution against Dafa disciples is evil to the extreme and has caused a huge uproar, and the Great Law of the cosmos is providing salvation to people in the human world—such a grand Fa is

being spread in the human world—but why are so many of the world’s people indifferent and unmoved? They’re in fact being restrained by the old forces, and they’ve been tightly sealed off. The old forces think that cultivating in the Fa-rectification period and validating the Fa are Dafa disciples’ things and that other people don’t deserve to take part. Under this circumstance it’s hard for the world’s people to realize Dafa’s Fa-truths and the sacredness of the Fa itself. But they are able to understand things like what humankind, today’s people, call “human rights” being squashed and freedom of belief being squashed. So when you’re clarifying the facts your words should revolve around those topics, and people will be able to understand and they’ll be supportive. As long as someone still has a sense of justice, or still has a good side, and can still be saved, he’ll give support. So when you speak at too high of a level the effect will actually be bad. That’s because whoever obtains the Fa at this time is a Dafa disciple, and when you want to turn ordinary people into Dafa disciples right away as you clarify the facts you’re overanxious for results. Anybody who talks too high when he clarifies the facts is being irrational and doing harm. And if he doesn’t listen to words of caution and is too attached, he might do even worse bad things and be taken advantage of by demons. When you’ve truly committed those kinds of sins demons might take you down.

So none of these things are minor, and you should handle them well. Your path is, and I think you’ve all seen this now, actually very narrow. If you deviate just a little bit you won’t measure up to the standard of a Dafa disciple. There’s only one very righteous path we can walk on, and we can’t deviate even just a little bit, because this is required by history, and required by the lives of sentient beings in the future cosmos. The cosmos in the future can’t have any deviation or errors due to your having omissions during the Fa-rectification, so it’s important for you to walk each and every step well during your own validating the Fa. It only looks as if it’s ordinary. Don’t leave any stain or regret on the path that you walk when you validate the Fa and during this period when you establish your mighty virtue. Those can never be erased. Of course, whether it’s cultivation, validating the Fa, or clearing away the persecution with righteous thoughts, this affair hasn’t ended yet, and before it has ended it’s an opportunity for those who haven’t done well. If in the end you still don’t handle things well, when the end comes you will fail. When the persecution first began the students in Mainland China and outside the Mainland alike indeed didn’t do well with a lot of things. When they didn’t do well at that time you could say that they lacked experience, or that they hadn’t ever run into something like that, so they didn’t know what to do. Now that a few years have flashed by you can’t say that anymore. Now you know full well and rationally how to handle things, so you should do even better, and what happened in the past shouldn’t happen again.

If you do well in cultivating yourselves it will have a bearing on major things in the future cosmos. The process of Dafa disciples’ personal Consummation is over, but as my disciple, as a Dafa disciple, the responsibility that history has bestowed upon you today doesn’t end with your achieving personal Consummation—it asks you to do even greater things, and wants to establish for you even greater mighty virtue. Of course, that means an even higher Attainment Status is awaiting you, and the cosmos has even greater responsibilities awaiting you. That’s how they’re related. I said before that Dafa disciples should continue their efforts as long as they haven’t done well enough. Although you’ve gone through the process of cultivation, you should still cultivate yourselves to be even better, and cultivate well the most surface, remaining part that hasn’t been fully cultivated, so reading the books and studying the Fa is of utmost importance.

You know something? I discussed the Fa of “Ascending in Broad Daylight” before, and that’s about the surface body ascending in broad daylight once it’s fully cultivated. But do you know what kind of people used to ascend in broad daylight? None of those who ascended in broad daylight left the Three Realms. The reason being, in the eyes of the Gods in the heavens, human flesh bodies are the filthiest and absolutely can’t be brought to the heavens. So no matter how well you cultivated you

couldn't do it. You wouldn't have the kind of purity and sacredness they do in the heavens, and you couldn't reach that state. But what I'm doing today isn't just making changes to your body at the surface, and it's not just about making it truly possible for people in the human world to cultivate into Gods beyond the Three Realms in the future. Rather, it's to harmonize the entire cosmic system. In the past almost nobody was able to cultivate into a God outside of the Three Realms. Like I just said, even though they ascended during broad daylight they were all becoming Gods within the Three Realms. They didn't leave the Three Realms, but they were Gods. Yet what I want to do today and the cultivation method I've conferred to Dafa disciples are to establish in the cosmos an unprecedented, higher wisdom. The goal is to make it possible for beings that drop down in the future to return from here—at the very least they'll have such a chance. This is part of the cosmos being able to harmonize itself. Why do I emphasize this often? Today, the ability of Dafa disciples to get to that final step will create the path for human beings to become Gods. Never before in history has that happened. In the past, those who truly left the Three Realms were all Assistant Spirits. A number of beings within the Three Realms succeeded in cultivation with bodies, and they were all Gods within the Three Realms. But this time, not only will Dafa disciples cultivate their bodies out of the Three Realms, but also I'll have you cultivate to different levels, up to Kings and Lords of extremely high levels. And that's also validating the wisdom of the new cosmos, and it will be one of the forms in which future beings reach the state of harmonizing. So this is no minor thing. The very end of changing the surface body is about reaching the highest purity. Reaching such a high degree is something that's never been done by Gods and no Gods ever dared to think about it, because in the eyes of Gods everything down below is unbearably filthy. This time I've done such a thing. Dafa disciples' Consummation is setting the precedent, and it has created this path for the future. We're saying "create," but in reality the Fa had the wisdom long ago. It's merely being fulfilled now.

Why was it necessary to do it this way? As I just said, it's because the cosmos needed to be harmonized. Actually, there were many, many factors. If this path is blazed one of the biggest problems will be resolved, and that's something no God in the cosmos dared to imagine. Do you know how Gods exist? Those of you who've been to the middle part of the United States may have seen that some of the barren mountains and exposed rocks in the U.S. resemble human beings, particularly those in the South and the Southern part of the middle of the country, and they look a lot like Gods. Some of those rocks resemble Bodhisattvas and Buddhas, and some look like other Gods. Why is it that way? Actually those correspond to Gods—they're the lowest part of Gods. The Gods of the past have a correspondence with the surface planets, and they all have a life-circulation system. The Gods make sure that the rocks don't decay, and the existence of the rocks guarantees the life of the Gods; once the rocks decay, the divine bodies will dissolve, and some Gods would then fall down. That's their relationship. It's in fact controlled by higher Gods. Yet this kind of corresponding is not a particles-forming-particles process in which small particles form big particles, and big particles form a layer of even bigger particles. Rather, the material nature becomes less and less, meaning, the matter fades away more and more until it fades to the standard of a divine body; in fact, the matter also gets lighter and lighter until it gets to the Gods of different levels and the highest Gods. Of course, the more it has faded, the purer it is. I've said before that when Dafa disciples came from Europe to attend a Fa conference by airplane it seemed like they'd traveled quite far, but in the eyes of Gods the particle Earth is like a small grain of sand, so tiny, and the distance you moved is like not moving at all. That's how it is for humans. And Gods in fact have the limits of different Gods. The Gods of the past traveled within their boundaries, and the limits resulted from the correspondence with the rocks on Earth. They couldn't dissociate from, and they couldn't bring with them, the rocks on the surface planets of the cosmos. If they lost that corresponding rock it'd be like they lost their roots and lost what assured their lives, and they would disintegrate and be destroyed. I've never told you this. (*Applause*)

I've revealed this to you today. This means that the problem has been solved. Why did I say that the Gods of the future and the new cosmos of the future are incredibly wonderful? It takes a long lecture on Fa to discuss each and every wonderful thing. As I see it, the Gods of the future will truly be like Gods—they won't need to correspond to the rocks on Earth anymore. And Gods of other systems won't need to correspond to rocks and matter on the surface particles in their own systems. The reason is, in the past, if Gods didn't have the lowest and largest matter to correspond to, they would lose the circulation system of matter, and their lives wouldn't be assured. There was that kind of relationship. Then have you thought about this: rocks are made of molecules, and that's to say, so are human bodies, so when you've succeeded in cultivating the most surface, material body a human has, won't you be bringing with you this fundamental assurance? Wherever you go you won't be limited by that. But you have to achieve the purity and sacredness required by that level. And I can tell you all, during the Fa-rectification I've already turned the worst into the best and most perfect condition. (*Applause*)

Gods of different levels all in fact have their own scope of limits at different levels, the limits of beings at those levels. As far as human beings are concerned, nobody's ever told them what kind of state Gods are in, and that's not allowed. The old cosmos will completely disintegrate and everything will pass. What I talked about all had to do with the past. The future won't be that way, it's really wonderful. The Gods of the future will completely break away from the limitations of the Gods of the past, and they'll become even more wonderful, noble, and God-like. So, rectifying the Fa in the cosmic bodies isn't just about rectifying the order in the cosmos because it's no longer good enough, or rectifying the Fa of the past because it's no longer good enough. It's not limited to that. If it were, then think about it, it actually wouldn't have to be done by me. It was because there were many, many problems that needed to be resolved on a fundamental level that I came. (*Applause*) Like you, no matter what Master says, this surface body of Master's looks the same as yours, here we have a human appearance. But as you know, you're cultivators, so you're fundamentally different from human beings. Of course, there's another difference between you and me, and since I've discussed that with you before I won't talk about it here.

What I'm saying is, during your cultivation you have to seize the day and cultivate yourselves well. No matter how busy you are or how many things you have to do, you can't neglect your own Fa study and cultivation. It's the fundamental guarantee that you'll do well in validating the Fa, and it's also a guarantee that you'll be able to make it to the last step. Many, many things appear ordinary, but infinitely wonderful and magnificent special honors are contained in them. If you can do the three things well then everything is covered, everything is encompassed. There isn't much time left to validate the Fa. Just take a look—the evil is about to fall apart. You folks in the audience have come through from July 20, 1999. You've seen how things were then and now. It doesn't matter how rampant the evil is in some parts of China, it's not the same anymore. And this is true around the world. People are more and more clear about this evil persecution. The world's people are awakening. Changes like this only come about when the evil has been eliminated to that extent. Only when the evil is purged can people awaken. To put it another way, the evil persecution can't hold up anymore, and the time that was given to the evil is running out. If before the enormous force of Fa-rectification arrives the old forces think that they can no longer test the Dafa disciples and establish mighty virtue for this Fa, then the old forces will make them get off the stage of history and enter the gate of no life, and this thing will be over. So you've got to seize the day. During this last period of time before it ends you really don't want to let yourselves down, and you should do the last things well. Now, Master isn't leading you to revolt like those revolutionaries (*people laugh*), Master isn't leading you to take away somebody's political power. Master is leading you to cultivate. (*Applause*) What you expose is the evil, the evilness of that scoundrel regime, and the purpose is to restrain the evil, to eliminate the evil, and to eliminate the persecution of Dafa disciples and Dafa (*Applause*). It isn't about getting some ordinary people's things

out in the ordinary world. So when you do things you have to do them from the standpoint of a Dafa disciple. You need to have ordinary people understand the things you do, and you don't want to make ordinary people think we're after some ordinary thing—absolutely not! Of course, as of today that which doesn't understand is just the human surface—the people of the world actually do know. And why do I say they do know? Because every being has a side that knows; he knows what Dafa is all about. Things were how they were a while ago because evil elements separated the human surface from the side of people that knows, and they manipulated the human surface that doesn't know. Now those elements are being gradually cleared away, more and more of them are being eliminated, what's left is becoming less and less, and the world's people are becoming ever more awake.

You must have seen the epidemic that's come along in China now, right? Hasn't a huge epidemic arrived? To put it in human terms, it's Heaven punishing people. What it's targeting, we Dafa disciples know full well: it's targeting those who don't deserve to be saved, who are impossible to save while Dafa disciples clarify the truth, and who aren't useful to the evil rotten spirits. This is the first round of cleansing. Heaven is punishing the evil, yet China is still lying to cover up the number of deaths, and I'll tell you, it's huge, and it hasn't peaked yet. People find it scary, but in fact, the truly horrible thing hasn't begun yet. This isn't the real, big cleansing when the Fa starts to rectify the human world. It'll be even more horrifying when that big cleansing arrives, and it'll target the entire world. When the vicious people go crazy they don't fear anything, but, when the calamity really descends on them they'll be stunned. Wait and see, this is going to be an eventful year. A lot is going to happen.

A lot of students rushed over from other regions. They might have a lot of things they want to ask me. I won't talk for too long, as I don't want to take too much of your time. If you feel there are questions you have to ask Master you can write them on slips of paper and pass them up here, and I'll answer them for you. (*Long applause*)

I'll talk to you about something in passing. Master is treating sentient beings with the greatest compassion, and this is the case in every situation. At every Dafa conference, as long as I attended, I've always referred to you as Dafa disciples. All of the students that have seen me in a public setting, I've always referred to you as Dafa disciples. (*Applause*) But a number of you didn't form karmic relationships with me in the course of history; you entered during the spreading of Dafa this time, and relatively speaking you have more tribulations. There are students like this in Mainland China and overseas, too, and the tribulations manifest differently for you. However, the pressure on removing human attachments and on your mind is by no means light. But regardless of your situation, Master will definitely treat you equally. As long as you're counted among the disciples of Dafa, Master will treat you as a Dafa disciple and guide you. (*Applause*) But, you have to do well yourselves. (*Applause*) It looks to me like the persecution and your validating the Fa amidst it have come to the latter stages. Time is running out, and those of you who haven't done well should think about it—you should really take a hard look at yourselves. This is the first time I've warned Dafa disciples this way. (*Applause*) Whether you can Consummate is up to you.

There are some people who are still doing some shameful and filthy things, things that are a disservice to Dafa, and things undeserving of the title of Dafa disciple. I haven't treated you differently. In the end, when you can't progress to Consummation, you yourself will have to bear the responsibility! Master isn't trying to scare anyone. Whoever misses out on this historic opportunity, whoever misses out on this chance, when you realize what you've missed out on you won't even want to live even if you are allowed to! Don't think that since Master is always merciful you can take Master's mercy for granted! There are standards for Dafa disciples, and the Fa has standards. It's not like everyone can just goof around together and pass muster. Every person's spirit is being hit upon, every person is genuinely cultivating himself, and every person is thinking about how to be responsible

to his own existence! Why are some of you not able to do this?! Looking at you, Master is so worried! Looking at you, Master is so worried! Master's words today might have been harsh, but maybe it wouldn't work if I didn't use a heavy hammer. If I'm not able to save you it will be my greatest regret. It would be great if you could be as worried as I am.

All right, I'll answer your questions now. (*Applause*)

Question: All of the Jinan Dafa disciples pass on their greetings to Master.

Teacher: Thank you. (*Applause*)

Question: Austrian Dafa disciples send Master their greetings. Dafa disciples from Urumqi, Xinjiang, send their greetings to Master.

Teacher: Thank you. (*Applause*)

Question: Whenever some calamities befell human beings, such as "9-11," the current SARS virus, and the mad persecution against Dafa disciples, or for instance the massive arrest of Dafa disciples on Tiananmen Square on October 1, 2000, my body would suddenly experience strong karma-elimination reactions. But they quickly passed. Was I enduring karma for ordinary people or were there other reasons?

Teacher: Each and every one of you is in the process of cultivating, so there's really no such thing as your bearing things for others. Maybe the old forces happened to create a situation at those times. The old forces made meticulous arrangements in the past. It's hard for you even just to bear what's your own [karma], not to mention things for others (*laughs*). But, this doesn't rule out cases where you fail to pass tests well or where you have attachments or do something wrong but haven't realized it and the old forces or evil beings interfere and cause discomfort in your body. Earlier on those kinds of things happened a lot.

Question: In the solemn and tragic long process of history, why did most of the people play roles that they didn't want?

Teacher: This is simple. It was just as if everybody were acting, and the old forces absolutely would not let you act it out according to your own will. They definitely arranged everything about it, as if there were a script. In other words, in different historic periods what kind of state this drama would reach, what human beings would have, and what would happen after a period of history was over, all the way till obtaining the Fa in the end and how it would assist in obtaining the Fa—that's how they arranged things, and that's why a lot of things didn't turn out the way you hoped.

Question: Why had the idea of "formation-stasis-degeneration-destruction" been around for so long before "harmonization without destruction" was thought of?

Teacher: You're thinking about all this as a human. How do you know that it took "so long"? Different times exist in different levels of the cosmos, and this results in different lengths of time for the beings that are constrained by times at different levels. Ultimately how long [in terms of time] is the universe? To you it looks like I've been doing Fa-rectification for so long, but actually it's been just an instant. During this instant, in some places a dozen years or several decades have passed, in some places it's almost concurrent, and in some places tens of millions of years or hundreds of millions of years have passed, and all of that is caused by the times defined for beings in different dimensions. You can't think about things in terms of human time.

Question: Master, please shed light on two questions I have. What's the difference between a cultivator's looking inward and an ordinary person's self-examining?

Teacher: I think this question is... (*people laugh*) You all know what I want to say, but I'll still say it: it seems like it was raised by someone who's just started. When you cultivate in Dafa, and when every disciple clarifies the facts among ordinary people, in what way does it look different from ordinary people going about their business? You're all cultivators now, and how are cultivators different from ordinary people? You eat, and ordinary people do too, right? The fundamental nature is different, the ultimate goal and basis are different, the goal in life that you're trying to achieve is different, and the fundamental changes in the bodies are different. While the human race pursues things it constantly accumulates karma; while Dafa disciples continually cultivate they eliminate their karma and constantly transform their bodies into divine bodies. Could these be the same? Maybe they look the same. (*Applause*)

Question: When discussing China's dynasties and reincarnation, Master mentioned that the United States is from the Great Qing Dynasty, (Teacher: I didn't say the United States came from the Great Qing, did I?) (People laugh) Australia is from the Xia Dynasty, but France is a country with a long history. So, is this a misprint or is there some other inner meaning?

Teacher: Alas, (*people laugh*) since you call me Master, I'll answer it for you. (*People laugh, applaud*) Actually, I didn't say that the United States was the Great Qing. What I said was the United States is the Great Ming (*people laugh*)—France is the Qing. Of course, this is speaking in general, broad terms. It doesn't apply to every single person in those nations, because in the past there was a large number of people who came and reincarnated on their own, and that happened in different regions. France is a country with several hundred years of history, and it's the country that has best preserved the fine arts of this human civilization. There wasn't any misprint in the book.

Question: I obtained the Fa after "7.20." When the phenomenon of sickness karma occurs, if I regard it as sickness karma and acknowledge it, would I be acknowledging the old forces' arrangements? Should I send righteous thoughts?

Teacher: I've talked about this in *Zhuan Falun*. Eliminating karma doesn't simply involve eliminating karma. Although you're cultivating now, you can't think like "I won't pay off any more karma, I'll just eliminate all of it and I'm done." You can't do that. You created karma by doing bad things in your past. Only when you've done bad things in the ordinary society do you generate karma. You can't not pay off the debt you owe. That's why you suffer when you pay off your karma cultivating. If you didn't suffer you wouldn't feel anything when the karma was removed, it'd be just a nice cool breeze. You know, when you were in the seminars back in the old days—some of you attended seminars held by Master—when Master waved his hand, and when you walked out of the class without any health problems, you felt light all over, your whole body was light as a feather, and the feeling of being sick was gone, wasn't it like that? (*Applause*) But you can't ask Master to endure it all for you, so you have to cultivate yourselves. [Otherwise,] when you really got to a high realm, Gods would take a look and say, "All of your karma was taken away? You didn't cultivate your way up here? Can we allow this? No." When you're eliminating karma it *is* painful, and that's why you can improve. That's how things are.

As to whether there are old forces interfering, when you're changing your own most surface bodies there *is* a portion that you need to endure yourselves. But relatively speaking it isn't much, and it won't have too much of an impact on validating the Fa. When big hardships come along, that has to be the evil interfering, and you have to send righteous thoughts to eliminate it! Today what Dafa disciples are doing are things that validate the Fa, and they're the most sacred and most magnificent things. If you're doing Dafa things and something happens during a critical time for saving sentient beings, then it must be interference. You need to evaluate it rationally. Don't be attached and think, "Whenever I suffer or don't feel well, it must be interference. I can't accept it if I'm suffering or don't

feel well. I have to send righteous thoughts.” Of course, it’s okay for you to send righteous thoughts. The *gong* you send out takes care of the things it’s supposed to take care of, and when it comes to things it’s not supposed to take care of the *gong* will act according to the Fa, because that *gong* was cultivated by your cultivating according to the Fa’s standard. (*People laugh*) So what I think is, you should do things rationally.

Question: Do karmic relationships exist between the master souls and subordinate souls?

Teacher: Some have karmic relationships, some don’t. I’m only talking about ordinary people, not Dafa disciples. With the world’s people, I often find that a person was so-and-so in history, but then at a different place I’d discover that another person was also so-and-so in history. Even in the U.S., so far away and separated by the ocean, I still find this phenomenon. Why? This means that people have master souls, subordinate souls, and other elements. I’ve also said that people also have elements of the human flesh body. So it’s possible for several persons living at the same time in the world to have been the same person in history. There are a lot of phenomena like this.

Question: Dafa disciples from Harbin send greetings to esteemed Master.

Teacher: Thank you all. (*Applause*)

Question: No matter how harsh and perilous the environment or how rampant the evil, we will for sure follow Master and walk our final path well. Master, please rest assured.

Teacher: Thank you. (*Applause*) I believe it, I now truly believe it. When the evil persecution first began around July 20, 1999, I could only watch and see whether you could make it (*laughs*). Do you remember something I said in the past, before July 20, 1999? I said that even if I could successfully save just one person, my things wouldn’t be done in vain. (*Applause*) I’ll tell you, at that time I wasn’t sure in my mind—I didn’t know if you would be able to come through at truly critical moments. Of course, if there really was only one person who succeeded in cultivation I would make him the cosmos, and he’d have everything. (*Applause*) Of course, (*laughing*) now there’s not just one person. It’s just like what you’ve seen. Now I truly believe it. Dafa disciples’ righteous thoughts can’t be undermined by anyone. Success is a question of Dafa disciples’ accomplishment during the Fa-rectification period, and it’s a question of whether those people in the world with karmic relationships can be saved, whereas the Fa-rectification in the cosmic body is bound to succeed.

Question: On behalf of Beijing Dafa disciples, I pass on greetings to Master.

Teacher: Thank you. (*Applause*)

Question: I have another question, which is about whether a certain individual is a spy or was brainwashed. Can we ask Master such questions?

Teacher: Here’s how I look at it. Whether someone is brainwashed or not is just a human thing. What I look at is a being’s fundamentals. Everyone who doesn’t walk his path well will stain his own history and bring irreparable damage and loss to his own future. But, in order to save sentient beings Master offers the grandest compassion. Like I’ve said in my past lectures, I don’t care whether you’re a spy or what kind of work you do, I treat you as a human being. You’re all human beings first—it’s just that your line of work is different. Don’t miss this extremely rare opportunity just because your line of work is different. Be responsible to your own being. I can’t deny you salvation just because your line of work is different. But, on the other hand, I can’t have you Consummate and stay on in the future just because your work is special even when you’ve done things that damage Dafa, or when you’ve done disservice to Dafa and Dafa disciples. That’s how it works. Of course, there are still chances since the persecution hasn’t ended, but time is running out fast. What to do and how to make amends is up to you. Seize the day!

Question: Some people can't give up Dafa, but also can't let go of their humanness. On the surface they are cultivating and doing some Fa-rectification things, but they are in fact stirring up trouble and creating disturbances, with some even committing suicide or being gay. What will become of these people? Will they go to the dimension of demons? And what will happen to those who stick up for them?

Teacher: I know about all of that. Unless I have absolutely no choice I don't want to expel them, so I'm observing and watching these things. It's best that these people, if they want to do themselves justice, wake up quickly—wake up quickly! If you're determined to do that, then tell Dafa disciples about the things you've done, and that could help. Time is running short. I'm really worried about you. Don't take Master's mercy so lightly. The Fa has standards.

Question: How can we better help our fellow cultivators so that we can improve as a whole?

Teacher: Actually, when it comes to these specific things you still need to do them yourselves. Mighty virtue is to be established by you yourselves, and the path of cultivation has to be walked by you yourselves. If I were to tell you how to do every little thing you'd lose the opportunity to establish mighty virtue. On this path of Fa-rectification, and on this path of cultivation, there are bound to be tribulations, there are bound to be all kinds of disagreements, and there are bound to be the type of people just mentioned by that student. It's because the old forces think, "If your Dafa disciples are so pure and have no interference, then how are they going to get rid of some of their bad thoughts? How can you prove that your Dafa has emerged from such a complicated environment and established mighty virtue?" That's why they wanted to do that and why they arranged for there to be some people and for some things to happen—it was the old forces that wanted to do those things. I don't acknowledge any of it. So why don't I get rid of those people, then? As I just said, I have the greatest compassion toward them, I'm waiting for them to change themselves, and I'm waiting for they themselves to not lose out on this opportunity. That's what I think about it. *(Applause)*

Question: How can we better improve as a whole and elevate as a whole?

Teacher: If you cooperate with each other well then you can do it. Everyone's realm is different, and I'm telling you now, Master has seen that some of the disparities among students have increased. It wasn't apparent before, but now they've increased, and the more it's toward the end the bigger the disparities. So there are bound to be differences in people's understandings. The key is how to cooperate better and coordinate better with one other.

Question: What's Latin America's role in the Fa-rectification? How should we do better in Latin America?

Teacher: The students in some regions are affected by their environments, their immigration status, and even their financial situations, and that makes validating the Fa really tough for them. Master knows about all that. But no matter what, you are the hope for the beings there! In the future you'll see this. *(Applause)* If an ethnic group or a country doesn't have Dafa disciples right now, it will bring them a ton of difficulty—and that's at a very minimum. So no matter how few Dafa disciples there are in a certain place, *that* is hope for that ethnic group.

One time a student asked me what "Buddha's infinite grace" means. How could human beings understand it? They say that Buddha having grand mercy and saving people from suffering and hardship is "Buddha's infinite grace"—that's how shallow people's understanding is. Think about it, no matter where you are, no matter which ethnic group, which region, or which country you're in, on the surface you're an average, ordinary person, and you're just another being, but in reality, there are always people who have karmic relationships with you. Not only that, as I've told you many times

before, particles at the infinitely microcosmic levels form particles at the next level up, and the particles at the next level up form particles at the next higher level, continually forming larger particles like that. And in each layer of particles there's an infinite number of beings. If you magnify a small particle you'll see that there are, just like on Earth and the planets, countless beings on it. Think about it, how many particles make up a human body? And these are just things within your own scope. A human being is also a being that exists in the scope of this environment, just like a sponge being soaked in water. This world is like water, and the microcosmic beings and matter are so numerous that the density is like that of water. Wherever you are, within your scope there are pretty huge, gigantic microcosmic beings that correspond to your body. So when a person cultivates, you haven't just cultivated the layers upon layers of your own body, the cells of the layers upon layers of your particles are all in your image. And have you thought about this: after you magnify a cell of a particle, aren't there still countless beings on it? And could there be beings that are in the image of man? So how many cells like that are there? Actually, to microcosmic beings your cell is their planet. And it's not just cells—how many microcosmic particles make up a cell? A cell or a microcosmic particle in your image is the King of all beings in that particle, and all the countless beings in there are governed by it. If you don't cultivate yourself well your cells won't be well-cultivated; if you have cultivated yourself well your cells are well-cultivated, and the beings in the domain of your cells' jurisdiction are well-cultivated. Then think about it, when one being succeeds in cultivation, how many beings are successfully cultivated as a result?

In the eyes of Gods, it's not that large beings are precious and small beings aren't. You know, there are Buddhas even in worlds that are so tiny that they're considerably microcosmic. A being's size doesn't matter—it makes no difference, and there's no difference in structure. It's just that the particles that compose them determine the size of their bodies. Beings are equal. Think about it, if one person is saved and succeeds in cultivation, how many measureless, countless beings will be successfully cultivated and saved? But during the process of cultivating successfully, it takes so much wisdom and so much thinking and care to reconcile every single being that's in the groups of beings in the countless microcosms and macrocosms! It's just like with saving you: their issues have to be resolved just the same. What does "Buddha's infinite grace" mean? Think about it, when a person is being saved, how much will the Buddha who saves him have to give? For all those beings in the infinite microcosms who correspond to the person, he has to—just like what's done during your cultivation process—adjust their bodies well at the beginning, allow them to obtain the Fa, make them able to handle it, and deal with their karma. What a huge, involved task that is! Could that possibly be achieved without compassion? So how could everyday people understand the phrase "Buddha's infinite grace"? Think about it, when one person succeeds in cultivation it means that a gigantic, immense system is successfully cultivated. I said earlier, and it sounded like I was kidding, that if only one person succeeded in cultivation, then I would have that person become the cosmos. No matter how big his cosmic body was, I would have all the structures of the cosmos exist within the scope of his body. Having said that, don't dwell on it. Master is able to do that—that's the idea. So as Dafa disciples, no matter where you are, you are bringing boundless blessings to the beings there, and you are laying for them a foundation for the future, a foundation to be saved in the future. That's how it is. (*Applause*)

Question: Could Master please talk about how, in the Fa-rectification period, Dafa disciples can walk a righteous path in terms of spending money and using material things?

Teacher: Yes, in the Fa-rectification period there's been a special change in the situation. A line has already been drawn for the part of your history when you did personal cultivation. During that period it was just cultivation, and everyone has to do it that way. But today's situation in society is different from that before. As you've seen, today's science has brought about a lot of modern transportation vehicles and mass media outlets. So think about it, with these mass media outlets, in

particular, when one person speaks at one place, people around the world can immediately know about it, hear it, and see it at the same time. The influence is significant. From the old forces' perspective, the evil beings are using these things to carry out the persecution and to lie. When Dafa disciples only rely on their mouths to talk to people sometimes they feel that it's hard to save more people. Of course, one of you is a match for ten or a hundred people. But after all, you're exposing the lies and the evil that were produced by all of a country's propaganda machines—it's still pretty hard. So when you make use of these everyday people's media tools to validate the Fa, expose the evil, and save sentient beings, it's not wrong in principle. Since today's science has already brought about a special society like this, while validating the Fa you need some financial resources to do those things. But despite that, as of this day, when all of this is about to end, we haven't received a single penny from any country, any government, any organization, or any company. Everything we've done has been funded by Dafa disciples' using their own salaries, incomes, and earnings.

The old forces are restraining people, and they think that only by doing things this way are you remarkable: "You're able to validate the Fa under such difficult circumstances, that's remarkable, and you've established mighty virtue." So the old forces are maliciously interfering with my Fa-rectification, interfering with Dafa disciples' validating the Fa, and they've affected people's support of Dafa and tenaciously blocked off sources of funding in society. In validating the Fa Dafa disciples have always had financial difficulties. Some students even have a hard time making ends meet. Under these circumstances you are validating the Fa and doing what Dafa disciples should do, and that's of course remarkable. But I don't acknowledge the old forces' arrangements. This is such a serious matter—Fa-rectification is taking place in the entire cosmos, and the future of the new cosmos is being created! The Fa has long existed, and I've come with this all-encompassing and all-harmonizing Dafa. I don't need the layers and layers of beings to lay any foundation for the Fa, and I don't need the layers and layers of beings or everyday people to give something to Dafa. Those are concepts and factors the old forces formed in history, they're using those truths of the old Fa of those periods of degeneration and destruction to interfere with Fa-rectification, and the effect of everything they've done has been damaging.

With that said, I'm telling you that you still can't collect money from students who depend on their salaries to get by. The principle is that we can't collect money from students, and I've said this long ago. Among Dafa disciples there are those who run their own businesses and who have a little more money, and if they would like to contribute money to do some things, that's alright, but be careful with how far it goes. When our ordinary students use their own incomes to do things while validating the Fa, that's no problem in principle, and there's nothing wrong with it, because using your own income to validate the Fa and save sentient beings is your mighty virtue. When Dafa disciples do some things together in special situations, like for example, say some of you want to start a media company or what not, and you pool some money together to do that, there's nothing wrong with that in principle, either, because it's not Dafa that is doing something, it's Dafa disciples on their own who are starting a company in society, and that's a type of work in society; it's Dafa disciples who are initiating things themselves and organizing to do it, and it's not Dafa itself that's doing that. Of course, Dafa disciples are creating favorable conditions for clarifying the facts. But even so, I'm telling you, you can't just arbitrarily collect money from our typical students. That's set in stone. Then as for the cases where somebody who's more affluent and whose daily life won't be affected contributes some money to do Dafa things, that's excluded from the situation I talked about since those are isolated cases, after all. I've never told you to collect some "membership dues" or to beg for alms like religions do. You can't do any of those things.

Question: With regard to the cultivation of kindness (Shan), I think that our inability to do many things well is due to our insufficient cultivation of kindness.

Teacher: It should be put this way: when it comes to the world's people, we should try our best to save them and we should be kind to them. Not only should we be kind, we should also save sentient beings with compassion. In this persecution those who've been harmed the most are in fact the world's people. Actually, those evil beings want to use this persecution to destroy the lives of the future people. So we should be compassionate to the world's people, tell them the facts and save them, and not let them get weeded out the moment when the Fa rectifies the human world.

But when you're sending righteous thoughts, the vast majority of those that you're handling are the worst beings in each dimension, including the unsalvageable, wicked policemen of this world. So when it comes to those ones, especially those messed up beings in other dimensions that are harming the human race, I think we can't be lenient and don't need to be kind to them. But we don't want to be bad toward them either, and even less so should we use wickedness to subdue the wicked. Those that harm the world's people, harm sentient beings, and interfere with Dafa just can't exist anymore, and we just have to erect our palms and get rid of them. Of course, as Dafa disciples, you cultivate kindness, and you don't have a vicious or wicked side. But when it comes to something that should be eliminated, you just have to eliminate it. No need to be angry, either—you don't need to be mean toward them or mad at them. We stay compassionate and send righteous thoughts to purge those that shouldn't exist. That's how it should be.

Question: We're from Canada. Our lawsuit has lasted for two years now, and it's progressing too slowly. Is it because we have done poorly?

Teacher: You've done pretty well. I often say that we don't seek to gain any worldly things, right? When it comes to doing things, I consider the process most important, because during the process you can have people see the truth, during the process you can save the world's people, and during the process you can reveal the truth. Even if you eventually get them sentenced and stuff them into jails, you still need to see whether you've achieved the best effect in saving the world's people and exposing the evil, and whether you've allowed people to see the consequences of doing evil and have thereby shocked and frightened the evil beings. Of course, if they're found guilty by ordinary people then it proves to the world's people that we're right. And of course that's great. If you achieve that effect that's even better, Master agrees. But you often emphasize the results instead of fully explaining to them the facts that you should explain during that process. Only when all people know the truth that they should know are you really validating the Fa and clarifying the facts. Wherever a problem surfaces, go tell people the facts, and you shouldn't be doing it just to push the lawsuit forward but to tell them the facts. And if the lawsuit is stuck somewhere, then that must be where it needs you to clarify the facts, and then maybe the lawsuit will naturally go forward. If during the process everyone comes to realize the truth and the world's people are saved, and even *those* people have learned the consequences of being used and the evil nature of the ones that used them, and they're willing to admit their wrongdoing, then I think it's good even if we don't pursue the lawsuit any further—it's not that we have to punish them to some degree. If they come to realize their wrongdoing and make up for it, and the world's people know about it, then that's good enough. But that said, even though the main goal Dafa disciples have is to save the world's people, when it comes to those very evil ones you really can't let them off. I was talking about it from the angle of having compassion and saving sentient beings. The key is to stress doing well with what you should do during the process, and the result will be whatever it will be.

Question: I have been interfered with by illness karma for a long time, particularly when I meditate and send righteous thoughts—when I'm concentrating—it gets especially severe. Sometimes I have difficulty breathing or have pain.

Teacher: When teaching the Fa, Master can't direct it at an individual, and my words won't be

entirely directed at your case. Some of our students have indeed experienced situations that aren't right. But I'll tell you, in most cases it can be attributed to two reasons. One has to do with new students: your cultivation process is merged with your Fa-validation process, and in order for you to catch up, your personal cultivation accompanies your validating the Fa, and both of them progress simultaneously. The other reason is that you're being interfered with. When you're interfered with you can't always think, "I have to destroy whoever is interfering with me, no one can interfere with me." (*People laugh*) Why don't you stop and think about it: Why is someone interfering with you? Why is it able to interfere with you? Is it because *you* have an attachment, or because *you* have something you can't let go of? Why don't you look at yourself? The true reason lies with you yourself, and that's the only reason it can exploit your gap! Don't you have Master watching over you? Even when an ordinary person shouts out "Falun Dafa is good" today, Master will protect him, since he's shouted those words I can't not protect him amidst the evil. And how much more so am I protecting you cultivators! In some isolated cases some students really did come down with an incurable disease. But think about it, so many people who had severe health problems or incurable diseases before they learned the Fa became well after learning Dafa, so why is it that some students on the other hand can't make things work? Is it that Dafa makes distinctions among sentient beings? Is it that I, your Master, treat students differently? I really have to ask you: Are you truly cultivating? Have you truly followed Dafa's requirements? Are you clarifying the facts with the human mindset of disagreeing with the persecution of Falun Gong, or are you validating the Fa and saving sentient beings truly from the standpoint of a Dafa disciple? Yes, the old forces have arranged for some people to get in, but why is it that most people can handle things now but you can't? Haven't I taught the Fa to you?!

When problems arise, when something doesn't feel right, you have to look at yourself! Look at where you were wrong and allowed the evil to exploit your gaps. If you were wrong you should recognize it and do better. Don't forget, you are all Fa-rectification period Dafa disciples! You came to validate the Fa! Cultivation is hard, and the evil is more evil while you are validating Dafa. Those who can make it through are bound to be Kings of sentient beings.

Question: During the first five minutes of sending righteous thoughts, could we do the purging with the formula Master taught us?

Teacher: When you send righteous thoughts you shouldn't keep reciting the formula. You just need to recite it once and it'll work, except for in special circumstances. If you feel that you can't become tranquil and you readjust your righteous thoughts, that's okay, but still it's just for that moment. Actually, when you can truly be tranquil, one thought is more than enough to shake Heaven and Earth, there's nothing that it can't do, and it's as if it immediately immobilizes and restrains everything covered by your domain; you're like a mountain, and you instantly restrain them. You shouldn't always have an unsteady mind. You can't achieve that when your mind is unsteady.

Question: Could we blend scriptures such as "When the Fa is Right" and "Tathagata" with some relevant FGM television programs and broadcast them to everyday people?

Teacher: I don't think there'll be any problem. My books are being sold in public. There shouldn't be any problem. As far as how to do those things specifically, how much you should broadcast, or how much you should do, those are all things that you should manage. Master can only say that it's not a problem. But don't take a few words from Master and force it upon students who have a different opinion from you—"Master said that, so we have to do it in such and such way." No, you can't do that. Since you're working as part of the media, you should think about how to manage things well, and cooperate and work together to adjust things well.

Question: One day when I was giving out truth-clarifying materials, a man in a tour group from

Beijing asked me to send his greetings to you for him when I see you. I'd also like to convey greetings to you, Master, on behalf of the Dafa disciples in Nongan, Changchun.

Teacher: Thank you all. (*Applause*) More and more people are aware of the truth now, and that's why that happened. Back when I was in Beijing people all over Beijing knew about me—whether they cultivated or not they all knew about a Master Li (*[Master] laughs*). Even though the persecution has been severe, people are aware. While clarifying the facts, students have allowed people who didn't know much about Dafa to become aware of the truth, and students both inside and outside of China have done this. This has made people see more clearly the evil nature of the persecution, and it has led the world's people to develop an admiration of Dafa and a respect for Dafa disciples. That's inevitable.

Question: A number of students have devoted themselves entirely in the Fa-rectification. They neglect eating and sleeping, and rarely do the exercises. As a result, some students who aren't very busy don't do the exercises either. Doing the exercises doesn't appear to be very important to them.

Teacher: All of you sitting here, listen up. Did you all hear that? You must do well the three things that Dafa disciples should do well. You need to do the exercises. As long as the day of Consummation hasn't arrived you need to do the exercises, you need to study the Fa, and you need to do the Dafa disciples' three things. Definitely.

Question: Could we print and publish your poems for young children? And could we use students' drawings as pictures inside?

Teacher: It's fine to give them to children to read. If the student is a professional artist there shouldn't be any problem. If the drawings are done by everyday people, though, then Dafa disciples have to be the gatekeepers. Yes, you folks sitting here, I do call each of you "Dafa disciple," but how [some of] you have acted really doesn't make you look like a Dafa disciple, so if you're asked to be the gatekeeper that's really a tough thing. (*People laugh*) I'd say let's still have the local Dafa Associations be the gatekeepers with those things.

Question: In clarifying the facts I often feel that I lack wisdom. Is it because my cultivation state isn't good enough?

Teacher: When you lack wisdom it's usually caused by your being anxious, being anxious in your mind to do something, giving it too much importance, and thereby developing a different type of attachment. Actually, with a lot of things if you calmly and gently talk to people and handle those things rationally, you'll find that your wisdom will flow forth like a spring, and every sentence of yours will get right to the point, and every sentence will speak the truth. As soon as you become attached or anxious, though, or have some strong intention, your wisdom is gone, and that's because at that time you've come over to the human side again, right? You should try your best to use righteous thoughts and try your best to be in the state of a cultivator, and the results will be excellent.

Actually, it's the same when you do other things. With righteous thoughts your mind isn't limited, your thinking will be vast and broad, and your wisdom won't be restricted.

Question: You mentioned earlier that this will be an eventful year. Should our media increase its vigor and do better in helping to clarify the facts?

Teacher: Yes, this persecution is founded on lies. Right now, with that big epidemic in China, they want to cover it up with lies, and the world's people have seen this. So you can expose the lies; persecuting Falun Gong is done in the same way.

Question: During the Hong Kong Fa Conference in February this year, more than seventy Taiwan students were sent back by the Hong Kong government. Taiwan and Hong Kong students are

going through legal channels and suing the Hong Kong government for violating the law. Master, how could we do better in this?

Teacher: Actually, this incident itself has already caused quite a stir in the world. It should be said that you've done well. As far as how you should do it specifically, well, since you've sued them in court, then you should do it with all seriousness. Wherever a problem arises, that's where you need to clarify the facts. No matter what the end result will be, through doing this you will have chances to interact with more people and you'll clarify the facts on a large scale. Under normal circumstances you don't have the opportunity—if you just pull someone over to tell them the facts you might feel a bit awkward, right? Now that you have something to do, go and tell people.

Don't be afraid that the consulates or the special agents will stir up trouble. As soon as they do that you should use the opportunity to let more people know about the truth. *(Strong applause)* Actually, you're Dafa disciples, so hey, their plots are playing right into your hands! *(People laugh)* When they stir up trouble you'll have an opportunity to clarify the facts and expose the evil, right? "As soon as you evil beings come near, I'll grab you and I'll let the world's people know"—that's the perfect time to expose them.

Question: How can we improve our clarifying the facts to the governments and media in Europe?

Teacher: Right now Europe already has a pretty clear understanding of this persecution. It's just that there's one reason [they're held back]. What is it? The Chinese government made an agreement with many Western countries after the "June 4th" [Tiananmen Square] incident, namely, "You can criticize my human rights problems, but don't do it publicly. We can talk about it in private." They reached that kind of agreement with many countries. Many European countries have indeed talked to them about the Falun Gong issue, but the world's people don't know. And without pressure from the international community the wicked regime doesn't care. So in the absence of pressure from public opinion, the persecution of Falun Gong has gotten even more rampant and out of control. So the world's people don't know the evilness of the persecution, and some countries' governments intentionally hold back the media from reporting it. And yet their closed-door talks have been a total failure—they're absolutely useless. They've been fooled by the evil regime, and they've fallen right into the trap. That is the most wicked scoundrel gang there's ever been in history, and it absolutely cannot be trusted. I think the world's people should see this clearly now, and they should know what's been happening. Gods won't just turn a blind eye to what humans do.

Question: How can we make the PureInsight website better in this period?

Teacher: *(Laughs)* As far as how you should specifically do something, that's actually up to you. When you're able to correctly approach what you do your wisdom will be brought into full play. Those of you students who are involved in the PureInsight website work are walking your own path, too. I don't get involved in any specific matters, and my not talking about things directly is to leave you with an opportunity to establish your own mighty virtue in the process of validating the Fa. If I were to rush to tell you it all, you'd lose your opportunities. The more difficult something is, the more mighty virtue is established. Of course, when you really have problems that you can't resolve or when you really can't do well, then I'll say something. But right now that's not the case. There have definitely been achievements, and it should be said that you're running it better and better.

Question: Could you enlighten us as to how much effort we should spend on the U.S. State Department's position toward that head of the evil in China?

Teacher: These, too, are among the things Dafa disciples do to validate the Fa. When it comes

to how certain things need to be done, I'll tell you in special situations. Actually, suing it in the US court system is no longer something that makes the US seem isolated internationally. Hasn't a lawsuit been filed in Europe as well? Also, hasn't the head of the "610 office" been sued in France? And besides, it is no longer a head of state, so it no longer has the immunity granted to a head of state. Our students have said it pretty well: the US's relationship with China does not equate to its relationship with *it*. I think that was said very well.

Question: Hong Kong is facing a series of issues, from Article 23 to the epidemic. The students have some questions. Would you please tell us what we should do to better fulfill our historic mission as Dafa disciples?

Teacher: ([Master] Laughs) If you really need to talk to me about specific matters, then find a time to tell me about them in detail. Let's not talk about them here.

Question: Greetings to Master from Dafa disciples on Qinhuang Island, Shanhaiguan, Dandong, Nanchang, and Dalian.

Teacher: Thank you all. (Applause)

Question: Venerable Master, would you please say a few more words to the Dafa disciples in Australia?

Teacher: Supposedly, after I talked to the Australian students last year, the changes in Australia should have been big, but I don't think it's been enough. Before it was supposed to be in this order: they do very well here in the US, with Canada being next, then Australia, and then Europe. Now I think that in some regards Europe has surpassed Australia. But Master isn't criticizing you—since you asked me to say something, (*people laugh*) then I'd say that you should do even better, really. Problems still come up from time to time. Wherever you run into difficulties you can't avoid them and go around them. Wherever there's a problem, that's where you need to go resolve things and where you need to go clarify the facts. You must remember this! Once a problem comes up somewhere, that's where you need to go clarify the facts. Don't avoid it, no matter how evil it comes across.

Question: It appears that there's quite a large gap between the understandings of the Fa at different levels by students in different regions.

Teacher: Maybe that's how it is. Since the environments and the number of students are different, it might have a certain impact on the students' sharing experiences and Fa-study. I can only put it that way. But I think that as long as you seriously read the book and seriously learn it, when you don't understand something Master's Law Bodies will give you hints and have you understand. But there's one thing: when you study the Fa, don't do it while holding on to some attachments. You have to calm your mind and be truly studying the Fa. Don't study with some purpose in mind. When you study the Fa, you can't let your mind wander or think about other things while studying the Fa. You can't do that or you'll learn nothing. When you study the Fa, just study the Fa. No interference should be able to affect your Fa-study.

Question: The evil beings don't allow the students in Mainland China who have been sentenced or kept in labor camps to study the Fa or do the exercises. In other words, they don't have the conditions to practice cultivation. How can they reach Consummation?

Teacher: I often see students like this: "You don't let me do the exercises, but I insist on doing them. You don't let me study, but I insist on studying. I just won't listen to you evil beings. All you can do is threaten me with death, right?" Of course, Master has said that here to you, who are cultivators. But even so, Master doesn't want to say it, because if everyday people hear it they won't be able to understand. What I'm telling you is that when you're truly able to let go of the thought of life or death

you can do anything! (*Applause*)

In Gods' eyes the same is true with the old forces' arrangements. If you hold on to humanness with one hand and won't let go, and you hold on to Buddhahood with the other hand and won't let go, just which one exactly do you want? When you can truly let go the situation will definitely be different. The students in regions that have been severely persecuted, or in places that have been seriously damaged, should really think about it: what's really going on? Some students said that the persecution has lasted so long and even those who performed well before are falling short now. I don't think that's true. True gold has revealed itself more and more, isn't that the case? If you're truly able to let go of the thought of death, and have no attachments at all, would the question of falling short still exist? Would the question of reforming you still exist? And would the question of having you do such and such still exist? If all the hundreds of or all the thousand people held in a labor camp can do that, see if the labor camp still dares to keep you! Although this is what we say, it seems easy to say while not in that environment. That's why Master doesn't want to talk about the things over there while teaching the Fa here. It *is* hard over there. But no matter how hard it is, have you thought about what your future will be? Have you thought of the fact that your future Attainment Status needs to be founded upon magnificent mighty virtue? Have you thought about the fact that what you'll get is the True Fruition of a God or Buddha who's validated the Fa? Have you truly and completely let go of humanness because of this? Are you truly unshakable and solid, like diamond, and without attachment and omission?! When things are truly like that, then you should take another look and see what the environment is like.

An article published on the Minghui website described a student who told people the facts about Dafa and shouted "Dafa is good" wherever she went. "No matter where they take me, I'll ignore everything the vicious policemen say, and no matter how violently you beat me or how terribly you swear at me, I'll remain just as I am." The labor camp was so scared that they sent her back in a hurry—"We don't want her." It's because they figured, "We won't be able to convert her, and on top of that she'll influence a large number of people." (*People laugh*) And they won't be able to get a bonus, either. (*Applause*) They had no way to handle it—where could the local police station put her? They had no way to handle it, so they sent her home.

That looks like human conduct, but in fact it's not. That was because she reached that point through cultivation and truly arrived at that realm—"Now that you've arrested me, I haven't thought at all about going back. Now that I've come here, I've come to validate the Fa." So the evil was scared. Also, the number of evil beings is quite small now. The more we eliminate them the less of them there are.

Question: How should disciples who obtained the Fa after "July 20" [of 1999] handle improving as one-body versus their own cultivation?

Teacher: In cultivation just cultivate according to the requirements in *Zhuan Falun* and things will be fine. Just cultivate normally. It's only that the tribulations you encounter might be merged with the present Fa-validation, since Dafa disciples are all validating the Fa. So in the process of validating the Fa the phenomenon of karma-elimination will arise, and those tribulations will occur. In other words, those of you who obtained the Fa after July 20th should try your best to do well. Actually, you haven't put in more than others, because the disciples who obtained the Fa before July 20th had already given of themselves and had already gone through that process. It's cultivation, so don't be intimidated by difficulties. No matter what, no matter how hard it is, you are definitely able to come through on the path given to you by Master. (*Applause*) As long as you raise your *xinxing* you can make it through.

Question: Some disciples said that when we do the exercises by the Chinese consulates, our divine sides will naturally eliminate the evil. Is this understanding correct?

Teacher: That's right in principle. It's true, and that's fine. When a Dafa disciple sits there, isn't the cultivated, divine side also sitting there? That's just fine. But whatever you do, you can't be attached to that little bit and be content with it (*[Master] laughs*).

Question: Even now I still find that it's hard to handle and balance well having compassion for all beings and safeguarding Dafa's dignity. Master, would you please help and guide me on this?

Teacher: Your intention to safeguard Dafa's dignity is correct, but how do you safeguard it? Do you shut their mouths? Do you debate with them? I'm telling you, just treat all beings with compassion, and just clarify the facts to people with compassion, and you will be safeguarding Dafa's dignity, and you'll be able to safeguard Dafa's dignity. (*Enthusiastic applause*)

Dafa's dignity can't be safeguarded with the means of everyday people. It's brought about by each of our Dafa disciples exhibiting true compassion and kindness. It's not created, it's not created by human conduct or human means. It's born out of compassion and it's manifest in saving sentient beings and in your cultivation. When you cultivate well as a whole, the world's people will say that Dafa is good and will all respect Dafa. I said this to our persons in charge before: in Dafa the persons in charge don't rely on the ways everyday people use to manage things. Things rely on your heart toward Dafa and your sense of responsibility toward cultivation. You achieved it by cultivating yourself well, and people will admire and respect you. If you don't admit it when you're wrong, and act like you're not wrong in order to have people think that you're not wrong, then no one will respect you, because that's an everyday person's approach. The same goes for how the world's people view our Dafa. If someone says that it's not good and you debate with him in everyday people's ways, or you try to silence him or the like, that will worsen the disagreement. We should just conduct ourselves well and handle everything with compassion. You don't need to argue or debate with them. People have a side of them that's aware, and they'll be moved on the human surface too. They'll naturally say that you're good. But the student's feelings are understandable—whenever someone does damage to Dafa it upsets him. Then whenever someone has done damage to Dafa you should go talk to him. There will be people who can't be saved. You don't need to worry about people who can no longer be saved, you don't need to stubbornly debate with anyone, and you don't need to try to silence them either, because there are ways to deal with those who are really unsalvageable. The epidemic that's come along in China is dealing with those people. Those who are unsalvageable will be weeded out. It's not me who's doing that—it's the old forces weeding people out. And of course, there are also righteous Gods who are weeding out evil people. When it comes to something this significant, of course, if I didn't agree to it the old forces wouldn't dare do it.

Question: Currently in clarifying the facts we incorporate things that have happened among everyday people, like the news on the epidemic, for example, as part of the contents we use for truth-clarification, and we provide them to Chinese people in large quantities to remind them.

Teacher: It's okay to remind them. When you talk about certain things publicly through the media everyday people can't understand it. Then you can talk about those while you clarify the facts, and you can remind people, there's no problem with that. In this science-wrought society a lot of people don't believe in Gods, especially since today's medical sciences are part of modern science, so when you talk about those things they might not be able to understand, and the evil will even seize the opportunity to make up lies because of it. So you don't need to talk about those things in public. You can point out the matters to people while clarifying the facts.

Question: You've said that now we are selecting the cream of the crop of the future cultivators. My question is, I've found that some of the friends around me who support Dafa have found that when they do certain good things for Dafa they run into some difficulties. Is it because of our attachments? I

ask because my fellow cultivators have said that “when there’s trouble, it must be because you have a problem.” I’m disturbed by that. Or is it the result of the old forces’ persecution?

Teacher: It’s hard for someone to enter Dafa right now unless he’s extremely steadfast. For example, some people have learned the exercises, and if you want them to immediately become Dafa disciples and after they get in you lead them to do some Fa-validation things, then the old forces will interfere. And the old forces have a strong excuse, namely, “there’s not enough time, and the desire he’s demonstrated isn’t that strong.” They’re saying that his desire to become a Dafa disciple isn’t that strong. That’s why it’s hard to get in. If you ask them to do Dafa work like a Dafa disciple the old forces will interfere. That’s the situation. But in some cases it’s not entirely like that—there’s that phenomenon, too. Also, some everyday people want to support Dafa, and from the depths of their hearts they want to do some things for Dafa. Those people aren’t interfered with. So what I’m saying is, there’s a line drawn between Dafa disciples and the cultivators of the future.

Question: In “Touring North America to Teach the Fa” it was mentioned that even the last being is no longer pure. What does that refer to?

Teacher: Yes, even the last being is no longer pure. That’s true. But this cosmos is just incredibly immense, and human language is unable to describe it. When I talked about the last being it was only a figurative description. If I could really refer to that last being with human language I’d be directly insulting him. You know, when it gets to a certain level what’s “the last” changes—its meaning changes. Some students asked me whether “one plus one equals two” is true in the heavens. The human way of thinking and human logic don’t exist in the heavens. Its meaning eventually changes and it’s not like that anymore. How large is the cosmos? How large is the cosmic body? And how large is the ultimate colossal body? If all those things have degenerated, then the reason has to lie in him. Even to the extent that I just talked about, although my thoughts reached him, it seemed that the human language still didn’t reach him, so he was completely aloof and indifferent—even though he’s fully aware he pretends to not know. He’s thinking, “Your words didn’t reach me at all.” And that’s because the concepts contained in the human language are limited.

For example, Daoists talk about Nothingness. If you go by Daoist theory, they believe that Non-Being (*Wuji*) generates the Supreme Ultimate (*Taiji*), the Supreme Ultimate generates the Two Polarities (*Liangyi*), the Two Polarities generate the Four Phases (*Sixiang*), and the Four Phases generate the Eight Trigrams (*Bagua*). They think that when it gets to Non-Being that’s the highest, that it’s in the state of Chaos (*Hundun*), and that in the state of Chaos nothing exists. But Daoists with a higher understanding said that [at a certain point] even Chaos doesn’t exist, that it’s empty, that *that* is the highest, and that there’s nothing. Think about it, these words seem to have reached the end, right? But they haven’t. And why not? How can you speak of it when there’s nothing? So how about we call it “there’s nothing,” call it “Emptiness,” or call it “Nothingness”? (*People laugh*) Isn’t that the idea? So, when there’s nothing, if you trace further into the microcosm, into the infinite microcosm, you’ll see that something is there again. But those beings’ forms of existence are quite different from the existence of the elements of the matter in the cosmic bodies down below, and their truths are different, too, and it’s as if they’re totally different from each other. But there’s something there again. Despite that, at a certain point there will be nothing again, and at a certain point, as you trace further you’ll discover that there’s something there again and that that’s even more microcosmic. So you can’t understand it if you use human language to describe or understand it. When it gets to a certain, larger range, the differences are even greater, and it’s even more of a different matter altogether. So what do you call that state? That really can’t be described by human language. When the last being is no longer pure it means that nothing is good enough anymore, and that’s why Fa-rectification has to be done.

Question: We are considering a concert that’s related to stopping the persecution, with

participation by non-practitioner musicians. Master, what's your opinion on having everyday people take part in this type of concert?

Answer: I have no objection. If everyday people want to come and say that Falun Dafa is good, you can't stop them from doing that. That's no problem. But if they come to exhibit some everyday people's things, then you need to be a bit careful: can certain things share the same stage with us in a concert held by Dafa disciples? Of course, there's not much of a problem with classical music. But with the more contemporary music it's hard to say.

Question: Venerable Teacher, would you please talk about what we should do with the Dafa materials discarded by everyday people, since they contain sacred words and symbols?

Teacher: Actually, in everything you do your intention needs to be to save sentient beings. With regard to the truth-clarifying materials, for example, when you give out flyers you should consider the possibility that people might discard them. When it comes to this, you treasure them, since you're Dafa disciples, but don't get angry with everyday people. You should still treat them with compassion. If a person discards the flyer we can only say that he missed the opportunity. But when that person is really no good and is unsalvageable, Gods will regard what he did as a sin. Master has said this: I disregard all the sins that the sentient beings have committed throughout history; I only look at the being's attitude toward Dafa during the Fa-rectification. I treat all beings at all levels this way. But when a being has really persecuted Dafa disciples or has really been bad to Dafa, his new debts and old debts are all tallied together in hell. And that's because for beings that can't be saved, they can't not pay for the sins they owed before, and so for them their new debts and old debts are all tallied together. Dafa disciples cultivate Zhen, Shan, Ren, so they have compassion for all beings. You can't just have compassion for those who read the materials, and have no compassion for those who don't—you can't do that (*laughs*). In saving people, you have to be patient, and that's Dafa disciples' compassion.

Question: Would you please tell us, in the Fa-rectification what state are the factors in the cosmos that surpass the last being of the old forces in? Did they not think of saving themselves before the Fa-rectification of the cosmos, or are there other reasons?

Teacher: The ultimate factor of the old forces is evil toward the Fa-rectification itself, is selfish, and is an enormous tribulation for the cosmos that was planted for the Fa-rectification itself. The Gods of the old forces that are all throughout have their own specific arrangements for what they want at different specific levels. So at each level they arranged for the success of the Fa-rectification. But from the perspective of the Fa's mighty virtue, the old forces at higher levels are eliminating the ones at the next level down, because they know that whoever takes part in the Fa-rectification will have to be eliminated—this is the Great Law of the cosmos after all, so no being at any level is worthy of influencing it. The reason I say that the ultimate old forces are evil is that when the Fa-rectification proceeds to the end it's found that they are no more than an enormous tribulation planted for the Fa-rectification, and they're nothing more than that.

Before the Fa-rectification of the cosmos began they had *their* plans, which were self-serving. I find that once I start talking about certain things it gets really involved and will take a long time. If I were to answer any of your questions in detail it could take days, because when it comes to the process that's involved, the higher the level, the more the Fa that I teach elevate from the truths below, and so it becomes hard to understand if I don't talk about the process in the middle. Even though it's all-encompassing and all-harmonizing... you know, there are small Faluns, large Faluns, and larger Faluns, and like the cosmos, Faluns are all-encompassing and all-harmonizing, but in larger cosmic bodies there are Faluns as well, and in larger and larger cosmic bodies there still are, and in larger and larger and larger cosmic bodies there still are. However large a cosmic body is, there are Faluns that large.

When it gets to the upper-level cosmic bodies there are greater truths there. But overall the truths in the colossal firmament are connected, all-encompassing, and all-harmonizing, so as changes occur from level to level the Fa's truths in the cosmic bodies change significantly.

Question: In Taiwan can we sue that head of the evil in China? (People laugh)

Teacher: When it has persecuted you, you can sue it—there's no reason why not. (*Applause*) As long as the court accepts the case you can sue it.

Question: I have read Zhuan Falun from cover to cover repeatedly, but still can't get the inner meanings that have to do with Fa-rectification. Is it because my comprehension is too poor?

Teacher: If you want to see words in *Zhuan Falun* discussing the Fa-rectification things I'm telling you to do today, you'll never see them. As a cultivating Dafa disciple, a Dafa disciple of the Fa-rectification period, when it comes to what you should do, you can comprehend that from *Zhuan Falun* and you can grasp it from the Fa's truths. Not only can you comprehend things to that extent, regarding what to do specifically and how you can do well, as you continue to read the book more you'll be able to even see the things of the next stage—it can still point those things out to you. And it doesn't stop there: even at the final step it can point things out to you. No matter how high a level you cultivate to, everything is in there. What a Dafa disciple should do is all in there. But if you look for the words at the surface you won't be able to uncover them.

Question: Master, what you said today is about "Attaining an immortal human body, a Buddha,"² right? Greetings to you, Master, with a Heshi.

Teacher: Thank you all. Don't give the Fa that I teach some kind of a definition. I didn't tell you which level of Fa I was teaching. That's because when I teach the Fa my bodies at all the levels, all the way to infinity, are all teaching, so which level could you say it belongs to? No matter at which level you understood the Fa I taught, it's only what you understood at that level. But it's not limited to that. The correspondence to human bodies that I just talked about, for example, that's by no means about becoming a Buddha—that's about how the entire cosmic system, the cosmic body's system, and the colossal firmament system are integrated and harmonized. And it corrected the problem of the Gods in the old cosmos being constrained in the past by the forms of lives. That's pretty major. So when you see something, don't go, "Oh, it's that!" Or when you realize something, don't go, "Oh, it's that!" It's not, that's just something you've come to realize based on where you are now.

Question: We encourage fellow cultivators to come out and share experiences on different occasions. But some fellow cultivators think they won't have time to study the Fa if they come out frequently and that they can clarify the facts from their homes just the same, and can do even better and more there.

Teacher: If a Dafa disciple can truly achieve the state that's required of today's Fa-rectification disciples, then go ahead and do that. But if you can't achieve that, then that's making excuses. Of course, [events] like this experience sharing conference that you're holding are in fact still necessary. But I don't want them to be held too frequently since our students would be running around from place to place, and that would interfere with other Fa-validation things. That said, though, it's still necessary to hold experience sharing conferences. The only thing is, don't hold them too often. Also, as far as certain Fa-validation group activities go, you have to do them, cooperate with each other, and coordinate with each other. You might say that you're doing things quite well at home, but certain things require cooperation and everybody's effort, and [if you stay home] you wouldn't be able to help do them.

² From *Hong Yin*.

Question: Sometimes I see certain things that are about to happen, including disasters in the human world. Is it OK for me to write them down to shock the world's people? Or are what I saw the arrangements of the old cosmos?

Teacher: For the sake of saving sentient beings you can do it strategically and with wisdom. But don't shock the world's people. You should save sentient beings. What the students see involves two scenarios. One is: the body that I just told you about, your body that's in the range of your own bodily system—and the parts of our Dafa disciples that have been completely cultivated, in particular—the bigger your body is, the more numerous the beings in the cosmos that it covers and corresponds to. Then the things that occur inside are in fact things that occur in a portion of the cosmos. What a lot of students have seen are actually things that occurred inside their own bodies, but those are things that occurred in the cosmos too. That's because with our Dafa disciples, if each person cultivates well, then, with every person corresponding to a cosmic body you'll cover the entire cosmos. That's why your sending righteous thoughts is so important. So, that being the case, what you see is in fact only the state you're in during your cultivation, and it's only what's manifest during your cultivation of yourself, and that's all there is to it. Of course, it will, in various forms, be correspondingly projected over to where you are for you to see. Sometimes it's not easy to distinguish what's from the inside and what's from the outside.

Of course, there are also some students who've seen certain things that will occur in the Three Realms as a whole. But these cases are rare lately, because this history has been re-arranged. Many prophecies, for example—no matter whether they are accurate or not regarding the later stage—can shock and frighten the evil, give the world's people hints, and warn and wake up the world's people. So they can have certain positive effects. Dafa disciples can't do things according to some prophecy, though. You should do things according to the Great Law! You should do things according to what Dafa disciples should do! And you shouldn't do things by following something else. Weren't many of the prophecies you used while clarifying the facts things that you assembled for ordinary people to see? You did it to have ordinary people learn from past lessons in history—even ancient people talked about these things—that is, to caution the people of the world. They aren't for Dafa disciples to use as references in their own cultivation! If Dafa disciples hadn't encountered today's persecution I wouldn't have let you dig up those prophecies. You see the rationale, right? Dafa disciples should just do things according to the Great Law. You are creating history, you are creating the future, and anything arranged by anyone else doesn't count. Whatever anyone has seen is from the past and has already changed. Even if a few events happen to be the same, those were only arranged as needed by the overall arrangement, that's all.

Question: We're disciples who obtained the Fa after July 20, [1999], and we were recently involved in a serious car accident, but nothing happened to us and we were safe. Ordinary people said it was miraculous. We want to thank Master for giving us a second life. When something like that happens in the Fa-rectification period, is it because we have gaps and let the evil take advantage of us, or did it involve factors of repaying lives?

Teacher: I think there are two causes. One is, is it because some students haven't conducted themselves well? Another cause is, is it because they are new students? Of course, new students have tribulations, but that situation is relatively rare, and even if they have tribulations there usually aren't any major problems. No matter what, don't think of them as a big deal. It doesn't matter if something bad has happened, the bottom line is: for a cultivator there have to be inevitable elements involved.

Question: Several disciples have been suffering from major tribulations of sickness karma, and for quite some time now. Is it OK for us to send righteous thoughts as a group and help them?

Teacher: Of course it's OK. I talked about this problem last time. But some students should look inside and think about how well they've really done. As a magnificent being during the Fa-rectification period, how well have you really done? Don't say, "How could this thing happen to a Dafa disciple?" whenever a problem comes up.

For a long time now some students just haven't gotten rid of their fundamental attachments! And as things have piled up, at the end they aren't able to overcome them and their tribulations get big. When problems occur, instead of searching for problems in their *xinxing*, fundamentally improving themselves, or truly letting go of the matter and coming through in an open and dignified manner by another route, they focus on the thing at hand—"Goodness... why is it that I still can't overcome this thing? I've done better today, so it should have improved a little. Tomorrow I'll do even better and it should improve some more." He can never let go of that thing. On the surface it appears that he's letting it go—"Look, I'm doing well now." You're doing well now but you are doing well now for *its* sake. You aren't doing that for the purpose of doing what a true Dafa disciple should do!

There is indeed a portion of students who really should take a good look at themselves [and think about] how they've done. How well have you really done? Have you really made it through like the students in Mainland China who are validating the Fa even in such an evil environment and who are even able to set down their lives while their lives are on the line? If you were really placed in that situation, would you be able to handle it? Of course, I'm not saying that every one of you has to go through that process. But isn't what you are encountering right now the same thing? Can you truly make it through? Our students belong to three different categories as I've said before, so they're not the same, and they are bound to act differently during their cultivation. Don't think that other people are having no trouble at all and they're doing quite well in Fa-rectification. It's different. The fundamental situation is different, and there are no references or comparisons to draw. As I've already said, in cultivation there's no reference and there are no models to follow. "Someone has done such and such, so I'll just learn from him and do the same." It isn't the same. The situation you have won't come about for him.

As a matter of fact, for many students it's been so long now, and especially after going through July 20, 1999, you should really take a good look at a lot of things on a fundamental level. You should calm down and truly think things over. Don't think that "now that I'm a Dafa disciple I should have nothing bad happen to me. If anything happens then it's not right." And don't think that you should go through whatever other people go through. Each person's situation is different. The key is how well you yourself really do. What you're attached to in your mind all day long are all ordinary people's things, you're even befuddled head-over-heels by feelings, and yet when tribulations come you say, "I'm a Dafa disciple who's suffered from tribulations for a long time." (*People laugh*) (*Sigh*)... Sometimes I don't want my words to be too harsh, but if they're too soft you don't want to think it over and enlighten from it. It's about to end. You should think for yourselves now. Time waits for no one!

When the day of Consummation really comes, let me tell you, Dafa disciples really will Ascend in Broad Daylight, and the whole world will be able to see it. (*Applause*) Those who won't be able to Consummate, when that day comes all you can do is just sit there and sob! For the ones who haven't cultivated well, I'd say it'll be too late to cry.

Question: Recently there has been an instance(s) around us of a man and a woman having an affair....

Teacher: I think I talked about it just now, I've already talked about this issue. The things certain people have done make them undeserving of even the title "Dafa student"! They don't even deserve to be called "human beings," and yet they still call themselves "Dafa disciples"?! I'm waiting

for you—do you not realize that?!

Sometimes when I see the things that you do it really makes me sad. Yet if I were to really give up on you, that would really pain me, too. I really don't want to abandon you just like that. But you just won't strive to improve! You just won't perform honorably! And you're even tarnishing the reputation of Dafa and doing things that are even undeserving of the title of "human being," yet you still call yourself a Dafa disciple! Let me put it this way, what I said just now is for all of those who have done things that are undeserving of the status of Dafa disciples. You'd better tell people about those things openly. That way, many things of yours will be eliminated, and at the same time it will make you really strengthen your resolve [to correct your behavior]. I'm telling you that for you time is really limited now. For all of you who've done those bad things—and I'm not including those who've already corrected themselves, I'm talking about those who are still doing the bad things, and those who are providing information to China's evil Communist scoundrel gang—the moment I truly give up on you is the moment you go down to hell! I'm really not just trying to scare you. Because it hasn't ended yet it is still an opportunity for all beings. Master has been waiting for you over and over again!

Question: Is there anything that we need to pay special attention to while teaching new students to send righteous thoughts during the nine-day lecture class?

Teacher: Actually, you don't have to tell new students to send righteous thoughts (*[Master laughs]*), since at that time their abilities aren't yet that great. That's because they have just begun to learn the Fa after all, and they need to go through a process. Don't be too eager to have them send righteous thoughts.

Question: My understanding is that the individual cultivation of a Dafa disciple is directly related to the cosmic body that's connected to him. When the Fa rectifies the colossal firmament, will the cultivators of the future be responsible for the cosmic bodies that correspond to them, or will they [the cosmic bodies] have already been rectified by the Fa?

Teacher: During the course of your cultivation, the cosmic body that corresponds to your body, no matter how big it is, is rectified as you achieve success in your cultivation, and that's for sure. But if you don't cultivate well they can't be rectified. Of course, there is another factor that's at play, namely, the Fa-rectification—when my immense force of Fa-rectification arrives, the good ones will be kept and the bad ones will be dealt with. So the time before the Fa-rectification arrives is the best opportunity for you to save sentient beings. When the time comes it will wait for no one. As soon as the immense force of Fa-rectification arrives, however things should be will be.

Question: All the students in Israel send greetings to esteemed Master!

Teacher: Thank you! (*Applause*)

Question: Esteemed Master, please tell us the connection between Moses, Israel, and Fa-rectification.

Teacher: Moses has nothing to do with the Fa-rectification. But I'll tell you something, and you shouldn't casually tell it to ordinary people, as it'd be hard for ordinary people to understand. The truth is, Moses was in fact the God who was saving the believers of Judaism. After the Jews left Egypt the God that oversaw them was actually Moses. They called out to Yahweh, but actually Yahweh didn't save people since Yahweh is a higher God; the God who saved people was Moses. Moses, Jesus, and St. Mary are all on the plane of Gods who save human beings. So Moses was the one who truly oversaw the Jewish beliefs. These are things people don't know much about. What I'm saying is the real situation. The Jewish race was created by Gods, too, and so they are also a group we should try to save in the Fa-rectification.

Having come to this topic, let me tell you a few things you'll enjoy hearing. (*Everyone laughs*)
(*Applause*)

Just now I talked about the nation of Israel. The Bible says that Yahweh created the Israelites. Actually, this small universe of ours, the small universe that I've always referred to, what's this small universe called? It's Pan Gu from Chinese legends who created heaven and earth. He's not Chinese, and he's not a human being of any race on Earth. He is a God in the heavens, he's a universe. Pan Gu's "creation of heaven and earth" took place during the process where the small universe of the last period was destroyed and the small universe was recreated. His body is the process of this small universe's "formation-stasis-degeneration-destruction" cycle, but his being isn't. Haven't I talked about the Trinity of Gods before? He has a Divine Body and he has a True Spirit. His True Spirit isn't it, but his body is the small universe that I talk about. In legends from history the world's people talk about how he came to life in this way: a shape was gradually formed out of the state of Chaos, and then he was formed; he separated Heaven from Earth, and then he stood up and held up Heaven. That's people humanizing him more and more and attaching more human feelings to him in legends. What people like has distorted reality.

You know, the human body is a small universe and it has layers upon layers of sentient beings. When the Pan Gu universe was initially formed, just like a human embryo in the mother's womb, the small universe was just a particle in the more gigantic cosmic body. The cosmic body has all the elements that can form life. When the small universe of the last period ended in the cycle of formation-stasis-degeneration-destruction, the cosmic body was already preparing for the formation of a new small universe. In the state of Chaos after the explosion of the small universe of the last period, this new small universe was gradually formed, and the True Spirit of Pan Gu entered into it. In the process of formation, layers upon layers of substances inside of it formed layers upon layers of heavens and earths, and at the same time formed the myriad things in between the layers upon layers of heavens and earths, including Gods just like the True Spirit of Pan Gu and layers upon layers of sentient beings. The small universe was then formed. The human body is formed by small particles forming large particles and large particles forming even larger particles, and so is his body—small particles form large particles, and large particles form even larger particles. It's just like what people know about, where molecules are formed by atoms, and naturally, molecules can then form planets, planets form the Milky Way and different planetary systems, and different planetary systems can form even larger universes of the cosmic body. That's how it's structured. Human beings, or today's scientists, they've seen particles, but they haven't seen the connections among particles. All particles are linked together organically. So after Pan Gu was formed, just like all sentient beings in the cosmos, he too had to go through the process of formation-stasis-degeneration-destruction. What people described in legends was his "formation" process. Actually, now he has already reached the final process, the process of "degeneration-destruction," or in other words, the process of his aging and weakening. Today is the period of time where he's become degenerate after aging and weakening, and it's already at the final stage... Using human language to talk about Gods isn't pleasant to the ear. This is just to say that it's now a time period where things aren't good, and that's why Fa-rectification began during this time.

The moment he formed, different levels of particles came to exist in the cosmos, and during the process of his formation those particles were forming beings. Our Earth is a portion of his body, a portion of the cells in his body. Planets that have lives on them just like our Earth are scattered all over this small universe, only they don't have lives like today's humans. And that's because those lives are beings at the most surface level of the cosmos, they're beings at the lowest level, and they aren't in the image of Gods. Originally there was no division of the Three Realms. The reason there is a Three Realms is that Dafa was to be imparted at the surface level of the small universe, and for that reason, this span was chosen as a unique realm for three big levels of lives, so it formed its own system. Pan

Gu is a God, and what's inside of Pan Gu's body is the small universe. So there are different levels of Gods and sentient beings in the Three Realms inside of all the cosmic bodies of the entire small universe, but only the beings in the surface dimensions have lowly, ugly, strange, and wicked appearances. So back then the Three Realms was created out of necessity for Fa-rectification. Within the scope of the Three Realms the solar system and Earth were created. Of course, the lifespan of Earth can't be compared with that of the universe. There were different planets at this position of Earth. The beings on the previous Earths all had the appearances of aliens, and their natural environments were extremely harsh. That's because having beings at the worst place who are in the image of Gods wasn't allowed. Human beings have the images of Gods, so those on the previous Earths all had the ugly appearance of aliens. To have Fa-rectification things take place here and make it possible for all sentient beings in the entire cosmos to be saved—even sentient beings at the most surface level—the Three Realms and human beings were created here. Why were human beings created, rather than have beings like aliens listen to the Fa? The reason is, if those kinds of beings were to listen to the Fa of the cosmos and become my disciples, that'd be the same as insulting the cosmos and all Gods. So after the new Earth was created a portion of Gods from the heavens came, and they created human beings on Earth in their own images.

In ancient China it was said that Nu Wa created human beings. Gods use their divine abilities to do things, and they don't need to use their hands to do things. And the structure of the human body is complicated, it's not something you could mold with your hands—it can't be done with the clumsy means of human beings—so Gods do it with their Fa power. The *gong* of Gods is present from the microcosm on up to the most surface level, so when a God does that at the same time, it's done immediately, it's done instantly. And he doesn't do things in the time of humans, he transcends the time in the human dimension, so when you look at it from the human time here, he's finished his creation instantly.

Several types of Gods were sent down back at that time. One was the Yahweh that Jews talk about. Yahweh created the people of the Jewish race. This type of people includes a portion of people in southern Europe; they belong to this race. A portion of Caucasians in northern Europe were created by other Gods. Four types of Caucasian Gods created four types of Caucasians. Actually, Arabs used to be Caucasians too, and Arabs used to live in the northern region of the earth, but I'm not referring to the present continental plates, it's the previous continental plates, which changed nine thousand years ago. They're people who lived in the northern region of the past, and it was the shifting of the land masses that moved them to their current location. In recent history, before Genghis Khan occupied the Arab region, Arabs had exactly the same skin color as Caucasians and they looked like today's Europeans, only they had dark black hair and dark black eyes. After Genghis Khan's massive Mongol army arrived, the locals came to have mixed blood, so their skin color is similar to that of Chinese, and they show signs of Chinese looks as well as European looks. Originally they were created by a separate God.

The Indian race was created by Buddhas, and that's why the dancing of Indians, the way they carry themselves, and their hand gestures are similar to those of Buddhas. Indians really are a race created by Buddhas. As far as Orientals go, a portion of them were created by Nu Wa, while another portion were created by Daos. Actually, to put it more precisely, the earliest race in the early days of North America and South America was the yellow race. They're now called people of the red race, but they're in fact of the yellow race—they were tanned by the sun. (*Everyone laughs*) The people of the true red race were the ancient Egyptians. Maybe it's not possible to find them now, since most of them have mixed their blood with blacks.

Blacks, likewise, were created by Gods of blacks in the heavens, and not by just one God. So

there are differences in how black people look. Among the Gods in the heavens, some wear clothing while some cover themselves with pieces of cloth. Daos wear clothing. Many Gods in the heavens cover themselves with a big piece of cloth. Most of the Buddhas cover themselves with a piece of yellow cloth, while with Caucasian Gods the vast majority cover themselves with a large piece of white cloth; in Chinese, it's one *zhang*³ long, and wrapped around the body. We can see this in ancient paintings and sculptures. In the past Europeans similarly wrapped themselves with a piece of white cloth. And the Gods of black people wrap a piece of red cloth around their bodies. With Gods, no matter what color their skin is, they all look majestic. In order to impart the Fa here, the image of human beings needed to be created, and the Gods created human beings in whatever images they themselves had. That's why it's said that God created man in his own image, and it's true. That's how today's human beings came to be.

In the past history, before I began to impart Dafa, both the bodies and the souls of human beings that Gods created back then were formed in the Three Realms. I've told you about the process of the human race's development, the process of gradually developing and enriching human beings. When it came to the recent period of time, humans were already able to be quite rational, and their way of thinking was coherent. And when this step was reached the imparting of Dafa was about to take place. So, many Gods from the heavens came and incarnated as humans. Then what should be done with the souls of the humans? The human skins at the surface that were created by Gods were taken over by beings from up above when they incarnated, while the souls of the previous humans were left in the netherworld. Humans go through reincarnation, so those skins don't go along with them and they're taken back at a certain time. When a person dies at the end of his life the skin is taken away. The skin we see that's buried inside a grave, that decomposed skin, that's the portion that grew postnatally from the food the person ate. But the prenatal skin, on the other hand, that's the real skin, and that prenatal portion has to be taken away. So whoever is about to reincarnate will put it on (*everyone laughs*), it's just like clothing, and that's how people used to go through reincarnation. When it was time to impart Dafa and after those Gods came, you could say that the people on Earth that were created by Gods had done their share for the Fa-rectification—it wasn't easy for humans to reach that point in history—and so they've stayed behind in another dimension, which Chinese call the netherworld, and they haven't reincarnated here. At present, where they are has already been completely assimilated during the Fa-rectification. At present, the massive force of Fa-rectification has arrived at the outermost surface of this human dimension, and it has arrived at the outermost surface of the human skin.

All the way through to today, [the people of] different races have been like particles under the feet of the Gods who created them; although people are able to meld together and coexist in this dimension, they don't belong to the same system. When it arrived at the recent period of time, inside the skins of the different human races were different Gods who had come from the heavens. What I discussed above was about what's going on with humans at the surface. Of course, Dafa is being imparted, and today it's not that I'm bringing salvation to Caucasians and turning them into people of the yellow race, or bringing salvation to people of the yellow race and turning them into Caucasians. (*People laugh*) You're already clear about that. I'm making it possible for everybody to go back to wherever they came from, and if you cultivate well I'll give you an even higher Attainment Status. If you were a God, you'll still cultivate back to the God's image you originally had, and I won't do anything to it; if you were originally a Buddha, you'll still be a Buddha; if you were originally a Dao, you'll still be a Dao. What I eliminate are all the elements of yours in the postnatal universe that have gone bad. And at the same time, I assimilate you to the Great Law, rectify everything for you, give you even better things, and give you the state that the Gods of the future should have. (*Applause*)

³ zhang: A Chinese unit measurement for length. 1 *zhang* = 3.33 m = 3.65 yard

The reason is, there are different beings, different sentient beings, and different Gods inside the cosmos, and they can't all be changed into the same thing. You can't do that, and the cosmos wouldn't prosper. That's just the way it is. So as far as the beings that are concerned, no matter what outer appearances they have, they've all gone through a process in history and they're all worthy of being cherished, because that's the process that the cosmos has gone through.

I just talked about some things you'd enjoy hearing (*laughs*). I think you'd best not submit more question slips. After I finish going through the remaining several slips I'll call it a day since I don't want to take up too much of your time. It's an experience sharing conference, so you still need to give talks and help one another improve. Didn't a slip just ask how we could improve as a whole? *This* is an opportunity to improve as a whole.

Question: What's the relationship between a negative being and evil?

Teacher: Actually, I only mentioned negative beings when I talked about the law of mutual generation and mutual inhibition and the correspondences among different beings in the cosmos. At a low level there are humans and there are ghosts. Speaking of ghosts, the [Chinese] term "ghost" (*gui*) that modern people use is a generic term, and there are in fact many, many varieties, including ghosts, evil spirits, mountain spirits, forest spirits, monsters, fiends, spirits, demons, and so on. Contemporary people refer to them collectively as "ghosts." At this human place there are humans and there are ghosts. Up higher, there are Buddhas and there are demons. And up even higher, there are positive beings and there are negative beings. And why is that? Because the higher it gets, the better—the higher the level, the better things are. At very high levels there are positive and negative beings. You can't call the negative beings "demons," though. They're totally different from demons. But they are the opposite of positive beings, and that's why one is positive and one is negative. Since the lower it gets the worse it is, when it gets to a certain level there are Fa Kings and Demon Kings. Buddhas are Fa Kings. As for Demon Kings, I can tell you that they too don't have any human emotions or desires, and they don't have any human attachments. They are beings at that realm, and that's why they can stay there. It's just that they aren't kind and exhibit cruelty—that's putting it in human terms—demons are vicious, and Buddhas are kind, so they exist in opposition to one another, and they deal with things in opposite ways.

In the past, people said that kindness and malice can be in a person's one single thought, that kindness or malice comes from a person's single thought. In this cosmos it's hard for anyone to do something. When a Buddha wants to do a good thing, as soon as that thought comes forth, malice will follow along immediately. However big the good thing that he does, that's how big the bad thing that follows. It's the same with humans. However big a good thing that you do, it's guaranteed that the same extent of bad thing will be dealt to you. Some of the things manifest in this dimension, and some of the things don't manifest in this dimension—they manifest in other dimensions. For example, say you've done a major good thing for someone and that person is grateful to you. Because you've done that good thing other beings might have been harmed and might lose out. In other words, however big a good thing you do, that's how big a bad thing will happen. So in the past the law of mutual generation and mutual inhibition was absolute, and when a being wanted to do a certain thing, he absolutely couldn't just do it. Those Gods... you all wonder why Gods have to wait for the right time or opportunity to come along if they're going to save somebody, and why it's said that "the right time" or "the right opportunity hasn't come yet," or that "the opportunity is not ripe yet." They couldn't do it because the law of mutual generation and mutual inhibition has been pretty much absolute and was restraining everything. A God absolutely wouldn't cause a big, bad thing to happen for the sake of doing a good thing and as a result cause himself to fall down. They absolutely wouldn't do that. Some monks used to go on and on about "saving people." Sometimes I would think, "They really have no clue what

boasting that is.” It’s not like how humans imagine it. So, the law of mutual generation and mutual inhibition has caused Gods not to dare do the things they want to.

Question: Will the mankind of post Fa-rectification of the human world have any memory of today’s mankind?

Teacher: Mankind, the mankind of the future, they’ll eulogize today’s Fa-rectification for generation after generation. (*Applause*) The truth about this persecution hasn’t yet been fully revealed for mankind to see. Mankind will be shocked. The Consummation of Dafa disciples, the occurrence of everything that mankind doesn’t believe in, and the process of all of mankind’s deviated things being rectified—these will be soul stirring, and not just shocking but terrifying. All of those things will happen. So this segment of history will be passed down by mankind for all eternity.

Question: I feel very guilty because I haven’t done certain things well. Even though I know full well that I shouldn’t sink into too much guilt and even lose confidence in my cultivation, it’s still hard for me to shake it.

Teacher: You’re not determined—you don’t have enough determination. As a Dafa disciple... Take a look at the persecution Dafa disciples in Mainland China are suffering under. You’re a Dafa disciple too, and yet you aren’t able to show even a bit of determination over here. What is it you’re so attached to? Isn’t that what’s going on? You don’t have enough righteous thoughts. If you have enough righteous thoughts you’ll be able to do it.

Question: Master, I feel that some students put a lot of emphasis on “righteous thoughts” but overlook “righteous action” somewhat, and when sharing experiences they almost never discuss how to have righteous actions. Please tell us how to handle the relationship between righteous thoughts and righteous actions.

Teacher: That’s not how to describe it. When you see someone not having righteous actions, in fact it’s that he doesn’t have enough righteous thoughts, since a person’s mind guides his actions. When your righteous thoughts are strong enough your actions will definitely be righteous, and when the righteous thoughts aren’t strong enough the actions won’t be righteous. No matter how we hold discussions and how we talk about the question of righteous thoughts, there are still people whose thoughts can’t become righteous. When you can always maintain your righteous thoughts your actions will surely be righteous. It all comes down to how you, as Dafa disciples, are to conduct yourselves well.

Question: I am a disciple who obtained the Fa after July 20, 1999. I obtained the Fa in 2000. I wonder if I can have the same kind of mighty virtue as the disciples who obtained the Fa before July 20, 1999.

Teacher: In the past, before July 20, 1999, students were doing personal cultivation, whereas now is the time for truly establishing mighty virtue. So, haven’t you obtained the Fa at this time? In terms of whether someone can [have mighty virtue], it’s the same for everyone. They, too, are establishing mighty virtue at this time. It’s only that you have your personal cultivation mixed in with the matters of clarifying the facts and saving sentient beings. It’s not affected.

Question: Is it that the cosmos’s most microcosmic matter has a limit? If it does, is it the highest manifestation of the Fa, and the highest point of Zhen, Shan, Ren?

Teacher: “the cosmos’s... matter has a limit”—it sounds like this sentence has reached the end, right? Hasn’t it reached the end? But I can tell you that when you go further into the microcosm there isn’t any matter anymore; it’s not called matter, and it’s completely different from our present matter, but it’s still connected to the system of matter. So it can’t be expressed with human language at all, and

it's hard to reach its ultimate point with words. But I have ways to reach it with words.

Question: Some students think that their own assimilation to the Fa is what's most important, so they often don't want to make themselves too busy and they'd rather have more time to think things over. I think that the progress of Fa-rectification is very fast, that when there are things that should be done we should do them immediately, and that as long as we can study the Fa with a calm mind and search inward when encountering things, that counts as making diligent progress.

Teacher: Yes, that's true. With many things you shouldn't be constrained by human notions. You might say that you've formed certain habits before, but what's been bestowed upon Dafa disciples today is the state of Gods, and you should progress toward the state of a God. You can do a lot of things well if you approach them with righteous thoughts. Of course, thinking things over is a proper thing to do and there's nothing wrong with that. But if you often take too much time to think things over and miss opportunities to establish your mighty virtue in Fa-rectification, then your losses will outweigh your gains.

Question: How can we stay within the Fa principles that Master has taught us, not be trapped in the boxes created by our attachments, be able to harmonize things from all sides, and become even more diligent as we make progress during the final stage of Fa-rectification? Also, when it comes to doing Dafa things and understanding Fa principles, how can we ensure that we don't focus on just one angle and are able to harmonize things from all sides?

Teacher: Sometimes when you folks think about an issue you form a type of habit—"I want to do such and such thing... here's how I'm going to do this thing... here's how I'm going to do that thing." You ponder over it a lot and, well, to the point that you feel you've covered everything in a satisfactory way. But when you get down to doing that thing, the real, actual situations can vary in a lot of ways and your plan won't actually work (*laughs*). And when it doesn't work, you start to ponder it again. That's not how you should do things. Have righteous thoughts! However you think something should be handled, just go ahead and do it, and when you run into problems you will naturally know how to solve them. If your righteous thoughts are strong, everything will work out smoothly and it's guaranteed you'll do well.

Why do I tell you to do things this way? It seems passive, right? But that's not true, because the side of you that's been successfully cultivated knows everything, and no matter how you do it, it will work, and no matter how you do those things you'll be able to do them well. So you just need to have the thought. When you know what to do, just go ahead and do it, and while you do it your wisdom will continually come forth, because at that time the side of you that's been successfully cultivated will fuse together with the side of you here. That's a God, who's omnipotent! So of course a small issue will be resolved in no time, and your wisdom will come forth—it's different then! And if you get stuck Master will give you wisdom (*laughs*). (*Applause*)

Question: Disciples in Taiwan send greetings to esteemed Master.

Teacher: Thank you! (*Applause*)

Question: There are students in Taiwan who translated [and recorded] Zhuan Falun and Essentials for Further Advancement, among others, in Taiwanese and used "Pu Du" and "Ji Shi" as background music. Each set is sold for about five hundred Taiwan dollars.

Teacher: No music should be added to Fa lectures—not even Dafa music. Everything related to publishing my works is handled by the students who are in charge of this. Also, let me put it this way, there's a contract for everything. So our students can't publish books on their own, act on their own, or use them to make money. Even if you don't make any money off them you still can't just casually do

things on your own, because during the Fa-rectification period there can't be any mishaps. So during this time you have to pay attention to certain things. As for the future mankind, people's morals will improve, everyone will be following rules, nobody will do something like that, and everyone will watch over things. Right now it doesn't work like that, the evil is looking for gaps to exploit, and people aren't upright, so we can't do it that way. And it's even less acceptable if someone wants to use those books to make money.

As to translating into Taiwanese, I'm not against you translating them into Taiwanese. But no matter what you're doing, you can't do it on your own. I've made this point crystal clear: nobody can do things on his own when it comes to Dafa's things. Of course, with the special circumstances in Mainland China right now it's OK for students there to do things in order to solve the problem of getting the books, but you have to ensure that not a single word of the original books is changed. Outside of Mainland China it's not allowed.

Question: The deepest understanding that veteran students have of the Fa is to be steadfast in the Fa and believe in Master. I'd like to ask this: where do steadfastness and faith originate from? This issue has troubled my husband for a long time. How can we cultivate and form this type of incomparable steadfastness in the Fa?

Teacher: Whether to believe in something or not is a human's rational thought. It's not from me giving you something, and it's not a state that you can achieve through some kind of a method. Dafa disciples all have steadfast faith in Dafa; that's a description in words for Dafa disciples. Their firm belief in Dafa evolves from a rational understanding, and it's not the result of some factors having an effect on people. At his outermost surface a human being has three souls and seven spirits. One of the seven spirits is called "belief." A person can believe what he hears when someone else says something—that's the role it plays. But this type of belief can't be compared with righteous faith in cultivation, because that's the outer, outermost surface of a human being, and it only plays the role of providing a kind of intelligence. But the righteous faith of a Dafa disciple is a Godly state. It results from a rational understanding of the truth, it's the Godly state of the side that's been successfully cultivated, and it's definitely not something that external elements can have an effect on. It's not about having firm belief for the sake of having firm belief, or being steadfast for the sake of being steadfast—you can't achieve it that way. From my perspective, as your Master, I don't seek anything from Dafa disciples. Everything that they're doing today—be it validating the Fa, saving sentient beings, or studying the Fa and cultivating themselves—I can tell you that not one of these things is done for me. In the future, Dafa disciples will see that everything Dafa disciples did was for their own sake. What are saved are their own sentient beings, what they're consummating are their own paradises and sentient beings, and they're establishing mighty virtue for themselves—all these things are done for Dafa disciples' own sake. Not a single thing you've done is for Master, and not a single thing you've done is for anybody else. *(Applause)*

So there's no need to force them to do anything. All the students rise by understanding the Fa's principles, and that's the only way they can become more diligent, and that's the only way they can become so steadfast in the Fa. That's not due to any external factor, and it can't be achieved by coming up with some methods. Master doesn't seek anything, and he won't take anything from them. I only give things to them and bear things for them. That's definitely the case! *(Applause)* That's why I tell them to study the Fa more—they're certainly not studying for Master.

Question: The XX Party's damage to traditional Chinese culture and its atheist propaganda since 1949 have resulted in big impediments to people in understanding Dafa and this persecution. I want to use this angle to clarify the facts, for example, and guide people to think about why there were such detailed arrangements in traditional Chinese culture. But it seems to have nothing to do with

human rights. Can I speak from this angle?

Teacher: Yes, you can. You can explore this with those who are well educated and who have their own ideas. But when it comes to the average person that you run into, if you talk to him that way, wow, even if you just talk to one person a day it will make you pretty exhausted (*laughs*). It would take a lot of words. It's fine to clarify the facts from different angles. You can go ahead and talk to people that way, but you should end up talking about the persecution.

Question: Dafa disciples in Fuzhou, Fushun, Guangzhou, Kunming, Chengdu, Leshan, Nanyang of Henan Province, Chengde, and Xi'an send greetings to Master.

Teacher: Thank you. (*Applause*)

Question: Dafa disciples in the Island of Saipan, France, Macao, Hong Kong, England, Japan, Mexico, Spain, Scotland, and Romania send greetings to Master.

Teacher: Thank you. (*Applause*) Since what's on this whole slip are all greetings, I'll just read them all.

Question: All the Dafa disciples in Huizhou of Guangdong Province, Ningbo of Zhejiang Province, the region of Chaoshan in Guangdong Province, Wuhan of Hubei Province, Nanchang of Jiangxi Province, Shiyan of Hubei Province, Tianjin, Nanjing, Hunan Province, Inner Mongolia, Yunnan Province, Shanghai, Beijing, Zhejiang Province, and Hohhot send greetings to Master.

Teacher: Thank you. (*Applause*) They must have combined the slips you submitted that pass on greetings to Master. There are still more.

Question: All the Dafa disciples in Vancouver send greetings to Master. All the Dafa disciples in Singapore, Indonesia, Greece, and South America send greetings to Master.

Teacher: Thank you. (*Applause*)

Question: Esteemed Master, please tell me which dynasty the people in Singapore are reincarnated from? (People laugh)

Teacher: Don't ask questions like this anymore, because in some cases the government doesn't understand it, and in some cases I don't want to say. Singapore is from the gang of Li Zicheng. (*People laugh*)

Question: All the Dafa Disciples in No. 1 Chinese Military Medical University send greetings to Master. Dafa disciples in Thailand and Australia send greetings to Master. Disciples in Changchun send greetings to Master. We thank Master for his compassion and salvation of all beings. We will definitely do well.

Teacher: Thank you. (*Master gets up*) (*Audience stands, applauds for long time*)

Teacher: Please have a seat. So with validating the Fa, you've made it through almost four years now. No matter how much longer it will take, don't think about it, because once you think about it, it's an attachment! No matter how long it takes, Dafa disciples are responsible for purging those evil elements, exposing the evil persecution, and saving sentient beings! (*Applause*)

Whether you are those who've lost your lives during this persecution, or those who have suffered a great deal during this persecution, remember: Master definitely won't let you down one bit! (*Applause*)

What awaits Dafa disciples in the future are supreme and eternal glory and mighty virtue! (*Applause*)

Whether you're a student in Mainland China or outside the Mainland, I hope that all of you seize the final moments to do well and do even better. Especially those of you who haven't done well, you should seize the day and do well. Don't let the opportunity slip by. Once the persecution ends and once the strength of the evil is no longer sufficient, this thing will be over, and at that time it'll really be too late for regrets. If this thing hadn't happened there wouldn't be students who don't do well. But now that it has happened, and some of the students among you haven't done well, you should seize the day and do well. That's because it has happened after all; if it hadn't happened, it wouldn't matter. Master is able to do anything and is able to rectify everything. But now that this has happened and it's brought you losses, you have to make up for the losses yourselves. I hope that every Dafa disciple won't overemphasize the form of things. Your own cultivation, your own improvement, your validating the Fa amidst the evil, saving sentient beings, and steadfastly doing well going down the path that you should take are what's most important. (*Applause*)

Thank you. (*Long applause*)

Li Hongzhi
April 20, 2003

Teaching the Fa at the Conference in Vancouver, Canada in 2003

(Long Applause) I just saw some of you in the audience at the last Fa conference. It seems like our Fa conferences are held more often around summertime. When Fa conferences are held by different regions, people there always invite me and hope I'll attend. Actually, every time I see you it's because I have things to say to you. Usually when different regions hold Fa conferences they all want Master to attend and say a few words. But, sometimes you haven't fully grasped the requirements I laid out for you in the previous lecture, and then if I say more it's likely to dilute your understanding from the previous lecture and the things you need to do. So I can't attend Fa conferences that often. Actually, today I don't have anything in particular to talk about, but I promised the Vancouver students a long time ago that I would come when they held a Fa conference, so I came this time. *(Warm applause)*

You've been working hard. I've seen what you've done clarifying the facts and going to the consulates and embassies to validate the Fa. At this Fa conference students have had some trouble with their meals and lodging. When I got here I saw you moving all about in the streets. But no matter how trying it is, your goal is clear: in difficult situations we *are* able to save sentient beings and to succeed in cultivating ourselves; in this cultivation process we're able to temper ourselves and become purer and more and more able to meet higher standards, and meanwhile, this evil persecution has made you more and more rational and come to know better and better how to face and confront the evil drama and this persecution. So, no matter how agonizing it is or how hard it is, we're Dafa disciples, so we aren't going after anything of ordinary people, and you're clear about your ultimate goal: we want to achieve the Consummation of a cultivator. What we want to obtain is something ordinary people could never obtain. That's why for Dafa disciples it's significant, and a serious thing, to start from an ordinary person and be able to completely transcend ordinary people during this process, and on top of that, you're cultivating in the ordinary society, and you have to meet higher standards—standards that transcend human society—and accomplish things that all cultivators throughout history have wanted to but never could accomplish. So things like your validating the Fa and saving sentient beings encompass how you improve yourselves, how you eliminate your omissions, things you're still attached to, and all types of shortcomings. This way, no matter what forms from the ordinary society you use in validating the Fa, you're cultivating, no matter what you do you're improving, and no matter what you do you should do it with a cultivator's state and not from the base point of an ordinary person.

It's clear what our starting point is. The essence of what you are doing as a cultivator is improving yourself and cultivating yourself, and, during this persecution, exposing the evil, bringing the persecution to an end, and rejecting the old forces' arrangements. So a lot of the things you do look like what ordinary people do, but their very nature is different. The fundamental difference is that our ultimate goal and our starting point are different from theirs. We're only utilizing some ordinary means in the ordinary society. The ordinary society, too, is a level that the Fa has created for humankind, so at this level we validate the Fa by making use of the culture that the Fa created for ordinary people and the various forms in which it can exist. I don't think there's anything wrong with these things.

You know, good and evil coexist in human society. But Dafa cultivators act completely out of goodness, and this has a positive effect on humankind, on society, on people's thinking, behavior, and moral values, and on us cultivators. The spread of Dafa has in fact achieved a huge, positive effect—an extremely good effect—on the society, human beings, and cultivators themselves, and everything that's manifest has been positive. We're clear about this, and so are the ordinary people in society. Under the evil persecution, some people were used and controlled by evil beings back then, and they said things that weren't from their hearts, things that appeared to mean something but didn't really, and things that didn't come from their own thinking—that was caused by the evil's manipulation. Today when human

beings say something about Dafa they have to be responsible to themselves. Before, people could say that those words weren't their own intentions, since people were controlled and deceived by foreign evil beings. But, when the circumstance is that the foreign beings have been cleared away and people say something, then that's truly people speaking on their own, and so they have to take responsibility for it.

I make a practice of compassion (*cibei*). I can disregard the bad things people have done to, or have said about, Dafa disciples and me during this persecution, as well as the things they've done to make the situation worse. Of course, that's not true for those who've caused great damage to Dafa, though. Those ones aren't savable. Yes, the Fa can save anything and everything—you've heard Master tell you that I can turn everything into the best thing, no matter how bad it is—I can do all that, the Great Law can do that, but some malicious people have committed such sins against themselves during this persecution that they no longer deserve to hear what Dafa disciples have to say and no longer deserve to be saved by Dafa, in other words, in this persecution they've already positioned themselves for their futures and lost the chance to be saved. So these people aren't included. I've said that no matter how bad a being had become throughout history, he'd still have a chance. Whether he's in the human dimension or another dimension of any level, as long as he hasn't sinned against Dafa during this persecution, then no matter how huge his sins were during the course of history in the ordinary society or in another dimension of any level, I can save him. And I've said this to you: I disregard the past wrongs of any being in history. That's because even the cosmos is no longer good enough, and beings can no longer be compared to beings of the stage of formation and stasis periods, so when everything is no longer good enough I don't want to compare and pick which ones are relatively better. I just want to save everyone, and as long as they don't sin against the Fa-rectification itself, I can save them. I've been holding fast to this principle while doing things. (*Applause*)

There are often students who ask me about those people who want to learn Dafa but who've acted as spies for the evil that persecutes Dafa, and who've persecuted the Fa-rectification. These people who've sinned against Dafa but are still among Dafa students, in terms of their knowing sides they don't want to leave Dafa, yet in terms of their human sides they've been driven by their human notions and human attachments and done some things that have harmed Dafa disciples and the Fa-rectification. So with these people, who I still call "students," the problems are really serious and grave. But it's not that they can't be rescued anymore, it's not that they can't be saved anymore. They're still different from other beings. Right now the Fa-rectification hasn't ended, so there's still a chance to validate the Fa. In other words, there's still a chance to make up for it. I look at a being comprehensively and look at his entire history. If somebody is truly a Dafa disciple, if he was truly a very good being in the past but did something wrong momentarily in this environment, then he's still different from an ordinary person who has sinned against Dafa. After they make up for the harm they did they can still make it, and if they do well, there will be greater mighty virtue awaiting them all the same. (*Applause*)

I've said before that in ordinary society, no matter what your position is or what your job is, and even if your job is spying—which is special work and with special tasks, and that's why it's called special-task personnel, right?—nonetheless, you're a being, so you shouldn't truly miss this extremely rare and precious opportunity just because you have a special job, you can't ruin the chance that beings have been waiting tens of thousands of years for just because of your line of work. That's how I look at beings. Of course, back when I was teaching the Fa the door to salvation was left wide open—I didn't choose you based on any social class, occupation, or status. I don't look at those things at all. It makes no difference whether you're rich or poor, what social class you're in, whether you're smart or not, whether you're well-educated, which ethnic group you belong to—I don't make any distinctions. I don't look at any of the distinctions that human beings draw, and I don't have any of them in mind. I treat everyone the same. That's how I do it. And that certainly includes those special agents, and those

who even take on spy work in order to find out more about Dafa.

Of course, if you look back and think about it, you'll see that I, as your Master, treat sentient beings with the greatest mercy. So if despite all of this I still can't save you, then there have to be consequences in store for such people. You know, a lot of students want to see me, and a lot of ordinary people want to see me. When some people see me they get excited without knowing why, and when some people see me they feel especially warm and close. Some people get so excited they want to cry. That's because their knowing sides all know that whoever sees me, I will help him, (*applause*) and I can reduce the sins and karma he made throughout history. (*Applause*) So no matter what your job is or what you do, as long as you see me, I'll have you develop good (*shan*) thoughts, and as long as you see me I'll reduce your sins and your karma amidst your good thoughts. (*Applause*) In fact, everyone in the world has a knowing side, they're aware. Or to put it another way, it doesn't matter what you've done or what you do, I treat all of you this way. (*Applause*) Maybe this is the "greatest mercy" that people talk about. Of course, that's how it manifests among the beings at this level. When I treat people like this, when I treat the world's people like this, if under this kind of mercy and under this tolerance that completely surpasses how ordinary people treat beings, and still the world's people, human beings, are harming Dafa and letting down the Dafa disciples who are trying to save them, then Buddha Fa has its dignity, and when they still don't do well after such mercy there's absolutely no hope for their existence.

You know about SARS in China, well, back in the past the old forces decided to [use it] to eliminate eight million people in China. Instead of being repentant they're still hiding the facts there. Out of compassion for human beings, [Master] wants to give human beings more chances and doesn't want to have so many people die. But instead of being repentant, they're even using SARS to persecute Dafa disciples and they're covering up the facts. The people in power are ordinary people too, and they too are subject to divine punishment. Gods are warning the world's people, and yet [some] people still want to cover things up and prevent the world's people from learning their lessons. Then what they have in store for them is even worse punishment from the heavens! In other words, while I'm treating all beings with the greatest mercy, if some of you beings still can't come through, then I'll leave you alone, and there will of course be other ways to deal with you. To put it another way, Buddha Fa is merciful, but it also has the solemn nature of Gods, and people aren't allowed to just do whatever they want and not take Gods' mercy seriously. That's an act of blasphemy toward Gods.

When I taught the Fa last time I brought up how some students have made mistakes that they shouldn't have. Actually, as long as you're steadfast in studying the Fa and study it well, you correct yourself, and you conduct yourself well again, then you're still a Dafa disciple. Just do well next time, that's all, and don't dwell on it as if it were so grave. If in your mind you take it to be so grave it'll create another situation where you feel pressured by regret and worry, and then you will sink into the attachment and you won't be able to break out of it. The whole cultivation process of a Dafa disciple is a process of removing human attachments. No matter what it is you've experienced, as soon as you realize the problem just correct it immediately; if you fall, just get up and continue to do what a Dafa disciple should do. In that case the mistake you made will just be counted as a test you didn't handle well during your cultivation, you can try to get through it next time, and there will be more opportunities for you to pass the test again. That's all. Master can't count the [wrong] things you do during your cultivation as a big deal. But with those people who can't pull out of that situation or who repeat the mistakes, it's a different story, then. You can't develop new attachments because you've made a mistake.

Before when I taught the Fa I didn't use to put things too strongly, the reason being, I didn't want to create mental burdens for you or cause other attachments. And it's for this reason that I rarely teach the

Fa to a student individually. Once I teach the Fa to a person and point out his shortcomings, just think about it, his mind will be really burdened since the words came from my mouth. That's why I rarely teach the Fa to somebody one-on-one. When I teach the Fa I talk about widely applicable things and speak in a broad sense. And when it comes to problems that are minor, that are off to the sides, or that are isolated and only apply to a few individuals, and when they don't interfere with Dafa students as a whole, then there's no need for me to bring them up. That's because during the cultivation process the students will see those things among themselves and they'll point them out to those people, they'll point out the shortcomings. And even if those people can't realize it right away, since they have attachments, they'll gradually come to realize it. Only when problems arise in the body at large or that have to do with Dafa's overall situation, or when there's a problem with the situation of your validating Dafa, only then do I talk about it. For example, right now in a few regions of Mainland China there are still people spreading fake [Dafa] scriptures, and some people are so attached that they're even memorizing them, and they don't just memorize them, they even go around promoting them among students. What's driving them to do that? They're doing that because the fake scriptures contain things they're attached to and things that fit with their human attachments. I don't think they're intentionally trying to damage the Fa. It's because they have attachments and have human thoughts that they're doing this, they've done things that the evil wants to see done, and they've interfered with Dafa disciples' validating the Fa.

I've actually attended Fa conferences in Canada several times now. (*Applause*) There are three main ones, and they made a pretty deep impression on you. The first time, as you know, was shortly before July 20 [of 1999]. The second time was when the suppression and persecution were really severe. That one was held in Ottawa and I went there. This time, it's when the evil is being completely eliminated on a large scale, and the Fa-rectification is moving at a torrid pace, eliminating the evil at a very fast speed and breaking through the human dimension. It's at this time that I'm here to meet with you. So these three Fa conferences in Canada are quite telling. (*Long applause*)

We should say that the Canadian students have done a great job, and this is reflected in a lot of different things. Your doing a good job of cooperating has been the key, and there haven't been many cases where you let personal attachments affect how you validate Dafa. And there haven't been too many cases among you where you insist on your own opinions to the point that you can't let go. There hasn't been much friction among the students. You've cooperated with each other fairly well, and that's how you've created such a good situation in terms of validating the Fa. And of course, Canada is a special place. The Canadian government and people have given a lot of support and sympathy to Dafa and the Dafa disciples, and we should thank the Canadian people and government for these things. (*Warm applause*)

So looking at these three Fa conferences and thinking back, we can see clearly the differences in the overall situation. I've met with the students in Canada three times, and the changes in the overall situation in between those three times have been big. You've all seen it. When the persecution first started the pressure was quite intense. When I taught the Fa in Canada before July 20, 1999, a lot of what I said was actually to hint at things to the world's people—I was telling the world's people something. Every person has a knowing side. When I teach the Fa I'm not just speaking to human beings, the layers upon layers of me's are speaking to beings at different levels, and that's because anything that happens at this human place isn't isolated—it's a reflection, at the lowest level, of cosmic changes taking place. It's just like what I've said before: truths are different from level to level. From a higher level the truths at lower levels seem wrong, but truths are truths at their own respective levels, and the states, the manifestations, and the standards for the same thing are different at different levels, with things more toward the Truth the higher they get. But overall the truths run down from the top to the bottom consistently, and when they manifest at different levels they're the truths of different levels.

Beings at each level, then, have different states and different understandings of the truths. The lower it gets, the lower the requirements and the poorer the conduct of beings. When it gets to this lowest level of human beings, this is how beings behave, and it's close to the worst. The old forces made very specific arrangements for this evil persecution. I'm restraining the evil here, and those righteous, Fa-Guardian Gods are doing that, too. The old forces have their arrangements, but in fact the evil is being restrained, too. When the evil puts its evilness to work, they act like they are terribly domineering, but when it gets to the actual results they're very weak. Of course, when the wicked humans act on the evil's behalf, as long as the Dafa disciples' righteous thoughts don't have omissions and are strong, then the wicked people will become timid and they'll even be conquered by the righteous thoughts. That's how things are. Overall the evil hasn't been able to accomplish whatever it wants to, and that's because Gods have been controlling things after all. The old forces have their arrangements, but they're just trying to bring about the situation that they need, and the old forces haven't been able to do whatever they want at will either, the reason being, what I want to do and the righteous Gods' restraints on them prevent them from achieving what they set out to do.

The old cosmos has old truths. Any being, before he's rectified by the Fa, he can't see anything that's post Fa-rectification, and he can't see the true manifestation of the new Fa since he isn't worthy. When a being can truly see the manifestation of the new Fa and the new cosmos, then he's equivalent to a new being, and he'll naturally do things accordingly. They can't see those things because they are beings that belong to the cosmos of the past, and so they can't see the future that doesn't belong to the cosmos of the past. And this future isn't the things that were arranged during the historical period of the old cosmos, where there are fast and slow times and differences among different dimensions, and which are things the Gods of the old cosmos can see. It's about a different and new cosmos, one in which everything's been rearranged—be it the time, the dimensions, the beings, the mechanisms, or the Fa. It's not connected to anything of the old cosmos in any way, and the beings of the old cosmos can't see it. If they could they would surpass the abilities of all Gods. So they're going by the old Fa, following the order of the old cosmos, and doing what they want to do. A lot of things are indeed hard to change. Sometimes I ask them to do certain things and they think it's groundless, so they don't dare to do them. They're just beings of this time period, so they think that *that* is the right way to do things. When they don't do anything at all, that can be counted as behaving well.

Actually, the ones who've been interfering with the Fa-rectification are the gang of old forces. Relatively more beings in the gigantic cosmos haven't taken part in it, and their state is one of watching things. But, once the overall, immense current of Fa-rectification arrives, whether they've been observing it or taking part in it, they will all be resolved in the Fa-rectification; those who should be assimilated will be assimilated, those who should be benevolently resolved will be benevolently resolved, and with those who can't be assimilated or benevolently resolved, if their levels should be lowered their levels will be lowered, and those who've committed crimes and should be cast down will be cast down. I'd say it's not easy for a being to enter the future, it's no easy thing, and that's because the future doesn't belong to the beings of this cycle. If you look at it from the perspective of the old understandings, for beings of this cycle to enter the future, for them to enter the next cycle of cosmic bodies that don't belong to them, that's absolutely impossible. During this Fa-rectification [I] have been treating everything and all beings with the greatest mercy, and that's the reason [I] wanted to assimilate these beings and get them over there from this old cosmos, and that's why I set out to do Fa-rectification of the cosmos. If this weren't the case, there wouldn't be any opportunities at all for the beings of this cycle to go to the future. The future doesn't belong to them, it doesn't belong to these beings of the present. So if someone wants to go to the future he has to meet the requirements of the future.

Of course, for a being at the present time that's not achievable, and it's really hard for him to conform

to it. But there's one point: my Fa is being spread, and layer upon layer of sentient beings all know it, and a lot of beings are learning it and reading it. There's *Zhuan Falun* at every level, the truths at each level are different, and the words inside appear different, and they're all the truth of the new cosmos at different levels. A lot of beings are reading it and assimilating themselves to it. The reason is, this is something that's never happened before even since extremely remote times, since the beginning of time in the cosmos, and it's something sentient beings never dared to think about, that is, being able to span such a large gap in history, since that history doesn't belong to any of the beings in the present cosmos. Everything in this history, and all beings in the cosmos that are living in this environment, and this history that provides for beings' existence in this environment, [will] truly enter the future that doesn't belong to this history, and it actually has nothing to do with them. It's unlike this old cosmos, where when the cosmic bodies at different levels become no longer good enough they get destroyed and then new ones are created. That process sounds the same as sentient beings' creation and destruction of new and old universes at different levels in the colossal firmament, but it's in fact completely different. Regardless of how the different cosmic bodies in the cosmos are destroyed and recreated, they're still the result of the one single thought of a higher being in this cosmos at a high level and his abilities. In other words, they're still a result of the old cosmos's standards and arrangements. That's because for an even larger being, the cosmic bodies beneath him are all part of his body, and when a certain cell is eliminated during the metabolic process, when the cell is recreated, it still carries his own mechanisms, his own characteristics, and the things of his own universe—everything is done by him. But when the entire cosmos is truly gone, it's just like this being has died, and later on, at a certain time, when a being is recreated, it has nothing to do with the being that died. What I'm talking about here isn't like what I said about how when the soul⁴ leaves the flesh body it's like taking off his clothes and changing into other clothes, it's not that type of connection, and it has no relationship to the past.

All of the Trinity of a being dissolves and ceases to exist, and no matter how high the being is, nothing's left. This concept, in terms of the end of this firmament, is an empty one for all beings of this cosmos, they're all baffled by it and nobody understands it; it's something beyond their comprehension. Even if they let their imaginations go that's still limited to what a being can think or know about in this cosmos, and it's within the extent of wisdom produced by the beings of this cycle. The Fa-rectification, as major as it is, means nothing to them. And what's more, the sentient beings are all taken by surprise when faced with all the things in Fa-rectification, and they don't know how to react. They all know that the truths I taught are good, but the old truths are there, and they were created during the degeneration and destruction periods by the old truths. That's why the Fa-rectification's requirement for all beings is that they don't do anything.

The most fortunate ones are those who haven't made a move during the Fa-rectification period—they've just been quietly watching things. Since I want to save them all, I'll make all these beings assimilate to and go over to the new cosmos. But the old forces saw that many beings had committed numerous sins in history, they thought that those beings shouldn't be saved and shouldn't be kept, and they felt certain that they're in control of my Fa-rectification, so they arranged for the weeding out of those beings during my Fa-rectification. So why do they, when it comes to the beings in this world, make those vicious policemen so cruel, violent, and fierce, and why do they make those low-level evil things do evil? Their goal is to eliminate certain people of the world and students that they don't think highly of. So they make both those evildoers and their victims commit huge sins. Those whose levels are a bit higher don't do these things directly. They think that since they're Gods, they are holy and pure and they don't want to stick their hands in a pile of garbage to directly stir things around, and that's because once they came here they'd fall down. So they successively control beings in the level

⁴ Translator's note: this term, *yuanshen*, has also been translated as "Primordial Spirit" before.

that's immediately below theirs. The old forces at different levels are doing things that interfere with Fa-rectification at each level, and that's why when it gets to the human world the evil beings act more viciously. Never before has Fa-rectification been done. No matter how perilous the situation gets, the Fa-rectification remains an unprecedented opportunity for all sentient beings. The Fa has existed for a long time; I came with this almighty, this harmonizing and all-encompassing, this unprecedented, and this best Fa. (*Warm applause*)

But for Dafa disciples who came to validate the Fa and for beings in the greater cosmos, it's just a matter of making the Fa's salvation a concrete reality. In other words, this Fa was here long ago, and it's just a question of how sentient beings act according to this Fa, or as I put it, how they assimilate over—it just involves this process, that's all. I've said before that nobody can damage this Fa. It's not that I'm creating some new Fa while I'm doing things. The Fa has existed since a very long time ago. It's just a matter of how sentient beings are assimilated to the Fa, that's all. The more wisdom a being has the more highly he thinks of himself, but there are realities that even a being with a great deal of wisdom can't see at his level. Any thought he has toward the Fa-rectification affects him a great deal. One thought of his can make layer after layer of sentient beings sin against the Fa-rectification, and then he'd have sinned against the Fa-rectification. No matter how gigantic the beings are, they all face this issue, because no being of this cosmos belongs to the future cosmos, and no matter how much of the true situation they can see they still can't see what's ultimate. So even for the final, last beings of the cosmos this could be a huge catastrophe—as soon as an [improper] thought emerges, they can't escape the catastrophe. I'm using human words to describe things this way and calling it a catastrophe, because without Fa-rectification there wouldn't be a question of saving sentient beings and everything that's recreated would have nothing to do with the old cosmos. So this is in fact the greatest mercy toward the beings in the cosmos. (*Applause*)

You know, beings of different levels of the cosmos, different cosmic bodies, different firmaments, and different colossal firmaments are created by the single thought of a high-level God. Even as I was just saying this, there are some beings sitting up there and feeling quite pleased with themselves. They think that everything was created by one single thought of theirs. But those who are above them are laughing at them—“All of it was created by a single thought of *mine*.” And those who are at even higher levels are thinking this way, too. This is because none of them know that there are even more gigantic Lords above them. But the one who truly sees how laughable they are is me. (*Applause*) This Fa-rectification is the biggest opportunity for them and the greatest mercy toward them, yet they all want to control all of this. They think that what they have in their control is the best and that they're helping me with Fa-rectification. They even forcefully push their best things on me. Think about it, when they push things on me, how much of an impediment, how much of an obstacle, are they making for me? And when you don't want their things they think that you're rejecting the best things, and so it's the same as your destroying this cosmos, it's the same as your destroying the future—that's how they see it. They only have that much wisdom so that's the extent of their understanding.

Almost all of the levels upon levels of beings within the old forces' system think and act this way, and that's what caused the obstructions in the Fa-rectification. When that one thought of theirs manifests at the cosmos's lowest level it brings about the worst results. The lower and worse the beings are, the worse and more wicked the things they do. That's in fact how this whole persecution came about. Actually, the levels upon levels of beings that I just talked about... just now I wasn't talking about the beings inside those immense cosmic bodies anymore—I was talking about those main bodies, Kings, bigger main bodies, and Kings of Kings of different, immense cosmic bodies. I was talking about *those* beings. Think about how many levels upon levels, countless, boundless, measureless Gods, Buddhas, Daos, and sentient beings there are in the firmament. There's no point in talking about them, as what they do, or what they're doing specifically, is all caused by what their main bodies do.

The cosmos is just so immense, so once Master talks about it, the talk will get very broad and high-level, because what I face now are all issues like these, and what I'm dealing with right now are all issues like these. And what's reflected in the world of ordinary people all comes from what beings at those high levels have done. I don't teach the Fa arbitrarily, I teach them, also, the Truth, and I teach specifically regarding these things. It sounds very high to those down below, but those of you sitting here are all Dafa disciples, so, after all, I'm not teaching something to ordinary people. The things I'm talking about today are in fact hard for ordinary people to understand. But people can sense my compassion, they can sense energy, and they can sense that it's good for them. Yet only Dafa disciples truly understand what I'm teaching. (*Applause*)

You haven't had lunch yet, so I don't really want to talk too long. (*Long, enthusiastic applause asking Master to stay*)

Actually, no matter how much I say, you still have to actually do cultivation—that is what's first and foremost. Don't underestimate your Fa conference—it's part of Dafa disciples' overall cultivation process. (*Applause*) So while you want to hear me teach even higher and about more things, and to go into more specifics, in fact, during cultivation you still have to make progress one step at a time. So before the Fa-rectification is over you should seize the time that's left and solidly do well in every single thing that a Dafa disciple should do. That's how you should proceed on this path toward the future and toward what's the most magnificent; you can't miss any single opportunity, or go awry with any step.

That's really hard even just trying your best to walk your path well. During cultivation you're in fact constantly stumbling and falling and then picking yourself up to keep on going. But this society that you're facing, which has been forged by this human science, this reality, is very enticing. So, when you're faced with this ordinary society, it's really hard to balance being a cultivator and being an everyday person, and it's hard to break out of all kinds of attachments. But no matter what, you're Dafa disciples, so just keep righteous thoughts in your minds and try your best to do well what you should do. You're cultivating while conforming to ordinary people to the maximum extent. You don't need to become monks or act like those people who've left the secular world behind. In fact, this is already the most convenient in terms of form. But when it comes to elevating your *xinxing*, there can be absolutely no compromise. Some people can detect it, and some might not be able to detect it, and you might not even detect that strongly your elevation and your improvement. But, when it comes to those things, it's absolutely strict. Whenever a part is fully cultivated it'll be immediately assimilated to the other side, and that's why on this side of yours you always feel as if you haven't improved much. The reason is, the changes at the surface are very small, whereas the changes at the core are huge. So in this state it's guaranteed that you can cultivate, guaranteed that you can improve, and guaranteed that in the cultivation process even when you slip and fall while you're not paying enough attention it won't result in your dropping in level. That's because the side that has been fully cultivated was separated. Once separated, the side that's been fully cultivated won't make mistakes when the human body does, and so it's not likely for it to drop in levels. This is in terms of normal cultivation. But as for those people who go to the opposite side at critical times or do things to persecute Dafa and Dafa disciples, it's a different matter. For cultivators, though, when it comes to raising the requirement on your *xinxing* and letting go of your attachments, there's absolutely no wiggle room, and the standard can absolutely not be lowered, because we need to be responsible to the future, and to the cosmos and the sentient beings of the future. Many Dafa disciples will achieve the status of gigantic beings in the future, and they will encompass many sentient beings, even boundless beings. So if your standard is lowered, then that level of the cosmos won't last long and that level of the firmament won't last long, so you have to meet the standard.

However, don't get anxious because Master said that. I've never forced you into anything. You can cultivate while conforming to the ordinary society as much as possible. But as a cultivator, you need to know how you should act. Try your best to do well, and try your best to measure up to the standard for a cultivator. I'm very much against your immediately getting anxious as soon as you hear Master say something, and once you get anxious you immediately go to extremes and stop doing anything, thinking "I'll do only Fa-rectification things." You can't do that, because the path Dafa disciples take today will be the cultivation path of people in the future.

You've seen the effect religion has on society when human morality is on the wane. Not only can it not save people, but it also corrupts people's righteous faith. As for clergymen, people that have left the secular world behind, and cultivators, ordinary people have placed their trust and faith in Gods on them, they've placed their hopes on these people. So when those people don't do well, it's not just about an individual not doing well. When a cultivation group or a religion doesn't walk an upright path, it's not just a matter of it itself not walking an upright path. It will cause the entire society to degenerate and it'll cause problems for large groups of people. And at the same time, these people's disbelief in Gods is the most pitiable and the saddest thing for sentient beings, for those sentient beings that believe in Gods. So in the future it's quite likely that there will be no such form as religion. Perhaps the textbooks that mankind studies in the future will have elements of Fa permeating them, and perhaps those who can do well, or do even better, in their activities in society will be the same as cultivating. Dafa disciples, when you recall everything that you're doing today, isn't it like that as well? Dafa doesn't have any tangible form in the world that makes it some kind of politics in society.

I'll have everything of the future go down the most righteous path. So, the people of the future will be blessed. This human society will remain in the future, so it's a blessing for the beings in the future, for the sentient beings at different levels in the future, because it's an opportunity, and it's a part of Dafa's harmonizing and perfecting beings. So in comparison, the human society of the future will have great changes and differences from today's human society. Haven't a lot of people said that the people of the future would be blessed? For the cultivators of the past, cultivating was hard. Many people who wanted to cultivate thought of a way: to suffer and cultivate through suffering. Cultivating through suffering can indeed reduce karma, because you're cultivating, after all, so you can elevate. But even when they gave it all they had, their levels were still limited, and most of them couldn't go beyond the Three Realms. The reason was, there wasn't Fa to guide their cultivation, and they didn't know the Fa's standards and requirements at different levels. And the beings at different levels had a hard time being responsible for them. It's not that Gods weren't merciful to them, it's the law of mutual-generation and mutual-inhibition at work in the cosmos. Whenever somebody has a thought, it produces different elements that are from both the positive and the negative sides. When you have a thought of goodness, evil emerges as well, and when you have an evil thought, it too has an effect. That's why many cultivators have said that "both good and evil emerge out of one thought." But who really knows the truth behind those words? Gods can't act rashly. Saving people isn't a trivial thing. Why was it that when Jesus saved people and was doing such a huge good deed, the beings in the Heavens controlled things like that? And why'd they even have him crucified? It appeared that he was suffering for humans' sins, but why would a God have to suffer for mankind's sins? Why didn't higher Gods intervene? Why couldn't Gods directly reduce humans' sins? In the past, these were laws in the cosmos—everything was like that. From my perspective it's because the old cosmos's Fa lacks wisdom in this regard, so next time it won't be like this. In the future a lot of huge changes will take place, so for sentient beings it will be wonderful all around, and such wickedness won't exist.

But, even though relatively speaking the law of mutual-generation and mutual-inhibition won't be absolute anymore in the future, it will still exist, and positive and negative beings will still exist. So when it comes to the worst, lowest level, even though it won't be as wicked as the lowest level before,

the lowest level still won't be good. The people of the future will be blessed, but only compared to today's people. There will be things that produce karma, as well as suffering to eliminate mankind's karma, so there will be wars, plagues, and disasters. It'll definitely be that way. Otherwise, when mankind's sins became too much and they weren't eliminated and paid for through suffering, mankind would be annihilated. If mankind had no suffering it wouldn't know what happiness is; this human place can't possibly become heaven. Exactly because it has suffering, a person can cultivate here, and when he doesn't do well he can make karma. So human society will always be a special environment.

Mankind will be given the greatest blessing, that means the future mankind won't have standards as low as the present mankind, and that is the greatest mercy. (*Applause*) When everything's no longer so wicked the environment will be elevated, relatively speaking. The suffering won't be so low, and everything will be maintained at a foundation that has a higher standard than the current mankind, and where everything will be evaluated by the Fa at this level. So as for the future people, those who are able to step into the future are blessed. And why is that? It's because Dafa was spread here, this place was created for Dafa, the beings here made sacrifices, and they are credited for history's progression to this point today. So blessings will be given to the future beings and to the future mankind.

Of course, this isn't a simple thing. Everything in the cosmos correlates with each other, they are interconnected, and they complement and supplement each other, and there are other factors and reasons at work, too. So in other words, when such changes happen in the world, in fact the different dimensions and levels in the entire cosmos correspondingly elevate their realms, too. Every level ... when the standard at this place of the Three Realms has elevated, then think about it, you can't elevate to a level where you're together with Gods, so the places where Gods are have to elevate, too. And you can't have one level of Gods elevated to where another level of Gods is, either, so *that* level of Gods has to elevate, too. In other words, the standard at every level elevates. So in other words, the environment at every level will be better. Of course, to achieve these things, the firmament's mechanisms and such, and the Fa's wisdom and abilities have to reach that point, and that's how it can make the way beings exist and every facet of things become more wonderful.

What Dafa disciples are dealing with today is establishing the best beings of the future. And that's why for all of you, when it comes to *xinxing* requirements, or the standard that you as cultivators can achieve, you don't have any wiggle room—you must reach the standard.

The Fa requires you to conform as much as possible to this ordinary society's way of life, so for the sake of your being able to live here, you can't have people regarding you as some kind of strange or odd person. Even though a lot of people who've left the secular world are cultivating this, religion is in fact just another form of human society's current condition. So in this way the paths that you take are in fact establishing the foundation for future beings. All of this isn't about using you as an experiment, though. The Fa has existed for a long time; you're realizing it in action, it's just a process like this. The Fa-rectification is bound to succeed. You might have heard from various prophecies or people with abilities that mankind will meet with such and such a catastrophe. But nobody has dared to say that this Fa-rectification won't succeed, and that's because it will succeed beyond any doubt. The reason being, it doesn't matter whether beings can realize in action the Fa's requirements for them, Fa-rectification will certainly succeed. That's because if the human race couldn't make it through in validating the Fa, the Fa would create all beings anew—the Fa has whatever is lacking, because everything is readily available. What's called "mercy" is my intending to let the beings of the old era be assimilated and become part of the beings of the new era. That's what I want to do.

Over the course of history people have heard beings at different levels talking about such-and-such kinds of mercy, and even Gods at very high levels talk about mercy. But their ideas of mercy are limited to certain standards, and all of them are confined by their understandings and realms. This great

mercy in Fa-rectification, however, no beings in the entire cosmos have ever come across it before. What's meant by "the Buddha's boundless grace"? (*Warm applause*) Of course, the beings of the future will see the Dafa disciples' saving of sentient beings. When you've succeeded in cultivation the beings of the future will know about your infinite Buddha's grace. But the people of the future won't know about me, only you can know about me, and that's because with sentient beings, they don't need to know—and actually they are not worthy to know—and it's enough for them to know you. Originally no one knew about me anyway, and in the future they still won't know. (*Master laughs*) (*Warm applause*)

Beings are complicated. The truth is, I've already realized in action the process of a human becoming a God. My flesh body is already governing the Falun Paradise, and in the future you'll see many me's of the past and, at that time, you might mistake them for me. In fact, the essence of the true me's main body, the true Main Me, is hard for beings to know. But I know everything about you. (*Master laughs*) (*Long applause*)

When I came, I went through the process of descending level by level. Gods at very high levels have a Trinity. At different levels there are different concepts and understandings of the Trinity. At very high levels where there are physical forms, Trinity is the composition of True Body, True Spirit, and Thought—that's the Trinity. That's how it is at very high levels. At even higher levels it's no longer the case, though—there, thought and body are one, there's no distinction. Now I'll just speak from the levels where Gods have forms, and the Trinity is of True Body, True Spirit, and Thought.

When I came down to the level that has physical forms, I began to create a True Body, and then I descended step by step into the colossal firmament. Each time, I had the True Body descend alone. In other words, the real me is the True Body. I've said to you all along that I am at the most surface level, and this true skin *is* me. That's because at any level I always created what's at the most surface level, I always created the True Body, so having arrived at this place of humans the True Body exists this time inside the flesh body. (*Applause*) Therefore, I left quite a few of my True Spirits at different levels and in the past history. They are all my True Spirits of the past at different levels. Over the ages, some of them thought that I wouldn't be able to return again, so they fashioned another body [at their levels], all of which have my exact appearance at those times. So what this means is, in the universes of the future you'll see the past of many me's. All of them can enter the new cosmos of the future after they are assimilated, because it's their mighty virtue and blessing to have been me. Each time I descended with the True Body, so each time when the body was about to descend, the True Spirit would not want me to descend, as they all knew that going down would entail a lot of hardship and would be no different from being destroyed. No matter how high a level a God comes from, in the eyes of Gods, when he eventually reaches this human place he has basically died. So as I descended level by level, from the outset on to the end I always made the True Body. But even though this True Body has gone through numerous different levels over the course of a long history, where did this skin ultimately come from, and who is it? No being can know or understand. This time, in the same fashion, I descended to the human world along with the human body, and have resided in the outermost surface of a human form. What's different is that the True Body is inside my flesh body, but no being can find out or see my ultimate origin. When just now I said that it would be hard for beings in the future to know about me, that's what I meant.

I'd say that what I talked about today is pretty high-level. (*Applause*) But all the same, as Dafa disciples, after you hear what you've heard, just take it easy and don't form some kind of attachment. Gradually, as you go through the cultivation process, you will come to know some of it, and some of you might come to know all of it after you eventually reach Consummation.

Speaking of Consummation, your Consummation doesn't happen suddenly in one fell swoop, like with those elixir (*dan*)-cultivators of the past, where it's blasted open in one shot—it's not like that. So how

does a Dafa disciple reach Consummation? That side that you've fully cultivated knows everything—it's you. When this little bit of your most surface part gets over, it'll be as if you naturally wake up from a slumber. That's how it will be, and there's no tremor. (*Applause*)

During your cultivation, when you see different truths of the Fa from the books, those are only the little bit of understanding you get here on the human side. You know, the real Buddha truths can't be completely unfolded right before a cultivator who still has a surface human body, so you only have a general understanding on this side, while the side that's fully cultivated already has a complete understanding in that realm. So to put it another way, while you're cultivating, whatever level you're supposed to be at, in that realm of the cosmos, the side of you that's fully cultivated knows everything at each of the levels below you, and everything is completely before your eyes. This is true for the entire part of you that's been fully cultivated, all the way until the last part of you is fully cultivated, and you'll know everything as if it's very natural. Your surface will be like you're waking up from sleep—"Aha"—and you'll just go about doing whatever you're supposed to do. That's how it is. (*Applause*)

Your thinking at that time won't have this human way of thinking or structure, that is, the thought structure of your fully-cultivated part will have been shaped according to a God's best standard. That way, the way of thinking won't be a low-level way of thinking, but you'll know everything at lower levels. Actually, you know, be it Buddha Shakyamuni or some other God or Buddha, they know the thoughts of even cattle and horses, and they know the thoughts of even lower beings, they know it all, and fully, but they won't go inside there. They just know everything, that's all. Later on when you Dafa disciples finish your cultivation you'll see clearly everything that's below you, and you'll know everything. But your way of thinking won't be the same as theirs, you won't go inside there, and your thinking will be completely in your realm. So later on, when you reach Consummation, maybe it'll be like waking up from sleep, and you'll naturally come to know everything. That's because the part of you that's been fully cultivated has been over on the other side for a long time now—and time over there isn't the same as time in this dimension—that side of you has spent a long time there and is familiar with everything, so when the last little part of you here on this side gets over, it too will become aware of everything. (*Applause*)

I've told you before that when cultivators in the past became Enlightened they would explode their elixir, and when the elixir was exploded, the explosion occurred in dimensions of every level, so it would have a huge impact on the earth, there'd be landslides and tidal waves, there would be tremendous shaking. All of that would happen. Now there are so many Dafa disciples, and their cultivation levels are high. Wow!—it'd be too massive, wouldn't that bring enormous disasters to human society? So it won't happen that way. Everything will be really natural. So in terms of this Fa, back when I first started to do this undertaking I took everything into consideration. Everything in this Fa is the most encompassing and perfect, and the best.

Also, a lot of our students are concerned about many things, all kinds of stuff. In fact, once you think about those things your realm has dropped. Don't think about anything, and don't worry about anything. Master is compassionate, and he'll definitely arrange for you what's the best. (*Applause*) You don't need to think, "That's Master being merciful to us," because it's what you've achieved through cultivation, and it results from your own mighty virtue. That's why Master does it for you.

That's all I'll say. (*Warm applause*)

Those who haven't done well: hurry up and get diligent. We'll resume our Fa conference. Take every step well. The better the times get, I'm going to tell you, the fewer the predestined opportunities, so you should try your best to do well the things Dafa disciples should do. But you can't go to extremes, you

can't go to any extreme. Once you go to an extreme, you've damaged the path I arranged for you and Fa's requirements for you. You should do the things you should do in a normal way. If tomorrow is Consummation, today you still won't know it, and suppose you're thinking about opening a business, then just go ahead and do it. But I'll harmonize everything for you. Don't think about anything! Just do whatever you're supposed to do. (*Warm applause*)

I'll end by wishing our Vancouver Fa Conference success. Thank you all. (*Long applause*)

Li Hongzhi
May 18, 2003

Teaching the Fa at the 2003 Midwest-U.S. Fa Conference

Hello! (*Enthusiastic applause*)

You could say we really do have a grand occasion here. (*Enthusiastic applause*) And there are quite a lot of students here. You've all seen that when you think back, from July 20, 1999, all the way up till today, we've gone through a period of time that's not too long but that's felt extremely long, and during this time you've experienced so much. All kinds of things that had never happened before have been concentrated here in this little human world, everything that the old forces arranged in the cosmos to interfere with the Fa-rectification has been at work here, and all the things that have come for the Fa, formed for the Fa, and been created for the Fa have manifested during this time. And what's most notable is that the students in Mainland China have experienced unprecedented persecution, and in this persecution the evil has used all the means of persecution there are, from all times and all lands. The evil is out of tricks.

Looking at the current situation, even though Dafa disciples and I have experienced this period of history that was forced upon us by the old forces, it's also been advantageous for Dafa disciples; the many Dafa disciples' remarkable righteous thoughts and righteous actions are worthy of being treasured, and are, I have to say, truly exceptional. It was forced upon us by the old forces, but a lot of the Dafa disciples have, after all, conducted themselves really well amidst this persecution. While validating the Fa the Dafa disciples have established the mighty virtue of Enlightened Beings that are forged by Dafa, and they've established the unprecedented magnificence of Dafa disciples' validating the Fa during the Fa-rectification. (*Enthusiastic applause*)

You've experienced so much in these few years, and all of you have endured tests in the form of many trials and tribulations in this persecution. It hasn't ended yet—you're still validating the Fa, you're still walking the path that a Dafa disciple should walk. Until the evil factors are completely cleaned out you can't let down your guard, and you should still try even harder to completely eliminate the evil factors that persecute the Fa-rectification and Dafa disciples. Actually, the old forces are nothing more than an enormous tribulation that was set up in the cosmos for my Fa-rectification. Way back when, no being thought I could overcome it. So with that understanding, a lot of the cosmos's high-level beings took the stance of watching from the sidelines, while the beings who've taken part have been using the opportunity of the Fa-rectification to do what they want, with absolutely no second thoughts about it. But as for the matter at hand, many of the cosmos's Kings and Lords know that it is critical to the survival of the firmament; if this Fa-rectification doesn't succeed everything will be gone. Yet they don't want fundamental changes. So it's exactly under the effect of this complicated state of mind that the beings of different levels have demonstrated the true realms deep inside themselves and their behavior.

Because of this complicated state of the high-level beings, the impact on the tiny little Three Realms, and especially on the human world and the sentient beings in the Three Realms, has been just huge. One single thought up there causes huge differences in the behavior of sentient beings at different levels; one single thought up there can cause earth-shaking changes down below. So when that final thing of the old forces is eliminated, that's not the boundary of the cosmic firmament, and the Fa-rectification isn't finished, but at that point the old forces cease to exist further on up, and there's no longer any factor that's related to the old forces; the appearance of the old forces in the firmament was arranged entirely from that point down. So if back when that happened I had really followed the path arranged by the old forces, when I would have reached this point in my Fa-rectification this time it would have ended without changing the status quo, everything that was done would be no different

from the warped characteristics that the old cosmos had before, and as a result the Fa-rectification would have been for nothing. Those gigantic Kings in the firmament thought that no being could overcome such an enormous tribulation, and that it'd be impossible for Fa-rectification to succeed. A lot of the cosmos's Gods said to me, "I wish you success." Those words, you know, they have profound meaning. They thought that it would be absolutely impossible to overcome it, but I did. (*Long, enthusiastic applause*)

In the human world, Dafa disciples have come through in validating the Fa. (*Enthusiastic applause*) You've been through a lot during this process. But because you have human thoughts and lots and lots of attachments that you still haven't been able to let go of, during the process of Dafa disciples' validating the Fa, lots of people have taken detours on their path, and they've made mistakes that a Dafa disciple shouldn't make, and in your cooperation with each other there's often been discord, with people insisting on their own views. But no matter what, I'm telling you, Dafa disciples, the fact that you have come through under such difficult circumstances, that's the greatest mighty virtue, it's unmatched mighty virtue. (*Enthusiastic applause*) Everything is inconsequential compared to Dafa disciples validating the Fa, it's the hugest thing, and you've done it! (*Enthusiastic applause*)

It's outstanding, truly outstanding! Sometimes I look back at the path Dafa disciples have traveled, and I think it's outstanding. And why do I say that? Never in the history of mankind have cultivators validated the Fa, and in the history of the cosmos nothing like Fa-rectification has ever taken place, even Gods had never heard of "Fa-rectification" before, and when it comes to how to validate the Fa in the human world, it is even more true that there is no example to follow. It has all depended on Dafa disciples making their way through this Fa-rectification path and blazing the path of validating the Fa, and they have left—for the future, for the sentient beings of the future, for the human society of the future, and for all the sentient beings in various realms of the future—they've left the way and state of cultivation, of validating the Fa, and of beings' existence at different levels in the future. That's why it is of utmost importance. If you don't walk your path well during this Fa-rectification, it will actually result in losses for the future. The better you walk your path, the more solid and more all-harmonizing-and-never-failing is the path of life you pave for the future. That's no ordinary thing. The Earth appears to be so small, but all the beings in the entire cosmos, all the gigantic cosmic bodies, they've all come down here, and this place has become the focal point of all beings, this place has become the focal point of the cosmos. So nothing that's been done here since the start of the Fa-rectification has been trivial.

Also, the beings you save when you clarify the facts and save sentient beings aren't ordinary human beings. Behind every person there are extensive and deeper cosmic ties. So what you're saving isn't that one person, and it's quite possibly a gigantic group of beings, or even a gigantic group of beings at very high levels. I've said that none of what's been bestowed upon and entrusted to Dafa disciples is simple—it's all really magnificent. But under normal circumstances none of the things we do when we're validating the Fa look like miracles or divine occurrences. They're all just human in form on the surface. That's why with lots of things it looks like we're doing ordinary human things. And especially when it comes to all those people who don't know much about Dafa, they think that all we're doing is ordinary human stuff. But in fact it's different, it is fundamentally different. Our starting point, our goals, and the objective we want to achieve are all different from those of ordinary people. We aren't trying to achieve some ordinary human things among ordinary people. We aren't interested in ordinary people's money, or ordinary people's politics or political power. You are cultivators, and Dafa disciples want to achieve the Consummation of their cultivation. In this Fa-rectification it's been fully shown that what Dafa disciples do can't be done or accomplished by ordinary people. When Dafa disciples validate the Fa, how come one person can do what it would take ten or a hundred people to do? And, while validating the Fa you've seen that the kind of cultivators' mighty virtue that the Dafa disciples in

Mainland China have displayed in the face of death is something ordinary people couldn't achieve—that's not something ordinary people could do. And what's more, this persecution hasn't just gone on for a day or two, it's lasted for a few years now. Being able to come through under that kind of long-term, awful torment—you can't compare that to enduring momentary pain or to something driven by impulse. That's why I say that Dafa disciples are outstanding. Today I can tell you this: Dafa disciples are magnificent, and you've established Dafa's magnificence in validating the Fa in the human world. (*Enthusiastic applause*)

Looking at the current situation, you can't compare it anymore to the situation around July 20th of 1999. Around July 20, 1999, when we were most severely persecuted by that evil, we were pretty much on the defensive; the evil was persecuting us, and we were really laboring to tell the world's people about it. We were in quite a passive position. Now the situation is different. We can say that the evil things at low levels have been destroyed to the point that few remain, and other than the small number of bad people they control, their ability to control the world's people however they please has been pretty much eliminated. As a result, the world's people are waking up and thinking things over, since they've been freed from external controls. This is your achievement in validating the Fa. Also, this entire persecution consists of lies, slander, and the most despicable means that can't bear the light of day. They don't dare to let people know, since the world's people will be shocked once they learn the facts. That's why Dafa disciples' clarifying the facts is the most powerful thing. Exposing the evil, exposing this persecution, that's the most powerful way to eliminate and restrain them.

You've done very well, and you've had that effect. So, as far as this whole persecution goes, today the situation is already pretty different from before. And especially outside of Mainland China, we've now gone from being on the defensive to being on the offensive; those evil beings are on the defensive now, because there are really few evil factors now. And those people in the evil gang who were being used are changing, too. You could say that the evil's attempt to persecute Falun Gong beyond Mainland China has been a complete failure. (*Enthusiastic applause*)

And in Mainland China, too, the evil's persecution is failing. As you've seen, since the evil factors really are few now, the evil beings can only use the media that they still control to make up lies, but people don't believe them anymore. By clarifying the facts inside and outside of China together, Dafa disciples have already made it possible for a huge group of people to learn the facts of the persecution, and even those people who fell behind at one time because they didn't study the Fa diligently, or weren't steadfast, or had just started studying the Fa when the persecution began, even they have stepped forward again. Before, there really were 100 million people learning Dafa in China, and those people have a lot of family and good friends. Everybody is clarifying the facts, and it's already made a huge group of people aware of how evil the persecution is. So what this means is, there are less and less chances for the evil to control people, there are fewer and fewer people who they can control, and people are believing in the evil's slanderous propaganda less and less, and this has made people more and more disgusted with it, and the evil beings themselves are shrinking in number. This is more than terrifying to the evil beings!

The *** Party has never admitted any of its faults to the people. No matter what awful things they do, no matter how awful it is, they always turn around and say, "Our party has always been right," (*audience laughs*) and no matter how much of a crisis its regime is in, they always say, "The situation is totally great." (*Audience laughs*) I'm not trying to start something with the *** Party's regime here. I brought this up because the head of the evil beings that have persecuted us claimed that, "The *** Party has to defeat Falun Gong." But I don't want to defeat you, *** Party, you're not worth it. It's you, *** Party, that has caused your collapse while you have persecuted the people and the masses, and during your persecution you've been encouraging deceit, evil, strife, and corruption, and you've lost

the people's hearts. A lot of people have learned the facts and are thinking things over: "The government would even do something that vicious, it will make up anything. Isn't the government awful?" And especially now that the world's people have learned the facts about the Tiananmen Square [self-immolation], people are reflecting on things, they're thinking everything over, like, "Has the *** Party been doing this all along in all of its political campaigns?"

Half of the Chinese people have been persecuted by the *** Party. Before the *** Party's political power was established, as you know, a lot of wealthy people had their homes ransacked and their property divided up, and they were even executed or sent off to prison. The "Campaign to Suppress Counterrevolutionaries," the "Three Oppositions and Five Oppositions," the "Campaign to Eliminate Counterrevolutionaries," the "Cultural Revolution"—it persecuted a great number of Chinese people in these many many movements. So when it's all added up, more than half of the Chinese people have been subject to various forms of persecution. The *** Party's deliberate, deviated, soul-twisting propaganda truly caused a sort of deviation in the minds of the Chinese people, whereby the Party and the nation of China were mixed together into being one concept, and that's why in many instances, no matter how bad of a thing the *** Party did, the people always thought the government was right. Yet this time it's different. People are thinking it over.

So looking at it from the current situation, a lot of people in Mainland China are calmly and objectively considering these questions. To the evil, that in itself is plenty enough to pose the biggest threat. The evil elements in various dimensions want to ensure that the wicked head scoundrel in Beijing can do evil, so they sealed Beijing off the tightest. The fact that SARS managed to appear in Beijing, and even managed to break into Zhongnanhai and topple a few of the Politburo Standing Committee members, I'll tell you, this is *not* a simple matter of an infectious disease like the world's people think it is. That's where the evil seals things off the tightest. The evil has been annihilated to this degree, to the point that it can't even guard its home nest, so Gods have been able to penetrate the center of its evil. (*Enthusiastic applause*) That head scoundrel took a look and saw that it was all over, so it ran away to Shanghai. It asked people to defend Shanghai with their lives, but what's it talking about? Even ordinary people thought it was irrational—how do you "defend it with your life"? The disease is precisely going after your lives. It won't work even if you use a gun to shoot it, (*Audience laughs*) and even atomic bombs are useless. (*Audience laughs*) Actually, those words were said with an awareness. That's because it's not human, and inside its human skin are wicked rotten spirits, it was those spirits talking—the home nest has been lost, so it wants people to defend Shanghai to the death. Could it be defended successfully? Even the home nest that you sealed off the tightest was penetrated, could Shanghai be defended? Immediately SARS sprung up all over Shanghai. "Cover it up!" But what it's covering up now aren't the figures that were collected. It doesn't collect the numbers anymore. It told the subordinate officials, "Wherever SARS pops up, the official in charge there will be immediately dismissed." So no officials dare to report it. Just like that, SARS "disappeared." It doesn't matter in the least to the head scoundrel how many people die, all that matters is sustaining its own self. So now the evil doesn't dare to stay in Shanghai either, and it's scurrying around from place to place. (*Audience laughs*) Then looking at it from this situation, those evil factors can't hold up anymore, and their situation is hopeless.

Never mind that the evil beings are so rampant, they're all quaking with fear and trepidation, they're afraid. Of course, before being completely cleaned out the wicked beings will still direct evil people to do bad things. The evil people lose all rationality when they're being controlled by the evil, but once they calm down they're afraid. Every phone call from our students shocks them to the point that they can't sleep at night, they're that afraid. And that evil head scoundrel has realized its fate, "Nothing can

be done about flowers falling away”⁵—there’s nothing it can do. The constant escalation of the persecution of Falun Gong has left them with no way out. Step by step they escalated things, and they’ve been anxious to suppress it and beat it down in one shot, so they never left a way out for themselves. The deceitful propaganda is still constantly being cranked out, and they have no way to explain themselves to the Chinese people, they have no way to explain themselves to people around the world, and the Chinese government has always been spreading lies to deceive the public, fabricating rumors, making up false news, and causing the deaths of so many common, mainstream people through persecution. How wicked—could this regime still be allowed to exist? Faced with a future society that has a complete system of law, those people can’t escape justice! (*Enthusiastic applause*) Could they not be afraid? They’re afraid.

Of course, all of this, whether you’re talking about the persecution or the evil going towards its demise, this thing isn’t finished. So as Dafa disciples you can’t let down your guard in validating the Fa, and we should do it even more diligently. And for those of you who haven’t done well or who stepped forward late, for you especially, you must seize the final chance to do well, because when there’s really no more evil this affair will come to an end.

If this thing hadn’t happened, then as far as Dafa disciples are concerned, I would have completely settled through positive means all of the past favors and old scores that Dafa disciples would have met with during their cultivation, as well as the various troubles, and longstanding past relationships and old scores, of the sentient beings of every variety that I have encountered during the Fa-rectification. Yet this persecution did happen, and it’s true that some people did poorly and acted unacceptably, so since you didn’t do well, you should seize the day and make up for the losses caused by your not doing well. You’re Dafa disciples, so if you want to do well going forward you need to focus on cultivation more.

Each one of the three things that Dafa disciples should do is very important. Everything of your Consummation in individual cultivation is intertwined with your validating the Fa, so you have to do well, and you have to find and overcome your shortcomings in the course of Fa-rectification. Why is it that the students who live in some areas cooperate well, while the students in some other areas don’t cooperate so well? You can’t say that it’s because we have special agents there causing interference or blame it on this or on that. Actually, I talked about this long ago: When your minds are very righteous, a special agent wouldn’t dare to stay where you are. He only has two options. One is to be assimilated by the righteous field, since the pure and righteous field that Dafa disciples give off purges everything that’s bad in a person’s mind. The pure, righteous field would disintegrate it, disintegrate everything that’s unrighteous in the person’s consciousness, and that’s another manifestation of salvation and a reflection of compassion. When everything bad in a person’s consciousness has been disintegrated and he’s only left with a simple, pure mind, then that person will recognize and appreciate what’s upright and good. So hasn’t he been assimilated? Then the other option is to run away as quickly as he can, because the bad person’s thought karma and bad concepts are afraid of being disintegrated.

So why is it that some people are able to pry their way into where we are? Of course, there really aren’t many of them. And why is it that during those times some people still provide the evil with information? It’s because our field isn’t pure and righteous in those places, and it’s not able to have the effect of saving sentient beings and rescuing lives. It can’t shock the evil. Isn’t that our own problem?! Still, though, some people go on and on about it, talking about which ones are special agents and about this person or that person. But isn’t it a problem on our part? It is. So from now on you should do better in studying the Fa, and that way your righteous thoughts will be stronger and you’ll have a greater

⁵ Translator’s note: A line from the famous Chinese poem “Huan Xi Sha” by Yan Shu.

ability for saving sentient beings.

Also, we often have some students who talk irresponsibly. When there are different opinions, instead of looking at things positively and calmly, they throw out a few cold words and just shove aside what other people have to offer. Bringing out good ideas and cooperating with each other with care is the right thing to do. And especially when it comes to doing certain things as a whole you should cooperate with each other even better. It's just like bringing that evil, head scoundrel to court this time, it requires everyone's cooperation, and you have voices echoing from all around the world. So looking at it that way, your cooperation has been quite powerful. I think it's been pretty good recently, but there are still areas to improve on.

What do I mean by "areas to improve on"? Yesterday a student asked me, "Master, why has the United Nations Human Rights Commission turned into what it has? The U.S. brought up China's human rights problems several times but each time its efforts were voted down, and in the end nobody would even bring up the topic. Later on, even the chair position was assumed by a government that seriously violates human rights." We should think things over calmly, and sometimes we really can end up seeing things clearly. It's not that the righteous elements have stopped working. It's that sometimes it's easy for the old forces to take advantage of the gaps in what we do. For example, when we do things a lot of us use human thinking to come up with ideas, and you've been trying everything you can to end this persecution and you want to have ordinary people end it. Some people think, "Why doesn't the U.S. use force to get rid of the evil scoundrel regime? Why doesn't it go to war?" And some think, "There are so many democratic countries in the world. Why don't they raise their voices? What's the United Nations doing now?" And that's how things look on the surface. But actually, I can tell you what that reflects: We're too dependent on human beings. If human beings were to end the persecution, what a disgrace that would be to Dafa disciples! We wouldn't have validated the Fa, we wouldn't have established mighty virtue in the persecution, and our Dafa disciples wouldn't have blazed their own path. I've said that this path is to be left for the future. Then isn't this matter critical? That's how the old forces have been able to take advantage of the gaps. You placed your hopes in ordinary people, so the old forces had the resolution that they sponsored voted down. And as you kept putting your hopes in ordinary people they made it so that your resolution couldn't even be raised and so that the U.S. was kicked out of the Human Rights Commission. You still placed your hopes in ordinary people, so they made a country that violates human rights the chair. We should become more rational by learning from these lessons. We've gone through so much, and through these lessons we should gradually get clearheaded.

So as for your suing the head scoundrel this time, I've been observing and watching you. When I discovered certain problems I told some individual Dafa disciples, "We can't be too attached to ordinary people." If we truly bring it to court, if we truly manage to sue it successfully, if we're truly able to push this thing forward, then it will have been done by our Dafa disciples. Wherever there's a problem, that is where we should go clarify the facts—judges, lawyers, and the various people involved in the suit are all people we should clarify the facts to. Once the human minds are rectified, the court will stand on the side of justice. Then won't it be our Dafa disciples doing that? Won't it result from Dafa disciples validating the Fa? Won't it be the accomplishment of Dafa disciples? You can't call it ordinary people validating the Fa, it's Dafa disciples walking their own path. That's the little bit that makes things different. (Teacher laughs) I've been watching this. Don't let the old forces take advantage of any gaps.

Actually, speaking from another angle, being able to bring the evil to court and being able to sue it, I can tell you, that's because the evil has decreased to such an extent. It no longer has the ability to deal with things. It's too occupied to take care of anything beyond ensuring its own life. You've seen how

one after another the cases you filed have been accepted and successfully litigated. That's telling. But some of you are still thinking, "What's going on?" It isn't about something going on. It's just that the evil is on its way down. July 20th of 1999 was when the evil was starting to peak, and it peaked sometime around 2000 and 2001, and now it's falling back down, falling down toward the bottom.

Eradicating Falun Gong around the world is something the evil no longer dares to even dream about. They already know it's impossible to eradicate Falun Gong in Mainland China, and what's more, people are waking up. But they've backed themselves into a corner and there's no way they can turn back now. They keep escalating things and keep piling on more and more accusations. They've placed themselves up so high and their tactics are so outrageous that they couldn't climb down even if a ladder was set up for them. They can't climb down, but they can't keep standing either, so they're going to fall. Before this persecution Dafa was spread by word of mouth, and it didn't have too much of an impact in the international community. But as this persecution takes place it's constantly enhancing the reputation and name recognition of Dafa, and constantly pushing it onto the international stage and toward the summit of the human world. This, too, was one of the old forces' objectives in arranging the persecution. Isn't that what's been happening? Humankind is paying more and more attention. People still have a side that is being restrained, but if the restraining elements were eliminated then the attitude the world's people have toward Falun Gong wouldn't be like it is today. It would be similar to the state of mind you had when you first obtained the Fa, where as soon as you opened up this Fa you knew what it was. Right now the inner meaning of the Fa isn't displayed to more of the world's people, so people can't see it. That is because that's something reserved for the next stage. If the future people were to obtain the Fa, and blend and mix in with our Dafa disciples today, a lot of things would be hard to handle. So I haven't made too much of an effort to push that forward. But a lot of people are studying the Fa, are cultivating, and are entering Dafa. That's in fact establishing a foundation for the future. They are the future cultivators, and for that reason, that too is an aspect of Dafa disciples' saving sentient beings.

Looking at the overall situation, that's in fact how things are at present. Don't overlook any of the things that Dafa disciples do. Your every word, every flyer, every keystroke, every telephone call, and every letter is having a huge impact. Beings that have come to understand the facts become mobile media, and they too clarify the facts. It's had a big impact on society. You, too, have seen the accomplishments and the side of yours that's powerful. So going forward, Dafa disciples should still do these three things: Cultivate yourselves well, clarify the facts, and send righteous thoughts to eliminate the evil.

There's another thing. As I just said, right now the evil elements have been destroyed to the point that very few are left. The evil elements I'm talking about are those messed up and strange beings in other dimensions. They're all really low-level, yet they come from different colossal firmament systems and have piled up here. They're there when you open up one dimension, and they're there when you open up another, so purging them is done in one level after another. Sometimes you wonder, "Why's there more after I clear them away, and why's there still more after I clear those away?" That's how it is. Also, they're being destroyed as a whole, so their total number is decreasing, and they're decreasing in different dimensional levels and planes.

There's another thing that I've never told you before, and that's because I couldn't talk about it too early on, and Master does these things in order. When I tell you to eliminate and oppose the old forces, I mean you should completely oppose the persecution and destroy those elements. We have in fact done that, and we've been destroying them. We've also annihilated in large quantities those evil beings that were used by the old forces, and the overall Fa-rectification has gotten nearer and nearer, it's annihilating the evil from top to bottom on a large scale, and you're also annihilating the evil at

different levels and planes by sending righteous thoughts. And then there's a final type of element. What type of element is it? You know, I give you automatic mechanisms for increasing *gong* and other elements such as the Falun. Also, my Law Bodies are personally looking after Dafa disciples, and my Law Bodies appointed some Gods who can truly assist with Fa-rectification to help. But, the old forces have systematically arranged their elements, too, and in that way they specifically arranged everything they wanted. So this has put every student under the influence of specific arrangements by the old forces, and under the influence of those old force beings. Those beings that the old forces arranged to do specific things aren't those messed up, low-level spirit or rotten ghost kind of beings that I've talked about. There are Buddhas, Daos and Gods among them, though they're all of low levels, and here at this lowest level that is the human world they're doing things given to them by the old forces. They manifest in tiny sizes, and sometimes you see them as a shiny little flash of light that darts across. The old forces arranged even more of them around me. But I've been eliminating them in large quantities.

So how do they act? They have no views of their own. It's as if their sole purpose is to complete their missions. Whatever the old forces arranged for them to do back then, they do that to the end. They can hear whatever Fa I teach but they refuse to change. They won't rest until they finish what they want to do. That's because they think just like the old forces do, they think that *they* are doing Fa-rectification, that they're Gods, and that they need to complete the old forces' decrees, and they want to keep doing that. At present, even though the old forces have been eliminated and the remaining rotten spirits at the lowest levels can no longer have that much of an effect, many forms of interference, many elements of persecution, the persecution that's manifesting in different regions in Mainland China, and the deceitful propaganda, those are all the result of their controlling wicked people's minds. As your Master, I don't acknowledge them at all. They can't see anything that I truly want to do, so they mess around and mess around inside before my Fa-rectification arrives, and they've come up with a set of things. Once the Fa-rectification arrives I'll completely purge them and everything they've done, instantly re-creating things that are truly of the future. The old beings can't see the process that's after the Fa-rectification, and that's because they belong to the past, so they can't see the future. They can't see the things of the future cosmos, so they're stubbornly attached to what they want, and they've been doing those things all along. So, for us to not acknowledge anything that the old forces are doing, to not acknowledge the persecution and interference with the Fa-rectification, to have the persecution end sooner, and to walk our own paths, we can't do that without purging this form of interference of theirs, for they want to complete the tasks given to them by the old forces.

From the perspective of the overall Fa-rectification, they've committed extremely grievous sins and done great evil. Even though the old forces have been fundamentally eliminated, those that do specific things also have to be eliminated. They're the old forces' real behind-the-scenes helpers, and they're attached to everything they're doing. I've said many times that the evil beings and the old forces have taken advantage of the time before the Fa-rectification arrives and the gaps created by high-level cosmic bodies coming down, and have thrust upon me karma and the rotten matter in the cosmos and the human world, and they've wanted to have me endure all of it and eliminate it. I tell them, "You will be held accountable for everything you're doing." They don't pay it any heed, and say, "You jumped into the dung pit, so how could your body be free of dung?" What they mean is: This place is filthy, so how could you come here and not have those things happen to you? This is the extent of the highest understanding of the old forces' wisdom, and it reflects the state of this era's cosmos—that's how they all see things. But what they couldn't anticipate was, whatever I encounter in Fa-rectification—and this includes everything in Fa-rectification that's not what I wanted but was forced—that's the real obstacle to Fa-rectification and the final manifestation of the cosmos's formation-stasis-degeneration. They say that this material dimension is filthy, but, this dimension's filthiness is caused by the differences among the levels of the cosmos's structure. That doesn't truly count as being filthy. So when a God comes here

and can't go back, it's not because that filth can't be washed off, but because the realm of his being has been lowered. It's because of the influence of various different concepts and different beings in the cosmos that they can't go back. So what's really polluting me, creating trouble for me, bringing the Fa-rectification trouble, and persecuting Dafa disciples is actually not those filthy elements here but is the cosmos's beings' warped concepts manipulating those elements. Those low-level elements are resistance that the old forces specifically produced, and they have brought about those cases of persecution and different forms of trouble. That's the real pollution. So when they say, "You jumped into the dung pit, so how could your body be free of dung?" the dung is not the difficulty or the obstacle, in actuality the real dung is precisely those old forces and all of the beings that try to force something on the Fa-rectification. So the real impediment to the Fa-rectification is *them*. It's precisely those so-called beings of high realms that have manipulated low-level beings to do their bidding, regarded beings inside the Three Realms as completely worthless, and are the cause of the many elements of difficulty for the beings that came down in the past and couldn't return.

So as I told you in the past, I've said that I knew I was bound to encounter difficulties in the Fa-rectification, and I knew to what extent that would happen. I was actually telling you that everything was under control. In fact I was saying that I knew they would do these things and that the old forces would show up. The cosmos is no longer good enough, so they were going to do those things. Everything that they're attached to, everything that they've arranged, and everything that they want—all these things were inevitable. Righteous Gods of course wouldn't behave like the low-level, bad beings that recklessly do evil things. They of course all act in a good way. But that goodness is warped, and there are attachments behind the goodness. Also, precisely because of their good behavior, the obstacles they've created are the most effective at deceiving both themselves and others. If it weren't for Fa-rectification it really would be hard to break through those things.

So to thoroughly eliminate all the evil elements, from now on when Dafa disciples send righteous thoughts they should completely clean out those old forces' behind-the-scenes helpers, meaning, eliminate them. They're specifically carrying out everything that the old forces want to have done. Only after they're eliminated can more sentient beings be saved, and my Law Bodies and the righteous Gods who truly uphold Dafa will be able to look after things comprehensively. Start to completely eliminate them. The majority of them are at a low level and directly control rotten spirits. It's very easy to eliminate them since their levels are rather low, but they are hiding inside the most surface dimension.

What I just told you is very important. From now on when we send righteous thoughts, the most important thing is targeting them and the remaining rotten spirits that disrupt the Fa. Of course, just keep sending righteous thoughts like you did before. Now that I've talked about it, you know about it, and having a clear objective when you send righteous thoughts will do. There's no need to think about things that are too specific. Have this objective in mind: Completely end the old forces' involvement. (Enthusiastic applause)

The reason I didn't tell you this too early on is that previously the old forces' whole system and the low-level beings had created very complicated elements, and if they were cleaned out along with all kinds of messed up beings these things would get really chaotic. Now is the right time. I've also arranged righteous Gods and my Law Bodies to completely take over, watch them fully, prevent them from disrupting things and make sure that no problems come up.

Another thing is, a lot of people in the audience are from other countries, and a lot of people have positions of responsibility. When Dafa disciples validate the Fa, it doesn't matter which country or region you're in, or which ethnic group you belong to—there are no such distinctions among Dafa disciples. You're all one body. For those of you in the audience who are of the yellow race, your soul

might not be that type of being. If you're a Caucasian, you might not truly be a Caucasian. In other words, during cultivation you shouldn't be attached to those things, those things don't matter. So you should cooperate well with each other. Right now Dafa disciples are becoming more and more clearheaded because they've experienced so much and they're becoming more and more rational, so when you work together you're much more in harmony than before. The better you cooperate with each other as a whole the more powerful you are, and the more powerful you are the greater your impact. As a matter of fact, during the persecution and as you validate the Fa, what you see in the human world is pretty calm. But in other dimensions the influence is huge, and the impact is huge. Every time you have an event there's a big battle between good and evil in the heavens. Of course, the evil has become less and less now, and it's as if they're being swept away. But of course, as long as the evil still exists it's going to cause harm. We cannot let our guard down, and we still need to cooperate even better and communicate with each other often.

Walk the last leg of the Dafa disciples' journey well! More will be said in the future. I don't want to say too many things just for the sake of complimenting you, and I don't want to praise you too much. You're all Dafa disciples so Master gets straight to the point in talking about anything. I'm not going to say more at this conference since you need to eat lunch in a bit. (Long, enthusiastic applause)

Future Great Enlightened Beings, (Master smiles) in this final phase of validating the Fa establish your greatest mighty virtue! (Long, enthusiastic applause)

Li Hongzhi

June 22, 2003 in Chicago

Teaching the Fa at the 2003 Washington DC Fa Conference

Hello everyone. (*Enthusiastic applause*)

There are so many people at this Fa conference, one conference hall can't hold everybody. Actually, I've already been to four different meetings in a row. (*Applause*)

Between July 20th of 1999 and July 20th of this year, four full years have gone by. The persecution has lasted for four years, and in those four years Dafa disciples have endured unprecedented trials. We don't acknowledge this persecution, but it has happened. In this persecution, how you, as Dafa disciples, put an end to the persecution that the old forces have forced upon us and negate the arrangements by the old forces, how you manage to walk the righteous path of a Dafa disciple, how you save sentient beings during this persecution—all of these are responsibilities bestowed upon Dafa disciples by history. Dafa disciples must do those things and do them well. And what's happened proves that you have done really well. You've shaken the cosmos and stunned all the beings in the cosmos.

The magnitude of this evil persecution isn't something that people could imagine, and there are terrifying factors behind it. This persecution against the masses is different from the persecutions of the past. The purpose of their persecution and the tactics they've used are so base, cruel, and violent, and they do their utmost to hide it from the world. Rotten ghosts and the world's scoundrels have utilized the regime's power to orchestrate an unprecedented persecution that is the most despicable and base, the most indicative of their evil nature, and disguised by the worst indecency and shamelessness, and it's all based on lies. The persecution against Dafa disciples has been grim, and the persecution of sentient beings has likewise been grave. Humankind feels that this is an abuse of man's human rights, freedom of belief, and basic humanity. In reality, it's severe damage and interference by the evil factors in the cosmos to the Fa-rectification and to the entire cosmos's moving toward the future. All that have taken part in this persecution will have to be held responsible to history, and none that have participated will be able to escape from the future positions they've determined for themselves during this period.

In this persecution, so many of the world's people have been poisoned, and for so many sentient beings, because of the minds of the world's people having been poisoned, the gigantic cosmic bodies that are connected to them have disintegrated. Why did Fa-rectification have to be done? To save the beings in the cosmos—save all the beings in the cosmos, normalize bad beings and turn them into good ones, have sinful beings be rid of their sins, and have those warped beings reconstructed into good ones again. Dafa brings humankind these wonderful things, and it brings the beings in the cosmos these wonderful things. But during this persecution many beings have indeed lost their chances to be saved and have been denied salvation. For Dafa disciples, this suppression that you've encountered is unprecedented. On the other hand, though, because you are Dafa disciples, you're able to confront these things, and you're able to overcome this huge tribulation. What has happened proves that you have made it through, and the evil's momentum is declining fast. In the human world—whether it's in Mainland China or other places—you've seen that this evil drama no longer has the rampant momentum it had back then, and this has reduced the losses suffered by sentient beings and Dafa disciples during this persecution. This wouldn't be possible without the joint efforts of every Dafa disciple. Of course, Fa-rectification's massive force is pressing forward at an even faster pace. But before Fa-rectification's massive force arrives, in order to avoid and lessen the poisoning and harming of Dafa disciples, of all of humankind, and of even broader related groups of beings, Dafa disciples have given so, so much to lessen the losses. Every Dafa disciple on the path of validating the Fa is fully using his abilities and putting to use the skills and knowledge he's acquired in the ordinary society in

his efforts to validate the Fa, save sentient beings, and clarify the facts, and they've done really well.

Actually, what ordinary people have suffered in this persecution is even more severe. The propagandizing of the vicious and poisonous lies has caused a lot of people to become unsavable and unkeepable. And along with these people who can no longer be saved or kept, where they came from, the larger and numerous groups of beings at different high levels who sustain their lives, they too will have to disintegrate. When we talk about it, it's only a few words, but these kinds of gigantic changes that are actually, truly taking place in the cosmos are horrific. When far off cosmic bodies disintegrate it looks to people like a magnificent sight and something to explore. But when the celestial bodies right before people disintegrate, humankind won't think it's a magnificent sight. And when those enormous cosmic bodies and gigantic beings disintegrate, how horrific is that? So many lives are in there! Countless and measureless beings will be destroyed, and all of it is the result of what the old factors in the cosmos have done. They have arranged in my Fa-rectification, based on the deviated notions in the cosmos, the weeding out or keeping of what they want—they arranged everything that they want. None of that was my wish, and it has severely interfered with the Fa-rectification and severely interfered with the salvation of sentient beings. So all of those factors that have taken part in it and interfered with the Fa-rectification, all the way down to the evil beings here among human beings, they'll all be held responsible to history and they absolutely cannot get away with it.

From the perspective of Dafa disciples' validating the Fa, we don't acknowledge the old forces' arrangements, but I knew that the old forces would come out—it was just a question of which form they'd take. The reason being, the Fa-rectification wouldn't impact just a small number of beings, but the beings in the entire cosmos, no being would be able to escape this gigantic change in the cosmos, so the affected beings would all have their own understandings of the Fa-rectification, and they would thus look at this Fa-rectification affair using their own notions. The higher the level of a participant, the bigger the interference to the Fa-rectification. One single thought or one single move by him will cause total upheaval down below. So this persecution was ultimately caused by the different understandings at the cosmos's uppermost levels. What they wanted has brought about the interference to the Fa-rectification of the cosmos. So I knew all of this would happen, and I knew that the beings at lower levels would, when they were impacted, come out to do their things some way or other. So Dafa disciples' listening to the Fa, obtaining the Fa, cultivating, and establishing a foundation for Dafa in this world—this force—it's exactly for the disciples to save sentient beings during this period and establish Dafa disciples' mighty virtue, and thus become the most sacred, Dafa-forged, beings. Many Dafa disciples made grand vows in history to save sentient beings and do what they should do in the last stage of the cosmos's formation-stasis-degeneration-destruction.

During this Fa-rectification Dafa disciples have been fulfilling their promises and have fully done what they should have. Those who've done well, in particular, have fulfilled their pledges. No matter what, in this persecution, regardless of how much a Dafa disciple has been persecuted, what awaits a Dafa disciple is the most wonderful. That is because what's seen as "life" and "death" in the human world aren't true life and death for a being, so during this persecution however much a Dafa disciple has been persecuted, that's how much honor and glory he'll receive. So looking at it from this perspective, Dafa disciples, strictly speaking, no matter how much you're suffering right now in the persecution, cultivators don't care about the gains and losses of this world, and cultivation is really to seek Consummation and a being's eternal glory. So as Dafa disciples, you have in fact gained an opportunity to temper yourselves, to validate the Fa, and to proudly showcase your mighty virtue as a Righteous Enlightened Being of Dafa in this environment (*applause*). It's other sentient beings who are really being poisoned, and they will truly lose their lives. Even though those beings who've been persecuted have lost everything in this world, the persecutors themselves will lose everything of theirs forever. The cosmos's Fa principles are just, for sure.

So for Dafa disciples, no matter how harsh this period of history that we're going through is, there's nothing to grieve over. What we're thinking about is saving sentient beings, and you should fulfill [the aspirations of] a being who came for the Fa and the significance of your coming here. So we have nothing to regret, and what awaits Dafa disciples are all wonderful things. The saddest is those people in the world who've been persecuted and the old forces themselves. Their ending is what's truly sad.

We've gone from July 20th of 1999 to today, and even though the time hasn't been that long, it feels to you like it's been forever. You have personally experienced the environment of terror created by the evil forces, and felt the agony and difficulty brought to our cultivators' families and the hardships brought to our cultivators from the psychological pressure, so it feels like it's been forever. But actually, in the overall Fa-rectification of the cosmos it's just an instant. The times of different dimensions have resulted in your sense of the length of time. In one minute or one second, a being can complete a lifetime that feels endless to him, and in ten thousand years a being can complete a lifetime that feels really quick. Actually, over the course of the whole Fa-rectification, a lot of our students thought something back when the situation was really tough, which was, "When is this persecution going to end?" These days there aren't that many people who say that, you're very rational and are more clearheaded when you face the evil, you see what the various evil beings are trying to accomplish, and you understand full well our responsibilities as Dafa disciples.

Actually, when we look back after we've gone through this period of history, the feeling you get really is pretty special. We've made it through such a severe environment, and we've come through the most evil period of human history. That's because it wasn't just humans' doing but the result of beings from the entire cosmos focusing here. The manifestations of this persecution in the human world are manifestations of all of the beings of different levels being here and using human actions here, so what Dafa disciples have been enduring isn't just agony and pressure brought about by humans, but things brought about by the involvement of high-level cosmic bodies, and even the involvement of more cosmic bodies at different levels. All beings in the cosmos are watching humankind intently, and the Three Realms has become the cosmos's focal point.

Of course, this persecution is something that high-level old beings started plotting ages ago in history. I've said that the Three Realms was created for the Fa-rectification. In the cosmos there was really no such thing as the Three Realms before. Some students have asked me, "Master, do other colossal firmaments have a Three Realms?" I told them that they don't. The Fa-rectification of the cosmos was to take place right here, it was to be done right here, so the Three Realms was created here. Every blade of grass, every tree, every speck of soil, every stone, from people to things—all the beings have come for this Fa. Looking at it from the vantage point of the whole cosmos, the time that's passed is not that long. But, from the vantage point of the beings at different levels of the cosmos, the time has seemed endless. A lot of beings no longer know why the Three Realms was created, and they've forgotten the ultimate purpose of creating the Three Realms. I said before that everything came for this Fa. All of the beings in the Three Realms came for the Fa, were created for the Fa, and were forged for the Fa. But, not all of them play a positive role in their actions. Back then the old forces, with their arrangements, believed that those that wouldn't play a positive role in their actions would make contributions to the Fa just the same, so the old forces thought that those beings should reach Consummation too. I say no! This persecution itself isn't acknowledged in the Fa-rectification, and all of those who play a negative role are taking part in the old forces' persecution and will be weeded out. This is for sure, no matter who you were in the past.

A lot of students have said that Master is so merciful. Strictly speaking, in fact I'm not amidst mercy. Neither am I amidst evil. If I were amidst mercy, the negative beings would be completely weeded out in the cosmos, in which case the balance would be lost in the cosmos, and as a result all beings would

find life meaningless. If I were amidst evil, how would the good beings survive? The cosmos would become a demonic body. I don't have any of that, and I'm not amidst any of that. But I know about all of it, I'm able to control all of it, and I'm balancing all of it. The Fa's principles in the cosmos are absolutely just. I came with good thoughts, and I came with the wish to save all beings. (*Enthusiastic applause*) What's taken place has proven that this is how I've been doing things, and it's precisely the old forces who have interfered with the Fa-rectification.

At present, the old forces have already been completely weeded out. From the ones in the highest forms all the way down to the so-called Gods and warped beings who have, as arranged by the old forces, taken part in the Fa-rectification and affected the Fa-rectification at different levels, all of them have been weeded out entirely. They're gone. And those dark minions who actually carry out specific tasks are being completely weeded out, too. It's not that we aren't merciful. As a result of the damage they've done, enormous, measureless, and countless beings have been destroyed. The reason is, if those beings weren't destroyed, the Fa-rectification wouldn't be able to press forward, and it wouldn't be able to catch up and seize the final chance before the entire firmament ultimately dissolves. So it's a serious issue.

Turning the topic to things here, none of the things we encounter in the human world are accidental, and they aren't just things that happen at this human place. When Dafa disciples validate the Fa and save sentient beings, we can't tell people higher truths of the Fa because human beings aren't able to accept or understand them. So that alone makes it quite hard to save sentient beings. All beings have a side of them that's aware, but they also have a side that's unaware. A person's human surface in this world, which coexists in this world alongside Dafa disciples, is exactly the part that's unaware. And when it comes to that unaware part, as it fights to benefit itself in the human world postnatally, [the person's] mind is filled with bad factors. And this is especially true in recent times, where humankind's morality has declined drastically, and on top of that, the *** Party that's appeared in China has caused the minds of the people in China to become twisted and warped, and they aren't even able to tell what's good and what's bad. All of these things have severely affected the salvation of sentient beings, and they've made it hard for Dafa disciples to cultivate themselves and save sentient beings. But as Dafa disciples you can't give up just because it's hard, and that's because this is a responsibility bestowed upon you by history, and it's a magnificent, grand vow you made and something you've waited a long time for.

While they're clarifying the facts some students often run into people who don't want to listen, don't accept things, or are even antagonistic. You shouldn't let one person's opposition be a mental setback for you or make you lose the courage to save sentient beings. A Dafa disciple... what's a Dafa disciple? He's a being created by the most magnificent Fa, (*enthusiastic applause*) and he's rock-solid and as indestructible as diamond. How could a few words from an ordinary, bad person count for anything? "However evil you are, you can't change me. I simply must accomplish my historic mission, and I must do what a Dafa disciple should do." That's [how you should be,] because we should be clear that in human society and among the beings in this cosmos, there are ones that can no longer be saved, and there are even a lot who can no longer hear the truth. You'll run into this kind of person when you clarify the facts. You should be clear and rational: we're saving those who can be saved. But as Dafa disciples, you cultivate kindness, so you should be compassionate. Whether they're receptive or not, you should always treat them with compassion, and you can't get competitive with ordinary people or look at sentient beings with human thoughts. Just do whatever you should with compassion, regardless of whether they're receptive or not. Compassion comes from a person's cultivation, and it's not something that's acted out; it comes from deep inside, and it's not something done to show others. It's something that exists eternally, and it doesn't change with the passage of time or changes in circumstances.

When we've passed through this part of history and we take a look back, if every Dafa disciple is able to say, "I've done what I was supposed to do," (*applause*) then that's the most extraordinary. (*Long applause*) But, there are a lot of students who've done a disservice to themselves, and who haven't fulfilled what they wanted to do and what history bestowed upon them. The good thing is, this persecution hasn't yet ended completely, so there are still chances. As for how to make amends and what to do, that's up to you. Since the day I began teaching the Fa I've said that what I do is responsible and honorable toward human beings, toward society, and toward all sentient beings. (*Enthusiastic applause*) Everything I've said will come true in the future, and the vows I made will be fulfilled in the future. (*Applause*)

No matter how long of a historic process the human race has gone through over the course of Earth's existence, be it thousands or tens of thousands of years, in the eyes of Gods it's been a quick process. It's the time here that has created a difference in time for sentient beings. As beings who came into the Three Realms, as Dafa disciples in the Three Realms, you all know that this Three Realms didn't exist before in the cosmos. As I've discussed a number of times while teaching the Fa, the reason it was created was for the Fa-rectification to make use of it here during the final stage of formation-stasis-degeneration-destruction. If it couldn't truly play a Fa-rectification role during the Fa-rectification, or, in other words, if this Fa-rectification were to fail, or during the Fa-rectification at this human place the human beings didn't show a positive attitude toward Dafa one bit and Dafa disciples didn't perform well, if any one facet didn't go well, then the Three Realms wouldn't exist in the future cosmos. To put it another way, this place here would disappear in the near future. But Dafa disciples have done really well and accomplished what Dafa disciples were supposed to, humankind has shown its positive side, and I've harmonized here what I wanted to have. (*Applause*).

Even though some beings have taken part in the persecution, and a lot of beings have been indifferent, and a lot of beings haven't been supportive even though they have the ability to do so, the great majority of people, the great majority of all the beings, are sympathetic and supportive, which means they've shown their positive side. With you being able to cultivate here, being able to validate the Fa here, and Master being able to complete what he wanted to accomplish here, the sentient beings here have created opportunities for their future. So in the future the Three Realms will exist forever. (*Enthusiastic applause*)

Recently we've done a lot of specific things, and you've seen that. You know, I said at a previous Fa-conference that this year would be an eventful year. A lot of things have in fact happened since the beginning of the year. As far as the political gang of scoundrels in Mainland China goes, several high-ranking officials who've persecuted Dafa have been found guilty in U.S. courts, and the head scoundrel has been sued in court; there's the SARS epidemic that you all know about warning humankind, the troubles brought by Hong Kong's Article 23, the huge flood in Mainland China, and notably, the TV station that exposes the persecution airing globally. All of these things have dealt serious blows to the evil. They consider all these things to be disasters, and that includes Dafa's current situation. All of them might appear to be natural manifestations, but if the evil beings hadn't been purged away a lot of things couldn't have been accomplished. That's because there were their factors behind humans, and they were taking the place of humans—they weren't just controlling people, but replacing people. When you were clarifying the facts to people they were controlling people and making them turn a deaf ear to you. It was demons exerting control.

As of today, we can say this: for the evil forces, the old forces, the evil people in this world, for all those factors that persecuted the Fa, they've lost the battle. Looking ahead, the situation is going to quickly go through even greater changes. And that means that this period of history will be behind us soon, and we'll soon enter the next stage of things. Some Dafa disciples always used to ask, "Why

aren't there many new students during this period of time when we spread the Fa?" There was of course the factor of the evil exerting control as well as the factor of the old forces blocking them. The reason I didn't demolish those directly is that the next batch of people belongs to the next batch of affairs. This period is for Dafa disciples to become mature in their cultivation, save sentient beings, and validate the Fa. Looking at the current situation, the enormous current of Fa-rectification is soon going to gush over here, so a lot of things are being demolished bit by bit, and the most surface dimension is being reached bit by bit. That's why in some regions new students have started to come one after another. And if that's the case, the overall situation is going to change really fast.

With all of what I just talked about, all the same, we've made it through this part of history, and whether it's been a privileged gain for us or something forced upon us by the old forces, during the persecution Dafa disciples have done what we Dafa disciples are supposed to do. To put it another way, during this persecution you've established the mighty virtue that Dafa disciples should have. You've done what you should for the sentient beings, you've done what you should for yourselves, and you deserve to be the Enlightened Beings you're about to become. (*Enthusiastic applause*)

I don't want to say more about the more specific things, since recently our Fa conferences have been quite frequent, I've said a good amount, and you're still in the process of trying to understand a lot of things. A lot of the things I talked about aren't just superficial things, so you're still studying them. So this time it's only because this Fa conference of ours is so grand that I wanted to come and meet with our students. And notably there are a lot of students from far away and isolated areas who haven't seen me for a long time, so I wanted to take this opportunity to meet with our students, to see everybody, that's all. (*Long, enthusiastic applause*)

Li Hongzhi
July 20, 2003

Master's Comment on a Student's Article

The ideas in this article are laid out well, and the author has a very clear understanding of Master's Fa-rectification and Dafa disciples' validation of the Fa. If all Dafa disciples can be as rational and clearheaded as this, and have righteous thoughts and righteous actions in validating the Fa, then there will be no persecution, and there will be no gaps for the evil to exploit. It is not important to me who wrote the article. As long as what is displayed [in a given article] is something effective for the students' validating of the Fa, I encourage it-even in the case of an article written by someone who opposes us. That is because we are in fact saving all beings, and as long as the persecution has not ended and Dafa students' cultivation journey has not been completed, it presents people with opportunities and gives them a hope.

Li Hongzhi

August 29, 2003

Revised on October 8, 2005

Teaching the Fa at the Discussion on Creating Fine Art

The students here are all involved in creating fine art, and all have professional skills. I'll just talk about whatever comes to mind, and I'll only talk from the Fa-truths. Fine art is very important to mankind. Like other forms of human culture, it can play a guiding role with respect to people's concepts in human society, influencing mankind's aesthetic values. The concepts of "what is aesthetic" and "what is the appropriate sense of beauty that people should have" are closely related to mankind's moral foundation and standards. When people find unaesthetic things aesthetic, then people's moral values are gone.

Mankind's morality goes through certain changes in different time periods. Mankind's morality itself affects mankind's arts, and the arts in turn affect mankind. You've all seen that a lot of things in today's arts are concocted by the modern mentality, and today's mankind has gone well beyond the moral boundaries and standards that mankind should have. So the resulting so-called arts aren't human culture anymore, because they're not produced with rationality or a clear mind, and they're not true, beautiful things of mankind created with people's upright thoughts, good thoughts, or a correct understanding of artistic beauty. With that, the arts are degenerating. So as for today's arts, strictly speaking, they're no longer human things. I often see some so-called pieces of modern art that in fact are all products of demon nature, even though some of them are quite famous. Not only are they of demon nature, but also many people in search of inspiration while painting are actually seeking to emulate the behavior of ghosts. When it continues like that for a long time, their state of mind is bound to become dark and bizarre. Professional artists know that when someone is doing these things his state of mind is such that he is indulging the wicked side of his human nature, and is even deliberately pursuing wicked psychological responses. So, those so-called modern art things are usually not too good, because they are not only harmful to the painters but they also bring psychological harm to those who view the work, and they seriously damage people's moral values as well.

But Dafa disciples can't break away from this social environment of ordinary people while cultivating and living their lives. You are immersed in the current of modern people's notions as well, and are also influenced by this environment. Before they learned Dafa, a lot of Dafa disciples were even studying or engaged in creating modern arts. Of course, I think that whether you are involved in modern arts or the true, traditional, and upright arts that mankind is supposed to have, the basic techniques you learned before should be the same. So, Dafa disciples must clearly understand what arts humans should have. That way, you can follow the pure and upright artistic standards of human beings, and you'll be able to create good things.

Why are we having this meeting today? Let me tell you, everything that Dafa disciples are doing during this present historic time is of utmost importance. Just yesterday I was saying that whatever Dafa disciples do, human society will emulate it in the not-too-distant future. Right now, during the Fa-rectification period, everything in the world revolves around Dafa—that's for sure—because the Three Realms were created for the Fa-rectification. Why am I discussing these things with you today? It's because Dafa disciples with artistic skills have abilities and energy. If the things you do aren't upright, or aren't upright enough, you'll reinforce the unrighteous elements, which will affect human society even more. In cultivation, you're supposed to rectify yourselves by cultivating away everything that's not good. You should be a good person wherever you are. So in the field of the arts you should be a good person as well, and in your artwork you should display what's beautiful, what's upright, what's pure, what's good, and what's bright and positive.

As the morality of human society has slid down to this point, mankind's thinking has gone through corresponding changes. And since they've changed and evolved to this point, it's impossible for people

to revert on their own. No individual, no theory, and no method can enable people to return to where they were—only Dafa can. You've followed me here to save sentient beings. And the meaning of our saving sentient beings also includes how we save human morality, how the people who are saved will be in the future, how they'll live, and what kind of conditions they'll live in. In other words, Dafa disciples are not only saving sentient beings, they're also blazing a true path for the existence of human beings. These are all things that Dafa disciples are doing in validating the Fa.

I've said that the Three Realms will exist forever. And how will it exist? That's what I'll handle during the Fa-rectification of the human world. But everything that Dafa disciples do today is of utmost importance, and it's also establishing a foundation for the future mankind and the future culture. Everything of contemporary mankind is messed up. Hardly any of the upright and traditional things that human beings should have exist anymore, and there's nothing that's pure and righteous anymore. Fortunately, there are still some cultural legacies that were left behind from people in ancient times that haven't been completely ruined—particularly in the area of fine art, where the teaching of some foundational techniques has been left behind, so that as mankind returns to the Human Realm, those who study fine art can grasp some of the most basic things. Then how should those most basic things be utilized so people can embark on a true human path? And how can [you] create good things? I think that taking those basic techniques as a foundation, and adding to them the true goodness, righteousness, and pure beauty that Dafa disciples have come to comprehend in their cultivation, [you] can display good things.

While I'm on this subject, I'd also like to talk about how mankind has evolved and the developmental process of mankind's arts as I see them.

Mankind's arts from both Eastern and Western cultures have a process of formation, stasis, and degeneration. Eastern and Western arts have taken two different paths. That's putting it in human terms, when in fact they are each concrete manifestations of the artistic aspects of the beings at the lowest level of two different, big cosmic systems, that is, human beings. In other words, they are manifestations of the things in those cosmic systems at the lowest level—this human place. Actually, there are many, many different colossal firmaments in the cosmos. There are many of them, and all of them are independent, huge cosmic bodies. Each colossal firmament has its own different style that manifests in a different way through its own, unique structure. In human words, this is to say that they have different artistic characteristics. Every gigantic cosmic body has different truths that have been enlightened to in an upright way from Zhen-Shan-Ren, the fundamental Fa-truths. As a result, the different cosmic bodies' systems all have their own systems' unique characteristics, which are concretely manifested in the structure of their heaven and earth, what their environments are like, the forms of their beings, the adornment of their beings, their architectural styles, the forms in which their animals and plants appear, etc. They all have their own, unique, upright ways of depicting beauty, friendship, grace, gratitude, etc. Among all the creations of the cosmic systems, the forms of expression of the low-level beings of basically two systems have been passed down to this human place, and they are comprised of Eastern arts and Western arts. But in the gigantic colossal body, these are not all there are. What I'm saying is that only these two types have been passed down to this human place.

As for these two artistic systems of mankind, both the East and the West have had an inheriting process in their respective ethnic cultures for several thousand years, but the styles of these two types of art are largely different. They are different in their techniques and approaches, their ways of expressing things, the feelings they project, and the visual effects they produce. From the very beginning of its inheriting process, the Chinese arts were established from a semi-divine culture. In other words, half of the emphasis was not on the human surface but on the spirit of the subject, its allure, and the inner meanings. That's why the manifestations of all aspects of the Chinese culture had that characteristic,

especially in fine art, where they don't really pay attention to depicting the details on the surface, they focus on expressing the ideas, or the spirit of it, and the inner meanings. Western arts were also passed down to humans from Gods, but their emphasis is on human beings' surface culture. They stress superb, precise, and refined techniques, and realistic, superlative artistry. The emphasis is placed on demonstrating the techniques at the surface human dimension. So in their works of fine art, the surface of objects is expressed in a very refined and precise manner. So the artistic styles of the West and of China have taken two different paths. In their process of development, the arts of the West were inherited from the previous civilization. Actually, the arts of the West have preserved a format of systematic learning even through the last several civilizations. It's had schools, theories, and formal training. It has always taken such a path. In the continuation of the arts of the East, on the other hand, it's always been circulated as part of the folk culture, among literati, artisans, and people seeking the Way. There are no systematic theories, no schools, and no formal training. How they express things in their works is based entirely on their individual experiences, especially when it comes to the sculptures. As a result of the characteristics of the Chinese people's culture, behind the expressions in the drawings, paintings, and sculptures, it's basically the Chinese people's cultural character at work, and they are unwittingly expressing the ideas and feelings. So viewed this way, the differences in the approaches they take to express things are quite significant. When you look at it from the perspective of human beings' outermost surface, the techniques of Western arts are very refined, and they demand accurate handling of light and shade, structures, and visual perspective. Especially when it comes to the structure of the human body, they express it very accurately. In ancient Chinese fine art, however, since it didn't have any systematic theories or professional studies, its expressions of the outermost surface of the structures of things lack accuracy.

The path of the arts always goes from its initial period to its peak, and then declines again. All of mankind's cultures follow this trend as well. Everything of mankind is amidst formation-stasis-degeneration-destruction, which is part of the characteristics of the past cosmos. So whenever mankind's morality is no longer good enough—when nothing is good enough anymore it has to start over—it's catastrophic for mankind, everything ends, and then everything starts over again, proceeds to the peak, and then declines again. This cycle keeps repeating.

Since ancient Chinese fine art didn't have systematic or specialized studies, they basically couldn't handle visual perspective well in terms of capturing the human body and objects. After the end of the Qing Dynasty, many who did Chinese fine art learned the basic techniques of Western fine art, and their works became accurate in depicting the external surface forms. They produced some works like that. But in recent times, especially the last twenty-some years, China has been influenced by modern thinking as well, and the works there have gotten in worse and worse shape. People's notions change along with their thinking. If a person's righteous thoughts aren't in charge and he relies entirely on the perceptions and feelings at his human surface instead of his true thoughts, and he doesn't truly think things over clearheadedly on his own, then it will be as if he doesn't have a soul anymore. Human consciousness is formed postnatally at the human surface, and it only manifests as a subconscious reaction to things. Consciousness is unstable, it can change anytime, and it changes along with the changes in external conditions and the overall situation in society. If someone completely relies on these things, he doesn't have his own thoughts. In addition, his thoughts are unsystematic, erratic, and he has no upright thoughts and no true self. The things fashioned in this state of mind are the so-called "modern arts" or "contemporary works of fine art." The beginning stage of these things' rise in popularity was the earliest appearance of those Impressionist and Abstractionist things of the West. If you calmly look at those things, you'll definitely find that they were produced when people's true thoughts were absent and people were following their human notions at the surface. They are unsystematic, unstructured, irregular, and fragmented. Who knows what they express! They don't give

people an aesthetic experience, they just follow the human thoughts at the surface. The works they concocted had a crooked nose, only half a face, or had a foot growing out of the back of a body. From the very beginning, those things were the result of people abandoning their own thoughts and upright thoughts, and were the products of people's limbs and bodies being directed by their postnatal human notions. Only when a person abandons his master consciousness (*zhu yishi*) and allows his human notions at the surface to roam freely can he produce such things. The emergence of such things has destroyed the Western arts, which were nearly the entire human race's very best and most perfect arts. During recent times, that influence has reached China.

And that was only the early stage of the modern arts. When the overall morality of society becomes increasingly degenerate, human notions don't just stay the same, they slide down as well. Those Impressionist and Abstractionist things back then completely disregarded correct visual perspective, the transition from light to darkness, and the accuracy of structure. More and more, they pursued so-called "personal feelings" and mistook that kind of irrational indulgence as liberation of their individual human nature. What they were really doing was restraining their true natures, and indulging postnatal thinking that does not contain the true self. They threw on intense colors, and were completely indulging a type of feeling from their notions that didn't contain any sober, rational thoughts. Notions, however, are formed postnatally in a person. They aren't the person's true thoughts, and they are irregular, unstructured, and unsystematic. That's why the things they concocted were like that, and looked completely disproportionate or out of balance visually. When it got to the later stage, as human moral concepts slid down more and more, their state of mind became even more base, and that kind of base consciousness didn't consist of just human notions anymore. When a person's own thoughts and true self give up control of his surface, foreign beings will seize the opportunity and get in. When it gets to that point, a foreign intelligence is already controlling the human brain. That's why artistic expressions that were even darker and more depressed—even the light was gloomy—emerged, and they entirely reflected the state of mind of dejected and decadent human nature. When it slid further down, they also became driven by the desire for fame and self-interest in society and pursued complete abandonment of themselves, and at that time even the postnatal notions were discarded. In that case, the shell in which the person's self was completely absent became one hundred percent controlled by a foreign intelligence. And in most cases the foreign intelligence was a being in the nether world, with the majority being ghosts and spirits. That was a cosmic change when mankind's morality became bad. When a painter is controlled by a yin-natured creature, what he paints will seem to portray the nether world and things of the nether world. With a lot of paintings, you can tell at a glance that they portray the worlds of ghosts, they are murky, dark, and blurry, and those so-called human figures they paint are all like ghostly spirits; the earth there is of the nether world, and the sky is of the nether world. Why do people like that feeling? Isn't it because people don't have upright thoughts anymore? Aren't they pursuing darkness? Isn't it because mankind's morality has seriously degenerated? And that's only when people go toward a dimension that's even lower than humans'. Since mankind's values are still sliding down, at present, the arts are now becoming real and concrete displays of mankind's demon nature. The arts are becoming a blasphemy of the sacred arts, they have completely become a tool for the venting of demon nature, and what they portray are demons, ghosts, and monsters. Artists themselves admit that those works are all garbage, but in the so-called artistic trend they're considered the most valuable. How could garbage be what's best? People's notions have turned upside down, so they think that garbage is the best.

That's the history of mankind's fine art—just now I talked about its general progression. Now I'll continue the discussion using Western arts as a starting point. Do you know why during World War II the French were made to surrender? Didn't the French have the ability to fight? Hadn't heroes like Napoleon and Louis XIV emerged from that nation in the old days? Didn't that nation have a glorious

history? Mankind's wars are in fact controlled by Gods, and they take place for certain reasons. It's not like things will happen according to what human beings want. France didn't directly get involved in World War II because Gods' purpose was to preserve the only works of art of this human civilization, which were in France. They are also the most glorious, what mankind can be the most proud of, and truly the most upright, traditional, and perfect pieces of art of mankind in this human civilization. If battles were to break out there, the works of art kept in the Louvre and Versailles would be gone, and the art on the streets of Paris would be gone too. Gods wanted to leave those few little things behind for mankind, so that in the future human beings would still be able to use them as references and find human beings' own art again. In addition, Dafa disciples would also be able to find their way back, based on the foundational skills of those traditional, upright works of art.

In the Western arts, during the past several civilizations, people became mature through systematic learning and returned to the previous civilization's path. But after a previous civilization is destroyed, there is a period during which the basic skills are immature. You can see that from the works of Western fine art by looking at, say, the works prior to the Renaissance, the works during the Renaissance, the works after the Renaissance, and the things of modern times—that process. Before the Renaissance, generally speaking, the works' artistic skills were quite immature. Their composition, structure, proportions, colors, etc., as you can see, you'll find them quite immature. Whether it be paintings, drawings, or sculptures, they were all immature. But then people dug up certain things of the previous civilization from the unearthed artifacts in the West. Some were sculptures of Gods, and there were also some other sculptures from the previous ancient Greek civilization. All of them were mature and perfect works. Because the foundation of these ancient civilizations was there, the Western arts quickly matured again. Because those things from the past were there for them to learn from and compare their works to, they matured very quickly. After the Renaissance, the emergence of Leonardo da Vinci and other artists was intended by Gods to have them lead human beings to reach artistic maturity and show people how to do their artwork. That's why their works at that time had a great impact on mankind. But the modern arts of recent times were arranged by some other kinds of gods—namely, the bunch that are of the old forces and that are trying to direct the Fa-rectification today. Why did a Van Gogh come along? Why did a Picasso come along? These people, too, were arranged by them to come, but they came to play a negative role, and the purpose was to have everything in mankind's culture become degenerate at the same time that mankind's morality was sliding downward. So those two people came to disrupt mankind's art. The purpose was to corrupt mankind's art—they came entirely to ruin mankind's culture. Mankind's art has gotten to the demonic state it's in today because of the foundation they laid back then for the so-called "Modernism."

Back when traditional Western art was being attacked by so-called Impressionism, that was when photography appeared. In their debates, the most typical argument made by those so-called Impressionists was, "No matter how accurately you paint, can it be as accurate as a photograph?" So they criticized painting objects to appear how they are, painting them realistically, and painting them in a traditional, orthodox way. Actually, traditional art is for man a high-quality pursuit of perfection, and it's endless. The realm of traditional art is very broad, because a complete work of art is not only realistic, but it in fact also contains the artists' own personal life experiences and character. The things that the artist has come into contact with in life, and the knowledge and skills in various subjects that he has gained in life—all of it is reflected in his works. That's why each person will express the same thing differently in his or her artwork, whether it's in terms of the use of color, the rendering of the subject's expressions, or the degree of mastery of the techniques. Each person's life experiences are different and the artists' character traits are different, so this leads to differences in their works. In addition, what they can depict is a multifarious world, beings at even higher levels, and even wonderful displays of Gods and Gods' worlds. So it's a limitless, bright and broad road. Usually the artists who

are good at painting or sculpting focus most of their thoughts on their art, so most of them are not so adept at words. Yet those who don't know how to paint or sculpt are good at talking. By aggressively promoting their agenda with twisted logic, those people indeed overturned traditional art with the photography argument. So it has gradually gotten to the point it's at today. Of course, for someone to overturn traditional art back then, that couldn't have been done by someone who didn't understand fine art at all or who was incompetent in fine art. That's why those few representatives of Modernism were arranged back then to first master the basic skills in their childhood so they could mislead the people of the world even more.

Because of the upright-versus-evil debates between the academy and the Impressionists and Abstractionists back then, because the declining morality and concepts were critical of mankind's truly sacred arts, and because the traditional artists had to eke out a little tiny bit of space for their survival, now people call traditional art "Realism." In the past there was no such name. The reason Gods passed the arts on to human beings was to enable humans to express the goodness and beauty that mankind upholds, and that has a positive effect on mankind's morality. Because of the degeneration of mankind's morality, the traditional and upright human arts were pushed out of the halls of formal academies by the trend of moving towards demon nature. So for the sake of survival, traditional art became Realism, and that's how "Realism" came about.

Right now, everything of mankind is going in the reverse direction like this—have you noticed? Those who don't know how to project a proper singing voice, who don't know music theories, and those who don't have basic dancing skills have become popular singers and dancers, yet the real artists can't make a living. Even those barbers who know what they're doing have been pushed out and do their business on the street, while those who don't know what they're doing are found in extravagant salons. Everything of mankind is sliding down in the reverse direction and is all degenerating like this. What those so-called Modernists were after were some "personal feelings." Later on they lost control of themselves, and now they're giving their bodies to be controlled by ghosts—how could they produce anything good? They hang up a so-called modernistic piece and show it to people: "Ah, look! What a good painting!" If he didn't say so, nobody would know why it was good like he said. Yet the good things that he describes are demonic in nature, and contain such naiveté about art that it's laughable. If your thinking doesn't follow him into that kind of demon nature, you won't be able to see what the so-called good things that he talks about are. In reality those things are all garbage that's harmful to people.

Of course, there are a lot of people who are just going along with the trend and concurring. Most of the general public don't understand the Modernists' stuff. If you say that it's all garbage, then the people that do those things will say that the more it's like garbage the better. You've all heard about how a so-called artist in China ate the flesh of dead children—didn't we hear reports about that a while back? It's the pursuit of demon nature that has brought things to this point. Won't it be terrifying if all of this goes on further? If mankind's arts continue like this, then you can just imagine what they will become in the future.

Next I'll talk a bit about what mankind's arts should depict. Is the purpose of mankind's arts to depict human beings themselves, or to depict landscapes, or to depict Gods? Or ghosts? You should know that mankind's true arts first appeared in the temples of Gods. Another purpose of Gods' passing on this aspect of culture to human beings was to let humans see the magnificence of Gods, and believe in goodness and evil receiving their due—evildoers will receive retribution, good people will receive blessings, and cultivators will go up to Heaven. The appearance of Western arts all began in churches. Statues in the East in the early times were almost all of Gods, and the most ancient and the earliest paintings passed down in China were all of Gods. Is there a limit to humans painting Gods? No, there

isn't. The vast cosmos, and everything that is in the immense cosmic universe... when human beings truly believe in Gods and truly go about depicting Gods, Gods will show those things to human beings. It is the most perfect, most sacred, and what mankind yearns for and their most wonderful resting place. Therefore, what the works can depict is boundless.

You know, when people paint Gods, they have to use people as models. That's not a problem, since humans were created by Gods in their own image. So it's not a problem to use human beings for practicing one's basic skills. It's not that people can't paint other people—it's fine to do so—because human beings are after all what's central to this world. It's even less of a problem to paint landscapes. But, the focus of mankind's fine art should be Gods. Why do I say that? Think about it everyone, humans have karma—you all know this as you're Dafa disciples—and everything that human beings draw or paint includes elements of the artist himself. In an artist's work, everything about that individual and about the person being portrayed is attached to that painting. When an ordinary person paints just one stroke, I know what kind of person he is, what kind of illnesses he has, how much karma he has, his state of mind, his family situation, etc. And all the thoughts the subject of the painting has and all of the factors associated with his body are fully displayed as well, including how much karma he has. Whenever someone hangs a painting of that person in his home, the karma of that person in the painting emits from the painting. So when someone hangs something like that in his home, is he benefiting or being harmed? Karma emits and spreads, it's connected with the person, and it will continuously emit in the home of the person who has hung up the painting there. People can't see the interrelationships among objects, but actually they will feel ill at ease [from something like that].

But if human beings paint Gods—think about it everyone, Gods are glorious, magnificent, and emit merciful, benevolent energy that benefits people—the people who render the paintings or create the sculptures benefit in the process of completing the artwork, and at the same time the artist develops good thoughts while he creates artwork of Gods, and therefore Gods may help him strengthen his righteous thoughts, and remove the karma on the artist's body and his thought karma. After others look at that kind of artwork they'll benefit, they'll become broad-minded, they'll have good thoughts in their minds, and it will make their character nobler. And when Gods see humans having upright thoughts, they'll remove dangers and calamities for humans. So which way is more beneficial for mankind? I like to look at those traditional and upright works, those ceiling paintings and murals of Gods, and those sculptures of Gods. After I see them, I always feel that mankind still has hope of returning, because those works are depicting the Gods' magnificence, and the Gods in the sculptures are truly doing good things for people from the other side. So based on these comparisons, don't you think that mankind's art should primarily depict Gods?

Of course, modern society's arts aren't limited to paintings, drawings, and sculptures—there are also crafts, advertisements, fashion, theatre, television and movie production, product design, etc. There are a plethora of professions related to the arts; in other words, they are all related to fine art. But no matter what profession it is, if the artist himself establishes an upright foundation, then no matter what works he creates, they'll all be infused with upright elements, and they'll all be wonderful, good, and will benefit people. That's for sure. Generally speaking, this is what I've seen with mankind's arts.

The Eastern and Western arts I just talked about include sculpture. Speaking of sculpture, I'll talk a little bit about the actual origin of the sculptures of the East and their progression through history, and I'll just talk about the situation in this civilization. Before Buddhism was spread to China, the styles of many sculptures were related to the culture of the last cycle (that is, before the Great Flood), so their artistic styles were completely different from that of the period after Buddhism was spread to China Proper. Strictly speaking, the Eastern sculptures that represent this human civilization should be represented by portrayals of Buddhism's Buddhas, Bodhisattvas, and Gods. That kind of sculpting

method of the early period was passed along from India, and India's sculpting method was in turn left over from the period of belief in Buddhas that preceded this period of Indian Buddhism, and the Buddhas that the previous period of Indians believed in were passed to India by those ancient Greeks in Europe who believed in Buddhas. That's because in even earlier times, many Europeans believed in Buddhas; of course, not everyone believed in Buddhas, there were people who believed in other Gods. After that was passed to India, the image of Buddha and the sculpting methods were also passed to India, and that's why the Chinese method for making sculptures of Buddha in the early days basically followed that of ancient Greece. You can see that many Buddha statues of the early period had deep eye sockets, with the bones over their eyebrows and facial structure being very similar to Westerners. They had straight noses, and they had a forthright and upright appearance. The reason is that ancient Greece passed on to India the Buddhist culture of an even earlier period, which in turn was passed from India to China. But, because the works of a sculptor incorporate his elements, after it was passed into China Proper, the image of Buddha in the statues became a little bit like Chinese people. Gradually, as the time since it was passed to China grew longer, it slowly lost the elements of the early periods when the ancient Greek culture was passed to China, and gradually it evolved into having more of a local Chinese flavor. This is speaking in terms of the surface culture of humans. There are other reasons involved. After Buddhism was spread to China Proper, many people's subordinate soul (*fu yuanshen*) indeed cultivated to Buddhahood and Bodhisattvahood. But because at the time there were no methodical systems of learning in China Proper, and statues were made by stonemasons and Daoists, then compared to Western sculptures they were very amateurish—for the most part they couldn't find the right proportions in the body's structure. So, when it comes to many of the statues in China, it's not that they bear the characteristics of a particular school of art, they are just the result of immature techniques.

So just now I outlined in broad and very simple terms the development and origins of mankind's art. The arts of the past usually depicted Gods, and Gods passed those things on to human beings to tell mankind: Gods are protecting mankind, and when human beings do good things, it will result in good things for them.

Usually, an artist's work will have a theme and purpose of what he wants to express or depict. That is, when you're planning a painting or formulating the layout for a painting, what you want to express or depict, or, the meaning that you want to express, is incorporated in all of that. In other words, each work has its own story. But there's another problem when today's people look at Western traditional art, especially the fine art from the Renaissance Period: they only look at the method of the painting and the approach—and even that is something that only those people who know the basic techniques understand. Very few people know what the paintings are expressing. So when I've looked at paintings or sculptures, the students with me would ask me, "What is this painting about?" and I would tell them. Of course, you're all involved with the arts and know a lot, but why don't we explore this subject together. Let's get a few paintings here and I'll talk about what's expressed in them and why they expressed it that way. (*Applause*)

Have a seat, everybody. Just now when I was talking about what these paintings were expressing, you understood what I was saying. I want to have Dafa disciples understand what to do, so why don't you also share your thoughts, OK?

Question: (Translated) *We want to portray the persecution. Can we depict scenes of Dafa disciples being tortured?*

Teacher: Yes, you can. You can depict scenes of Dafa disciples being persecuted, Dafa disciples studying the Fa and doing the exercises, or scenes of Gods and heavens after Dafa was widely spread—all these can be depicted.

Question: Can we create some art that shows the process of Dafa disciples clarifying the facts or spreading the Fa, or things such as marches, parades, and so on?

Teacher: Yes, you can depict all of those things. What's key is that your planning and creation of the work should be high level.

Question: Master, Chinese arts aim at conveying certain ideas or feelings. For example, most famous Chinese painters aimed at conveying their ideas or feelings, and they painted landscapes. Can we paint that way too?

Teacher: There's no problem with conveying certain ideas or feelings. Chinese-style paintings and landscape paintings are fine to do, too. Because they're the work of Dafa disciples, they can be put on display. But you're Dafa disciples, and at present everyone is validating the Fa and creating a future for sentient beings, so you should do your best to make clarifying the facts and exposing the evil the first priority, particularly during this time. That's Dafa disciples' responsibility. It's better to have more works that expose the evil, present Dafa, and present Gods, and to make these works the core. Other works of Dafa disciples can be put on display too.

Question: Isn't trying to convey feelings or ideas something deviant?

Teacher: When I talk about conveying feelings or ideas, I'm talking about expressing the inner meanings in your painting or drawing. If people can express their feelings based on a moral foundation that is orthodox and of righteous thoughts, then there's no problem. The key is whether you use righteous thoughts to create your work or pursue those so-called modern concepts, and whether you use traditional and proper methods or Modernist notions to depict things. The problem doesn't lie in the feelings or ideas themselves.

Question: Master, I'd like to ask: the pieces that you just talked about all portray images of Western Gods. So as Dafa disciples, how do we blend Chinese and Western elements together, and how do we use paintings like this one as a reference, but still preserve our own Eastern characteristics?

Teacher: It's not a problem to paint both Gods with Eastern images and Gods with Western images in the same work. During the Fa-rectification many different Gods are playing positive roles. A lot of Chinese paintings are good, and can be acknowledged as such. Improve on the approaches and skills more. These are not problems. But it seems it would be hard to include both Chinese-style painting and Western-style oil painting in the same piece. No one has set a precedent by blending Eastern and Western approaches yet. Don't turn it into something neither fish nor fowl.

Question: What I want to say is, from a higher level many Gods of the East and West are below the level of Buddha, so if we create a large piece and include all of them in it, will that be all right?

Teacher: You want to create a large work of art that will have Gods with both Eastern and Western images in it—there's no problem with that. So, say you paint some Daos, and depending on what's needed you paint some Gods with Western images, and they're all in the same painting, then that's no problem. But if in the same piece, oil painting techniques are used on one side and Chinese painting techniques are used on another side, then I'd say that won't do.

Question: I have another question. In our artwork we should mainly depict what's bright and good. But some pieces, due to the richness of their inner meaning, have negative characters in them. With that, you can have contrast in the scene. I'd like to confirm about handling negative characters—apparently they should be put in dark corners—but can we portray them like that?

Teacher: Yes, you can. In fact, take a look at this painting. The wicked police are beating the Dafa disciple. The use of color on the evil police and the Dafa disciple is different, yet it's very harmonious

and balanced overall, so there's no problem there. That's a question of your techniques, and it's about how you plan it out well.

Question: Master, I'd like to ask, is Chinese calligraphy a form of art? Also, what about the cursive styles of calligraphy, are they upright?

Teacher: Nowadays it's called calligraphy, but in the past it was just writing. As it's come down to recent times, people don't use brush pens to write anymore, so they treat it as a form of art. As a matter of fact, it does contain the inner meaning of art. Since it's now considered a form of art, in art exhibitions you can treat it as a type of fine art.

Speaking of the cursive styles of calligraphy, strictly speaking, they are a reflection of mental states in which people are indulging their negative side. When Gods helped people create Chinese characters, there were no such things as cursive styles. Actually I've never practiced calligraphy, and I'm not that good at it. But I've often been asked by people to handwrite something for them, so I use the official script style. It's not that I have a preference for the official script style; it's because when you write in the official script style you can't possibly do it cursively. If it's written in cursive, it's no longer the official script style. So it's hard for people to write in that style cursively when they are indulging their notions or thought karma. From this perspective, I like writing in the official script style.

Question: With respect to calligraphy characters, because Master writes with the official script style, I've noticed that when some Dafa disciples choose calligraphy styles, they usually go for the official script style. I'd like to ask, can we use all calligraphy styles?

Teacher: Yes, you can. You can use all kinds of calligraphy styles. But I think the cursive styles indulge humans' negative side too much, and have too many human surface elements in them. When a person truly has upright thoughts and acts in a good manner, he can't write that way. That type of writing is mainly done when people indulge their human notions. In serious cases, the person's mental state is one that's kind of crazed and his upright side is weak.

Question: I have another question, and it's about the three primary colors. Teacher talked about the three primary colors having correspondences in other dimensions. People also talk about complementary colors. So, how should we understand the three primary colors? Here among people, we say light produces colors because without light we can't see colors. But then, since other dimensions are filled with light, how is there differentiation among the colors there?

Teacher: Yes, people can blend the three primary colors from their paints to create other colors, and the three primary colors in mankind's spectrum can refract into other colors in the spectrum. But those colors are just produced by material elements of the human physical dimension, which is different from other dimensions, and the kinds of matter are different as well. Some people say that objects' appearances are the result of light, and that includes how in a painting light and shade appear and how colors emerge. That's not true. Objects maintain the same shape regardless of whether or not there's light—all light does is give people the visual impression of brightness or darkness. When affected by changes in the intensity of the light, colors might be perceived falsely, but that doesn't really change the color or shape of the object. Speaking in terms of cultivation, light can block people's eyes and create false impressions for people. In a lot of other dimensions there's no sun, and in a lot of dimensions everything is bathed in its own soft light. Without the sun, or if there's no sun in a dimension, the appearance and state of the object are still stable. In some dimensions, all objects dimly emit light that's gentle to the eyes, and the beings at the same level can see it themselves. In that type of dimension, there's no direct source of light like the sun, but the shapes of objects you see are still what they are.

When viewed with human eyes, other dimensions glow, and the colors and shapes of the objects there

remain unchanged. (Of course, Gods and everything of Gods can change. The forms in which objects exist aren't in a so-called stable state, like people think). Usually they're like colorful neon lights, and the shapes and colors of the lights aren't affected by light. If a being is a life at that level, he won't have the same feelings that humans do upon seeing that dimension. It's just as I've told you about molecules having energy as well, and the reason humans can't sense it is because everything of humans, including the eyes, is composed of molecular particles. Similarly, a being that is composed of larger particles that are lower than molecules sees that human bodies and everything in the human dimension glow and have energy. This is a different concept from the dimension I talked about earlier, where everything glows without having a sun. That's a dimension where the objects themselves emit a glow.

Because this human dimension is a place specially created for the Fa-rectification, outside the boundaries of the Three Realms everything is completely different. In the many other, broader dimensions that exist at the same level as the Three Realms, the structures of all objects have changed, and they're all different from those in the human dimension. The way objects appear and the relationship between brightness and darkness that people in this world see are all different. So the relationship between brightness and darkness that manifests here at this human place is a manifestation in the environment that's specially created for human beings. Gods in the heavens and many cosmic bodies don't have a sun that shines on them directly or emits light. But there are also many cosmic bodies where they have more than one sun that gives off light. Some places have suns and some places don't. Beings of different levels can sense different intensities of light, and they all conform to light's forms of existence at different levels. A student wrote in an article that the three primary colors are related to Zhen-Shan-Ren. That's his own feeling and view that come from his cultivation, and not the fundamental, true nature of Zhen-Shan-Ren.

When people see scenes of the heavens they're shocked and think, "What colors can I use to depict this?" Human beings can see as well as touch and use matter at the surface that is composed of molecules. But when it comes to things that are composed of particles more microscopic than molecules, ordinary people can only sense their energy. The colors of matter in dimensions composed of particles more microscopic than molecules can't be found here at this human place. Actually, molecules carry energy too. Not only do they carry energy, they can also have the impact of energy. The people in this world can't sense the energy because their bodily composition, eyes, skin, blood, flesh and everything else are all things in the layer of molecular particles. That's why humans can't sense the energy that exists at the same level as them, and the reason they can sense the energy of a more microscopic level is that particles that make up objects at this human level are larger in size than the microscopic particles. In other words, the elements that make up colors are not particles of only one level, and that's why high-level dimensions appear brighter and shinier than dimensions that are made up of particles of one level below. But that brightness is the kind that transcends realms, so in the human world you can't find those kinds of colors. Even if you used radiant colors, you still wouldn't be able to depict them. But, although you don't have the kinds of colors to depict the sacredness of those realms, you can use the pigments that humans now have to show the composition of a painting and [the subjects'] solemn appearances. Humans' pigments are capable of expressing the shapes and the structures. If you could completely display Gods in the human world using everything of Gods, that would mean Gods had arrived in the human world.

Question: Master, could you talk about the clothing that Buddhas, Daos, and Gods wear, or how they usually dress and adorn themselves?

Teacher: The Buddhas' attire that we usually see is a yellow kasaya. When you paint Bodhisattvas, just paint them in ancient Chinese women's dress. You can mimic how the women of the Song Dynasty dressed and adorned themselves, as that's the most common way. As for Gods with a Caucasian image,

no matter which world they're in, they usually wrap themselves in a large white kasaya. Buddhas wrap themselves in a large yellow kasaya, and Gods in the image of blacks wrap themselves in a large red kasaya. Of course, there are manifestations of many more varieties and at even higher levels. There are some who don't wear anything, there are others who wear all kinds of clothes and adornments that are quite primitive... there are all kinds of Gods. In your works, it's usually good enough if you just portray what people can recognize. Daos of course don't ancient Chinese dress—those are the common Daos. The clothes worn by the Great Daos at very high levels are actually also very diverse.

In the past there was this phenomenon with cultivators: No matter when, or during which dynasty you succeeded in cultivation, what you wore when you reached Consummation would become your clothes afterwards. That was usually the case. Of course, for Buddhas it was different—when someone attained Buddhahood he would definitely assume the image of a Buddha, and would wear a Buddha's clothing. As for those who cultivated into other types of Gods, normally whatever he wore when he succeeded in cultivation would be the clothes he would wear afterwards. Which of you have been to Wudang Mountain? Have you seen the portrait of Xuanwu? Why is Xuanwu's hair down in his portrait? It's because when he succeeded in cultivation his hair was down, so the image of him is such that his hair is down. He was meditating for long periods of time in the mountains and found it too troublesome to tie up his hair, so he stopped tying it up and stayed like that all the way until he succeeded in cultivation.

Question: Master, in ancient paintings and drawings, some Buddhas are wearing clothes, and some have their shoulders exposed.

Teacher: Sometimes people paint or draw Buddhas based on their own notions. For instance, it's hot in Southern Asia, so the Buddhist monks there usually leave their shoulder exposed. They expose their right shoulder so it feels cooler. In more northerly regions, the Buddhist monks cover their right shoulder with a piece of cloth so they aren't cold. There is no concept of that in Buddhas' worlds. Their way of dressing is such that they usually expose the right shoulder. When Chinese people draw or paint Buddhas, they have this notion that they should cover the shoulders entirely, but actually, Gods' way of dressing is like *this*. Gods with Western images expose a shoulder too, because this type of clothing doesn't have sleeves, and if both sides are covered up it's hard to move about.

Question: Please allow me to ask, why is it so hard to learn basic skills when we learn to draw or paint? Plus it's very hard to find [a good place to learn them]. How can those of us who study painting or drawing in China improve our skills?

Teacher: It's mainly because the education in Western countries is too influenced by the ideas of the so-called Modernist school, and they don't emphasize training the students in the fundamentals at all. In addition, a lot of teachers and professors are part of the Modernist school and they themselves don't even understand or have the most basic, common knowledge about painting and drawing. As far as mastering the fundamentals, that can only be done with diligent training. In the beginning, the person has to do still-life drawings and learn to handle structures and visual perspective. When he's able to draw still objects well, he needs to practice drawing sketches, and then he'll learn to use colors correctly. Step by step he masters the fundamentals of drawing and painting. Basic skills are what a painter or sculptor must master.

Question: Why is it that in China, people have been painting landscapes for a long time? Of course, in China there are also paintings that depict images of Buddhas, but throughout China's history most paintings have been of landscapes.

Teacher: Chinese painting seeks to convey feelings or ideas, and seeks to capture a certain realm of thought and express inner meanings. That's why most of them have painted landscapes. After all, Chinese people have a semi-God-like culture. In their minds they don't want to portray people too

much, and that's also because of the reason I talked about earlier. So most paintings are of landscapes, but there are some that have portrayed people as well. But normally they don't use models, and the works spring completely from their own imagination. The good thing is, this way things are unpolluted. Of course, it's not that they don't paint real people at all. They have painted some heroic figures in history and figures that people pay tribute to. When it comes to recent times, [the subjects of paintings] have become more diversified. Actually, the earliest Chinese paintings that have been discovered are paintings of Gods, and from ancient times up to today there have always been paintings portraying Buddhas, Daos, and Gods in temples and monasteries.

Question: In Chinese paintings, the lines are dominant and the colors are soft and mild, whereas Western paintings are very particular about colors. Is it true that the colors in our Chinese paintings should be like those of Western paintings?

Teacher: No. Eastern paintings should have the characteristics of Eastern paintings. Just paint them in the way they're supposed to be. Once you change it it's no longer an Eastern painting. Eastern paintings *do* emphasize the lines. But in Western paintings they can't draw lines, and if you draw lines it won't be right, as their composition is done with light and shade.

Question: Master, [in our paintings and drawings] we convey ideas or portray something realistically. Is it true that when we paint or draw, your Law Body goes on the piece? (People laugh)

Teacher: No, my Law Body won't do that. *(People laugh)* He just needs to think and you'll know how to paint. But if you figure, "Now I see. Then I'll have Master paint it," *(people laugh)* you can't do that.

Question: At that time the painter might enter a supernatural state, and then his painting might be beyond the ordinary.

Teacher: No, it won't necessarily be beyond the ordinary. No matter what the circumstance, [the painter] should be rational and act normally. Just like with your Dafa cultivation, everything is normal. If it's something a Dafa disciple should paint, then you should just do it well. There's no such thing as getting into some state, and you shouldn't have thoughts like that.

Question: Master, I'd like to paint different human figures. You've mentioned that the Gods of blacks wrap themselves in red kasayas, but we don't know what their hair looks like.

Teacher: Usually, if you want to paint Gods with the image of Westerners, you can reference and follow the works of fine art from the Renaissance period. The images of Gods in the works of fine art from the Western Renaissance period are accurate. Generally speaking, most of the adult male Gods have mustaches or beards, but of course there are also some who don't. Buddhas usually don't have them, but a small number of them do. Gods with the image of blacks have the same hair as blacks—short, curly hair—because Gods created human beings in their own image.

Question: (Translated) I did a painting for my school, and it's basically a self-portrait. When I painted it I put a lot of care into it, and tried my best not to let any notions play a role. I've found that people's reactions have been pretty good, and its composition miraculously became better as well. So my question is, is it that as long as we put a lot of care into painting something, it will turn out well? I'd like to ask if Master can give some guidance on this.

Teacher: Strictly speaking, when you paint you have to put a lot of care into it. When you put a lot of care into it everyone will say that you painted well, but, compared to the era that emphasized the fundamentals, there is still a gap. So I think that if Dafa disciples hone and improve their basic skills, they will paint better and will leave an upright path for people in the future. Of course, it's correct to put a lot of care into painting.

Question: Can I paint a portrait of Teacher?

Teacher: Well, so many people have made sculptures and painted portraits for me, but in the end none of them look like me. It's fine for you to paint me, that's not a problem. You can just use a photograph to paint from.

Question: Master, I know that a lot of students really want to paint Master, and especially images in other dimensions. Some of the paintings do look like Master, and I feel like they truly have the power of your Law Body. But what should we do with these painted portraits, since they are after all Master's pictures, and what about those drafts?

Teacher: If those drafts need to be burned, then burn them. It's no problem. During the Fa-rectification period, Dafa disciples should make a priority of validating the Fa.

Question: Then what about the ones that are painted well? We wonder if we could offer incense before them?

Teacher: Just keep them as paintings.

Question: Master, after listening to your talk today, my mind and ideas have become a lot broader. But I was wondering if we could have these things recorded in writing, because a lot of people aren't here, and they are also quite accomplished in art.

Teacher: I'll take a look and see after the Fa-truths that I taught this time are organized.

Question: I felt that my mind was drawing a blank when it came to how to go down the path of creating [arts], but now I'm clear and I'm very happy.

Teacher: That's exactly the Fa I wanted to teach to you today.

Question: I have one more question. Take me, for example. Everything I've studied is Western painting, but I really like Chinese brush painting. When I'm painting, is it OK to focus on what's depicted, and not be limited by the traditional methodologies?

Teacher: If you're saying that you want to take the best of both worlds in terms of techniques, some people seem to have tried that before. You can give it a try, but it needs to appear harmonious, be balanced and feel natural to those who look at it. But, after trying it you might feel that you still can't find a way to really put the artistic culture from Eastern and Western paintings together.

Question: Greetings, Master. In our paintings, can we mix winged angels, for example, from East and West together?

Teacher: In the Fa-rectification, among the Gods that are playing a completely positive role, there are Gods in the image of both Eastern and Western people, as well as Gods of various images. It depends entirely on the meaning you want to express in your painting, that is, what the composition needs. For example, among Gods in the image of Westerners, some have wings and some don't. It depends on how the composition of your painting depicts things. Let me tell you, those Gods in low-level dimensions knew that I would come to disseminate the Fa, so the old forces arranged for them to influence how I would disseminate it and the conditions of society. Of course, I wouldn't do it according to what they wanted. The image I would assume to do Fa-rectification while disseminating the Fa was a major issue for all the Gods. Back then Buddhas and Daos disputed at low levels over the image I would choose, and Daoism was created as a result. The Daos wanted me to choose the image of a Dao, and to have me teach the Dao Fa with Dao [truths]. But they knew themselves that the Dao is passed down in a single-disciple approach. Then in a single-disciple approach, how could you save all beings and disseminate Dafa? That wouldn't work, so they thought of a way and started a religion on the earth, which led to the

emergence of the Daoist religion. Later on in the Daoist religion, many Daos split into Buddhas and Bodhisattvas as well, and Daos' paradises really came to exist in the heavens. It's because they wanted me to choose the image of a Dao. On the Buddhas' side, they too were creating conditions for me to choose a Buddha's image. They said that I should use the image of a Buddha, being merciful, since I wanted to save sentient beings. But I incarnated in China Proper. If I had incarnated in the West then the Gods with a Caucasian image would have created the conditions for it as well. So that's how the disputes between Daos and Buddhas came about in history. Once I finalized everything that I wanted, these disputes over images ended. I didn't follow the old forces' arrangements.

The Gods in the heavens, no matter what kind of Gods they are, whenever something happens in the heavens they discuss it together. Jesus' coming to earth to save people was also discussed and coordinated by all the Gods cooperatively, because major events that take place on the earth affect the heavens. When a Buddha wants to spread Fa, it can't be done if other Gods don't acknowledge it. Those things about the dispute between Buddhas and Daos that I just talked about are of the past, because after the matter of spreading the Fa was decided on, there was nothing to fight over anymore, so all was well.

Question: Watercolor is a little bit similar to Chinese painting, and a little bit similar to oil painting. Some works make use of watercolors as well as Chinese painting techniques...

Teacher: The fundamentals of watercolor are Western, so watercolor is a Western method of painting. As for the paint itself, it doesn't restrict you from doing a watercolor or a Chinese painting. It's not a problem if you use watercolors to paint Chinese paintings, and it's not a problem either if you take the approach of using watercolors to paint oil paintings. Watercolors themselves don't involve the issue of Eastern or Western ways of painting; in other words, what kind of paint you use or what kind of painting you do is a different matter from the way you paint. The differences between Eastern and Western paintings aren't just limited to the intensity of the colors being used, either. The inner meanings of each are complemented and supported by the two types of culture.

Many people have tried combining Eastern and Western painting styles, but they've actually all failed. Chinese painting and Western painting don't just differ in the techniques of their painting approaches and usage of paint on the surface; there are immense ethnic cultures behind the paintings. All the different skills and techniques in each culture are the culmination of that people's culture as a whole. In fact, throwing Eastern and Western art together isn't doable, unless Eastern and Western cultures are completely mixed together and become something that is rootless and warped.

Question: We want to paint about Heaven and Earth being established, in other words, the old forces in the cosmos are destroyed, and good things... that is, when the cosmic body becomes good and bad things are cast down. In that kind of scene, is it best to include images of Gods? Or should we just make some changes in color? [I think it's probably] best to include some of what Master talked about earlier.

Teacher: You can't paint abstractly. The subjects that are being depicted have to be there. In other words, you need to get back on the upright path.

Question: Regarding those supernatural animals in the heavens, like the lions that Master just mentioned, and some others like dragons and phoenixes—take dragons, for example. There are dragon deities, and the red evil dragon that Master mentioned in past scriptures, as in “the Red Dragon is slain.” Are there differences in those dragons?

Teacher: The outward appearances of dragons are the same. And there are good and bad dragons. There are evil dragons, good dragons, and dragon deities. The dragons commonly seen in the heavenly

paradises and Buddhas' paradises are golden dragons, which glow in golden light. There's one point I want to clarify: the dragons described in Eastern culture and the dragons in Western culture are not the same creature, not the same species. The dragons in Eastern culture have different colors, some are in colors like those of the black-and-white fish, and there are also red ones, yellow ones, white ones, and black ones. They're different, because there are distinctions in levels among dragons as well. There are distinctions among the heavenly dragons, earthly dragons, and dragons that reside in water. As for the dragons that are referred to in Western culture, they are a type of vicious beast in hell. A lot of times, when Chinese people mention dragons, many Westerners think of dragons as being bad—that's how they feel. It's actually a difference in Eastern and Western cultures. The dragons that Westerners talk about have a head that somewhat resembles that of a dragon, and have a skinny neck, a massive body like dinosaurs, and featherless wings. That kind of creature is a low-level creature in the system of Gods with a Western image. The dragons from hell in the system of Western-looking Gods spit an infernal flame. Actually, I think people in the past mismatched things in the translation, and called that beast a dragon. It's different from the dragon of the East. (*Asking Western students*) Tell me, isn't Westerners' concept of a dragon like what I just talked about? (*Answer: "Yes."*)

Actually they are not the same creatures. In the heavenly kingdoms of the West, usually they don't have the type of dragon referred to in the East, as it's not a creature of that system. And in the system of Gods that are in the image of Caucasian people, which corresponds to the society of Caucasian people on the earth, all the way to even lower dimensions, there's no such thing as dragons in that system, nor is there any manifestation of that kind of animal. But they have many creatures that aren't in the system of Gods that have the image of Eastern people, either. For example, in the West there used to be a type of beast on the earth whose lower body was of a horse and whose upper body was human. There's no such thing in the system of the Eastern world. So it's not just a matter of differences in cultures. It's that certain things don't exist in that other world's system.

Question: Master, I'd like to ask a question. I'm an oil painter, and it's very time-consuming to complete a good painting. [I ask] because I know there are a lot of projects to do.

Teacher: Diligent Dafa disciples are all very busy. During the Fa-rectification period, they need to clarify the facts and save sentient beings. And in terms of what I've said to you today, those of us here who have these special skills also need to create works of art. Creating these works does take a lot of time, and I'm very much aware of that. But, don't worry, try your best to make good use of the time you have to paint or draw. Just don't drag it out for too long. Paint as much as you can, and we'll put together an exhibition when the works are pretty much ready.

Question: Master, what I'd like to ask about is, well, how to balance the two. We only have so much time, and when we do one thing we won't be able to do something else.

Teacher: Right, then plan things reasonably. What I'm asking you to do is not only for the sake of others and for leaving behind these things for the people of the future—it's also helpful to your own cultivation. Because you're all living in this society's environment, you all need to step out from this period of time. In other words, this is how people's notions are now, people are all in the big dye vat, and those of you who have these special skills are bound to have been influenced in this regard more than others. Then during your process of creating artworks and returning to the upright path, aren't you cleansing yourselves? And aren't you re-elevating yourselves artistically? Yes, you are fundamentally changing yourselves, and changing yourselves in terms of your concepts. Aren't you cultivating yourself?

Question: Yesterday I saw Master turning the Falun at the conference, and I was greatly moved. If I paint that scene based on my ideas, and Master was wearing a suit then, would it be too direct or too

detailed?

Teacher: It's fine to paint that, and it's fine to paint me in a suit.

Question: Master, I'd like to ask two questions. One is, our Falun Dafa includes many Gods, so with that many Gods, and of course after students complete cultivation they'll become different Buddhas, Daos, and Gods, then right now we want to depict a large number of fellow practitioners who have cultivated well—some of them might have already cultivated extremely well—we can depict them; then as for the Gods that upright religions believe in and that Master has mentioned, and in Buddhism there are a lot of upright Gods as well, can we depict them?

Teacher: In many cases, you can. Let's put it this way, the Gods mentioned in Buddhism, and all the Buddhas and Bodhisattvas mentioned in Buddhism that people know about, they're fine to depict. Lao Zi, Daos, Yahweh, Jesus, Saint Mary... there's no problem with doing any of them. But it's meaningless for Dafa disciples who are in the process of validating the Fa to depict Gods that have nothing to do with Dafa. As for what you should depict and how you should depict it, there's no need for me to say too much about that.

Question: I have another question, and it's regarding some classical works that are left behind from the Renaissance Period, such as the Last Supper, etc. I think that these types of works are huge projects, and I would like us to also leave behind some really good works, but not taking the same forms as theirs, because ours will depict Falun Dafa. But the essence will be the same. First and foremost, the concept has to be good, and then the techniques need to be sound, and we need to have the time, as well as many other prerequisites. So I feel that to do that kind of project well, we need to spend a lot of effort overall.

Teacher: Your idea is grand. Don't be anxious, and take your time. You can create things based on the abilities you currently have. You're getting this started, and if you have the ability, go ahead and do it; if you can't do it, people after you will definitely do it. Mankind will definitely create something glorious for Dafa, because Dafa has brought so many blessings to mankind! (*Applause*)

Question: Master, I think the images of Buddhas in Chinese paintings are highly adorned, and they are painted so, so beautifully, but what's painted nowadays is very simple, and I don't think it looks good.

Teacher: People's perspectives are different. That's how things manifest here at this place of humans. In different time periods, Buddhas display to people the dress of the different time periods. When I first started teaching the Fa and a lot of Bodhisattvas came to see me, you would never guess what they were wearing. You know, during the Cultural Revolution Chinese girls liked wearing those grass-green military uniforms the best. (*Everyone laughs*) They came wearing grass-green military uniforms. What I mean is, Buddhas display things based on the notions of the world's people in different time periods. Actually the original image of a Buddha is one with a yellow kasaya and curly blue hair. Of course, how sculptures were created and pictures were painted in ancient times differ to a certain extent from the way they're done now. Back then, the Buddha images that were painted were dazzlingly decorated and a feast for the eyes. That, too, was displayed based on the concepts of the people at that time. Of course, when someone can see a Buddha's real image, he'll also see the Buddha's paradise and the Buddha body's splendor—it's an incredibly magnificent display. Gods intentionally vary their manifestations to people.

Question: Our paintings now are very simple.

Teacher: The Buddhas and Bodhisattvas that were painted in the Tang Dynasty had a lot of adornments. When you paint, if you want to follow the portraits done in the Tang Dynasty, that's fine, too.

Question: I spent half a year at the Louvre. While the docent was introducing the painting “Mona Lisa,” I heard him talking about the Gods of the past. He said that Mona Lisa represented an image of the Gods of the past, and that Gods didn’t wear any adornments. But I just heard Master talk about this, and I’m confused.

Teacher: What is depicted in that painting is a human being, not a God, and it’s not as great as people say. Besides, the shadows in it aren’t good.

Question: The docent said that it reflected the aristocrats of the past, and that the aristocrats of the past didn’t wear any adornments.

Teacher: All that was said by human beings, and the docent’s words are unreliable. A lot of Gods in the heavens wear earrings. The Goddesses of the heavens wear adornments such as earrings, and those are Fa-implements, as well. As for Gods in the image of Westerners, it seems that the Goddesses wear very few adornments. Apparently the Bodhisattvas wear relatively more adornments. Usually Gods wear necklaces, and Bodhisattvas also have long strings of large rosary beads, really long ones.

Question: Master, what does it mean when heavenly maidens scatter flowers? To this day I still don’t know.

Teacher: They only scatter flowers when there’s someone on earth who saves people teaching the Dao or doing great and significant things. A lot of students have seen that whenever Master teaches the Fa they scatter flowers. (*Applause*) They are encouraging sentient beings, so they scatter flowers for you.

Question: (Translated) I don’t often see Gods in other dimensions, and I can’t see them very clearly, either. How do I know if what I’m drawing or painting is accurate? This is a big problem. What do I need to draw when I’m depicting Gods?

Teacher: Usually, if you know their approximate type of clothing and their rough image, then that’s a starting point. A lot of Dafa disciples around you have seen various scenes, so you can listen to their descriptions. When you draw or paint, you’ll naturally know the composition of your drawing and what it portrays.

Question: I’d like to ask a question regarding children’s paintings. Kids are pure and innocent, yet they don’t know any techniques. When they paint, is that method of expression very different from what we want, which is superb in terms of technique?

Teacher: Yes, a painter is a painter, a child is a child, and a child doesn’t equal a painter. When a child likes to paint, it’s the beginning of progressing toward becoming a painter, but it doesn’t mean that he is a painter. If someone can’t paint well he’ll never be considered someone who can paint. There’s always going to be a difference between being able to paint and not being able to paint. So kids need to study and do well in what they study. Even the kinds of pictures that adults paint for children these days only appeared after the Modernists came along. Picture books were drawn for kids in the past, too, and those picture books in the past were done with traditional techniques.

Question: Then if young children want to depict things of Dafa, if they depict them directly, would that be a problem? Or is it that only people with institutional training and adequate techniques can depict these things?

Teacher: Children can practice drawing, and practice drawings can’t be considered successful works, but what they do as homework in art class at school can be shown and judged at school. Students at the Minghui Schools should of course study the Fa, and art classes should definitely involve drawing things about Dafa and practitioners, but that’s just studying and doing homework. But I hope that all of the schools’ art classes foster the students’ basic skills in a formal and standard manner. In fact, isn’t

drawing Gods without skill smearing the image of Gods? Even though the intention is good, from another perspective, Gods can't be just drawn or painted any which way, right? If you don't know how to draw or paint, how can you depict Gods' solemn, wonderful, and righteous qualities? Of course drawing or painting practitioners is an exception.

At Minghui Schools, if students want to practice drawing, that's no problem, and the schools can display, compare and critique for themselves the ones that are done well. But I think that works at a truly high level require being skillful, and especially for exhibitions we need to demonstrate an upright, traditional, and professional standard.

Question: When painting scenes that show Dafa disciples and Master doing Fa-rectification, Buddhas, Daos, and Gods in other dimensions are painted. Since none of the Gods of the old cosmos participate in the Fa-rectification, can it be understood that this is a manifestation of Dafa disciples' bodies in different dimensions participating in Fa-rectification in different dimensions?

Teacher: It's not that none of the Gods participate. Most of the Gods in the cosmos indeed don't participate, but there is a portion that, unlike the old forces, are able to completely follow Master's requirements and play a positive role, and there are celestial soldiers and celestial generals who are also safeguarding the Fa. It's not that no Gods are participating—some righteous Gods are participating. You can go ahead and paint them. Dafa disciples can call upon divine power and *gong* when they have righteous thoughts, but it's hard for them to call upon their divine side that has completed cultivation.

Question: When Dafa disciples participate in the Fa-rectification in other dimensions, are they also in the images of Buddhas, Daos, or Gods? Are they in the same images as other Buddhas, Daos, and Gods?

Teacher: Yes, their images are like that. Dafa disciples only validate the Fa among everyday people. On the other side they basically don't move. But when they send forth righteous thoughts they can call upon their abilities on that other side. Validating the Fa is for the most part being done by their main body here, and when their righteous thoughts are strong they can call upon their energy, Fa implements, and divine power—that's usually how it is.

Question: Then can they only sit there?

Teacher: It's because they are not allowed to move on their own when the main body is not present. And that's because when their main body has completed cultivation they move along with it. If they move without the main body, isn't that equivalent to that part being independent? And wouldn't that become another being, then? And it might take your place or turn around and control you. Could that be allowed? Then everything that was cultivated would no longer be you, and that can't be allowed. So it's required that after the main body completes everything they are combined into one. Let me put it this way, if your arm starts moving by itself and can't be controlled, then is it still yours? (*Everyone laughs*)

Question: If they don't move on that other side, how do they do things?

Teacher: The ones who are truly doing things are you, who are validating the Fa in the human world. You are the ones sending righteous thoughts here, and you are clarifying the facts and saving the world's people. When your righteous thoughts are strong, you can call upon your energy. At different levels there are energy, Fa-implements, and *gong* of different levels, and the stronger your righteous thoughts, the stronger your ability to call upon them. Some students' primordial spirit can depart the shell, leave the body, and they are also playing a role in the Fa-rectification. Those whose primordial spirit can leave the shell are the ones who are able to control the divine part of their body that has completed cultivation.

Question: There are many Buddhas, Daos, and Gods in Buddhist paintings. Can we use them as a reference?

Teacher: Yes, you can.

Question: Since cursive-style calligraphy is warped, does it mean that we have to use the regular style or the official script style when we put words, poems, or inscriptions in our paintings?

Teacher: Cursive-style calligraphy is written in a state in which a person is indulging his negative side and his notions are dominating. I think it's good to write neatly and clearly. Since characters are passed down to humans from Gods, doing that is being respectful to Gods. I can only tell you the Fa-truths. You might say, "I just like the cursive style, and what I've practiced is the cursive style." At present, I'm not concerned with what ordinary people are doing, but Dafa disciples must be upright.

Question: Master, could you please talk about what you think of the Dunhuang murals?

Teacher: There used to be a large monastery there in ancient times, but the building was ruined by war and years of neglect. The Dunhuang murals were done over a period of time around the Tang Dynasty. Some of them depict scenes in the heavens. Since they were painted when Buddhism was flourishing, and a lot of people believed in Buddhas and believed in religions, a lot of people would see scenes of Buddhas or of Gods and people would depict them. But, being affected by the immature painting skills of the East, their works weren't as mature or accurate as Western art in terms of visual perspective and bodily structures. Nevertheless, the fact that those people had such skills one to two thousand years ago allowed Buddhism and the arts in China to display the brilliance of that ancient culture.

Question: Master, I'd like to ask you about the other ancient civilizations, for instance, Egypt and the Mayan culture in South America. [The Gods they believed in] seem to be very different from the Buddhas, Daos, and Gods that we know. Did they really exist before?

Teacher: Those civilizations did exist. Those people believed in different Gods, and many of them were upright Gods.

Question: Master, regarding the supernatural animals of the East and the Gods of the East, what Fa-implements do they generally have?

Teacher: Wow, it's like you're asking how many particles there are in the cosmos. There are so, so many of them. Every God has Fa-implements, and more than just one. The Fa-implements of those who ascend through cultivation are formed during the person's cultivation process. For example, the bowls, rosaries, and wooden bells that Buddhist monks often use, the horsetail whisks and swords of the Daoists, etc.—all these things can become Fa-implements as the person cultivates. When a monk moves through his rosary beads one-by-one while he chants Buddha's name every day, the energy in his hands increases as his level rises, and as he continues to move through them, the energy in them becomes quite full and even the nature of the beads changes. When he succeeds in cultivation later on, each bead becomes a Fa-implement, and the whole strand of beads together forms another Fa-implement. With those who reach a high level, each bead is like a world and it has everything in it. All kinds of things can become Fa-implements. While Dafa disciples validate the Fa, if you write articles to validate Dafa, then even that pen you use every day has earned merit and virtue, and perhaps even your pen will become a Fa-implement in the future. Once something used by a cultivator has earned merit and virtue, it can become a Fa-implement, and that includes the brushes, pens, and pencils you use to paint or draw when you validate the Fa.

Question: Master, I have a question on sculptures. The Greek and Roman sculptures appear to be very precise. But when I look back at the Buddha statues from the Tang Dynasty in China, I find that

[although they aren't as precise] they are very moving. So I don't think proportions affect people's admiration of Gods.

Teacher: That's true. The statues of Buddhas and Gods have Law Bodies of the Buddhas and Gods in them, so of course they're different from ordinary statues, and that's why they can move people. That's exactly what I was talking about just now. The Chinese people pay particular attention to conveying feelings and ideas, whereas Westerners focus on accurately expressing what's on the surface. These are two different approaches, and both can excite people. Those Eastern paintings and drawings can move people because they are depicting Gods—they wouldn't if they were of everyday people. The Gods in Western paintings can arouse a sense of admiration as well. But if the Western paintings portray ordinary people, then people won't be excited. If the skills and techniques of Chinese paintings, drawings, and sculptures were as mature and accurate as those of the West, wouldn't they be more moving and more vivid? You can't consider an immature and imperfect work of art all right because of the effect a God is having. A perfect work of art with the presence of a God is what's most sacred.

Question: So we should learn from their techniques?

Teacher: What I'm talking about isn't just about technique. What I'm saying is that you should paint or draw in the traditional and upright way, and try your best to perfect your artistry. In this way, you're improving yourself and also being respectful to Gods.

Question: (Translated) What I'd like to ask is, I use computers to do design, and often take close-up shots. For instance, I might take close-up shots of Dafa disciples or everyday people. I was wondering if I could use close-up shots of a person's face, etc., in my design. I'm not sure if that's appropriate, or what the standard is.

Teacher: Yes, you can. And in addition to close-up shots, you can use the whole person as a model. But you must have a correct aesthetic standard, instead of going with what you like based on human notions.

Question: Teacher, the skills of the students in China are better than ours in this regard. In other words, they have been better trained. Can they contribute some things? What I mean is, our students in China should have a great number of paintings that are superior to ours.

Teacher: At present, let's not count on the students in Mainland China. Right now we're only having Dafa disciples in the countries outside of Mainland China who are professionals in this arena work on this. Of course, it wouldn't be a problem to find even a thousand Dafa disciples in Mainland China who are excellent painters. But a vicious persecution is taking place there right now.

Question: What I'd like to ask is, how are movies, television programs, and drawings and paintings related to the traditional drawings and paintings?

Teacher: Nothing is free from the impact of the trend of its time—that's why the characters' appearances in many cartoons are actually quite ugly, in my view. Some that are meant to express goodness are not good, and their images are actually quite wicked. What I'm telling you today is to return to the path of human beings through righteous thoughts, Goodness, and the traditional and upright approaches. While blazing the path for the world's people of the future, Dafa disciples need to first find their upright thoughts with respect to the arts again.

Question: Master, I'd like to ask you how painting is related to music composition.

Teacher: In both cases, you need to create the work with upright thoughts. Earlier, I talked to those who are involved in composing music. I just finished talking with them, so I won't talk about it here. I talked to them for several hours as well.

Question: Teacher, you talked about compassion, but I don't want to depict a very large scene.

Teacher: Then depicting a small topic is also good. Both are fine. If you want to depict a very small matter, and you don't want to portray a large scene, and you want a small-sized picture, that'll work, too.

Question: Master, what do the Eight Groups of Heavenly Law-Guardians look like?

Teacher: The Eight Groups of Heavenly Law-Guardians were mentioned by Shakyamuni. He was actually referring to eight types of sentient beings—eight groups of beings, lives. What I've arranged is for celestial soldiers and celestial generals to be your law guardians, and there are also dragons—these two groups. Of course, a very small number of Dafa disciples also have exceptional situations with their law guardians. The law guardians of those other groups can't be described accurately, because the sentient beings in those several other groups are all going through the Fa-rectification. Whether they will be kept and whether they can come through remains to be seen after the Fa-rectification.

Teacher: You've raised your hand a few times.

Question: I just want to say, I feel that Dafa provides a lot of themes for our works. After these several years, Dafa has shaken heaven and earth.

Teacher: Yes, that's true.

Question: So I've been very excited, and feel that there are so many themes in Dafa that are really moving and worth exalting. As Dafa disciples and artists, we have this responsibility, and we need to fulfill what we should do. But of course, when we actually paint or draw, we face quite a few challenges. Today, after Master explained things in person, we feel that we now have direction for a lot of things. I'd like to raise a specific point, which is, I hope that the organizers of our fine art exhibition will do some overall coordination in terms of the major themes. This is because in our minds there are a lot of themes we need to paint or draw on, and they're quite important.

Teacher: The coordination you mentioned is important. When some of you have opened up your thinking, go ahead and sketch out the ideas, then those of you who have the ability to paint or draw can just go ahead and work on them instead of having to conceive your own work. Doing it that way would also be good.

Question: Some Dafa disciples have very good designs and really good ideas, but don't have good skills. So just like how we do things at the radio stations and television stations that have been set up by Dafa disciples, we can share our information, materials, designs, and techniques. We especially need to ensure the quality of our major themes, because at the very first exhibition by Dafa disciples, we should demonstrate a level that truly represents us Dafa disciples. So I think that large and small works are both good. But it's a bit hard to exhibit something that's too large. For instance, say I have great ideas and I think that my techniques can achieve a certain level, but I feel that I can't see a lot of things or don't know how to draw or paint them, then we can complement each other.

Teacher: Yes, that's how you should do it. You can have two people be responsible for coming up with the concepts and designs, and then whoever is able to paint or draw them can go ahead and work on them. That way, you'll reduce the time it takes to conceive your artwork. You just need to have a basic, rough and general outline, and because all of you have the skills and ability, you'll be able to go ahead with it. I think that idea is very constructive.

I think this is all I'll say. What's left are more specific things, and you can handle those things well and figure out how to create a Dafa disciples' path, because everything you do today is of utmost importance. If you do well, mankind will emulate it; if you don't do well, mankind will emulate that as

well. So Dafa disciples have to do well. Those artworks of yours that aren't good or aren't upright can't be presented to the public, because it will impact mankind. So you should not only do it in a traditional and upright way, depict what's good, depict compassion, exalt Dafa, and give glory to Gods, but also, at the same time you need to demonstrate a high level of excellence in terms of skill, and demonstrate a traditional and upright standard. (*Applause*)

Li Hongzhi

July 21, 2003 in Washington D.C.

Master's Comment on a Student's Article

I suggest that all Dafa disciples read this article.

Li Hongzhi

November 1, 2003

Comment on a student's article, "Golden Buddha," published the same day

Master's Comment on a Student's Article

Exposing the wicked policemen and bad persons and publicizing their evil deeds is extremely effective at shocking and restraining those irrational, wicked people. At the same time, by clarifying the facts to the people on a local level it most directly exposes, and generates public awareness of, the wicked persecution. It is also a great way to save the people who have been poisoned and deceived by the lies. I hope all Dafa disciples and new students in Mainland China will do this well.

Li Hongzhi

November 15, 2003

Revised on October 8, 2005

Master's New Year's Day 2004 Greeting to Dafa Disciples

Dafa disciples of Mainland China,

Dafa disciples around the world,

Happy New Year!

Lasting or momentary – all caused by time

Fa-rectification has forged the New Epoch

The long, drawn-out years of glory and suffering

All to fulfill the grand pledge today

For the sake of all living things, for the sake of validating Dafa, stay diligent on the path to godhood!
The future, eternal harmonization will exist alongside your glory!

Li Hongzhi

December 31, 2003

Teaching the Fa at the 2003 Atlanta Fa Conference

Hello, everyone! (*Students: Hello, Master!*) There are some Fa conferences that I do attend, while some others I might not. You all know that Dafa disciples have now become more mature. In validating the Fa, and on this path of gods, you all know what to do. At such a time, it may be that the less I speak, the more it benefits you all. And why do I say that? Because this period of time is precisely given to each of you as an opportunity to temper yourselves, this period of time is precisely given to you as an opportunity to establish your mighty virtue. So I can't always have you do things without thinking them over on your own, and I can't have you *not* blaze your own path while validating your own Fruition. If you are always led by Master, if I still tell you what to do when it comes to specific things in validating the Fa, that doesn't work. Once Dafa disciples reach Consummation, your Fruition and levels won't be low. In other words, the responsibilities that you will have for future beings are immense. Then if that's the case, if you don't possess that kind of mighty virtue, haven't blazed your own path, and don't know what to do when you need to do things independently, that won't do. So I have deliberately given you this period of time, so that you can have opportunities to temper yourselves and become mature.

In fact, I've been quietly observing and watching. Since you're all in the midst of cultivation, you still have human attachments. You have human attachments, so you're able to cultivate; you have human attachments, so they'll show themselves. Then, while doing anything that has to do with validating the Fa, including doing things as a group and doing things on your own, you'll think for yourselves and try to come up with ways to solve tough problems. And when you are thinking things over, whether you use human notions or the righteous thoughts of a cultivator is going to determine the different results you get. The same holds true for when you work together to do things. And when you put your heads together to figure something out, this is the case, too, and you might even get into arguments over certain issues. This is due, of course, to the human attachments you have, but there's also something positive about it. When you argue you can see your attachments and your shortcomings. If you can put the Fa first, let go of your self, and deal with your problems with righteous thoughts, you will be able to reach a decision quickly and do things well in validating the Fa. And actually, compared to the past few years, things are quite good now. You've all truly matured. I don't want to say more about this today. I mainly want to talk about clarifying the truth.

As soon as the subject of clarifying the truth comes up, a lot of practitioners think, "When we clarify the truth, our goal is to expose the evil, suppress it, and bare it to the light of day so that people all over the world can see it for what it is, and then the evil will have nowhere to hide." This is what you need to do, but that's not what is most important. The most important goal in clarifying the truth is to save all beings.

Every Dafa disciple will shoulder immense responsibilities in the future. There are so many beings that need you to save them—there are so many lives that need you to save them. During this period of time, you yourselves need to harmonize and consummate everything that's needed for your own Fruition and countless beings. Your mighty virtue and everything of gods are within it. That's why I often say that in validating the Fa, you should do well the three things Dafa disciples need to do, and everything is encompassed in them. So I say that the most important goal for you in clarifying the truth is to save even more beings in the process. This is what's foremost, and this is the real purpose of clarifying the truth.

During this persecution, no matter how the old forces have arranged things, no matter how viciously the evil people in the world have acted, no matter how frantically the evil beings in every dimension have persecuted Dafa disciples and how many of the world's people they've poisoned, have you

thought about something: can they damage Dafa? Not a chance. And you've seen that after experiencing the most evil persecution in history, which has lasted four years, other than Dafa disciples tempering themselves and becoming more mature, more clearheaded, and more composed during the persecution—you've become more and more rational, your righteous thoughts have become stronger and stronger, and the moment when you will return to your positions is getting closer—other than that, what else is there? Isn't that all there is to it? Haven't those Dafa disciples who were killed by persecution reached Consummation? It's true that during the persecution a portion [of our students] stopped cultivating—if they aren't good enough they will be sifted out, and what remains will be gold.

Of course, once a being studies my Dafa I will take care of him and treat him as a Dafa disciple, as a student. If he truly can't enter [this practice] himself, then that's his own business. So everybody should be clear on this point. Whether it's the whole persecution or all those arrangements the old forces made, in reality, I took those things into consideration when I planned my Fa-rectification long ago. They can't damage the Fa. I don't acknowledge the persecution. That's for sure. Are they allowed to control and even beat to death a being that has listened to the Fa and cultivated in my Dafa? They'll definitely have to pay for it in the future. And of course there are other factors at work. When it comes to those who genuinely do well, they truly don't dare to touch them. When it comes to those who oppose the old forces' arrangements and who have very strong righteous thoughts, they can't touch them. In other words, during this period of time, no matter how bad the persecution is, if the Dafa disciples' minds are very upright, they have very strong righteous thoughts, and understand everything clearheadedly and calmly, a lot of losses will be averted.

You need to be clear that a Dafa disciple's cultivation is about stepping out of humanness; it is to step out of the old colossal firmament that is restrained by all kinds of factors that result from endless, countless, innumerable beings in this old cosmos; it is to gain a new life, emerging from an environment that is at the last of the last stage of the formation-stasis-degeneration-destruction process of the colossal firmament. Who can step out of all of this? To escape everything and be able to truly enter the future is indeed very hard. As a matter of fact, the difficulties you've run into cultivating amidst the persecution are manifestations here among humans. But in reality, in other dimensions that the world's people can't see and that are beyond this environment of ordinary people, things are even more intense. It is the shocking and soul-stirring process of immense disintegration and reintegration. The entire cosmos's beings are watching this affair, and countless, measureless gods are also watching. Encompassed in all of these changes are the factors of Dafa disciples validating the Fa. What are displayed in the human world are the three things that you're doing at this time. As for the behavior of the evil, that's it [acting] in an irrational, crazed state before its disintegration, and it provides Dafa disciples with the conditions to reach Consummation.

Clarifying the truth during the gigantic changes has already become the major way of saving all beings and the world's people, so in doing this, the wisdom that Dafa has given you and the enormous capability that the Fa has provided you with are manifesting. Your clarifying the truth inevitably initiates a sort of chain reaction. Once a person knows the truth, he realizes, "Oh, so that's how it is. Dafa is so great, after all!" Some people who've learned the truth may think about taking up cultivation, some may be quite sympathetic, and others might offer support in the form of concrete actions. These responses that came about through clarifying the truth spread from person to person, heart to heart. The evil factors are losing their habitat. Dafa and the righteous factors are covering and enriching everything, and at the same time, in terms of the persecution, this will bring about changes in society and on every front, and the wicked people will thus have no audience and the evil beings nothing to exploit. That's the inevitable effect. Things look ordinary and uneventful when you clarify the truth, but the effect is huge.

In fact, you've all seen that in the course of Dafa disciples clarifying the truth, the people of the world have been changing. It's completely different now from back when the persecution started on July 20 of '99. And it's not just that the people of the world are becoming clearheaded, other living beings and material factors are going through these changes too. In other words, the situation is totally different. Of course, it's not that the evil has stopped persecuting, but that those factors the old forces arranged, in being destroyed, have become less and less, and the evil no longer has much strength. But even without that much strength, as long as it still exists it's still very evil, very bad. But the evil no longer has that much strength and it doesn't have the environmental factors that it needs, so it can no longer control that many of the world's people or other beings. And then when the world's people and all other lives aren't controlled by the evil, it's much easier at that point for you to clarify the truth. If you do it well, then the people of the world and all beings will wake up. And once the beings wake up, the evil has no audience at all and it really can't do things rampantly. People will oppose it and isolate it, and the evil won't be able to do whatever it wants, since nobody will listen to it. That's what the current trend is; it is the change that's come about in the course of saving all beings.

Actually, I used to tell you about how in the past a cultivator couldn't care less about what the world's people said about him. If somebody said he was good or he was bad, it was [to him just] something humans said, not gods. In fact, there have been a lot of people in history who the world's people said were bad, and it's even been put that way in textbooks and historical accounts, but it's possible they became gods. And there are those who the world's people exalted as role models but who went to Hell after death. That's because when people talk about good and bad it's all based on human interests. Human principles are reversed: when people think something is good, it's not necessarily truly good, and when people think something is bad, it's not necessarily truly bad. In other words, cultivators didn't heed what people said. But today's Fa-rectification is different, and whether someone says Dafa and Dafa disciples are good or bad determines that person's future. In the current campaign of persecution, in particular the persecution of Dafa disciples, this suppression brought on by the evil, it's interfering with me and the Fa-rectification itself, so it's different from cultivation in the past. It is absolutely a sin to persecute Dafa disciples, and everyone involved will pay for it—none of the lives that participated in it can escape.

The cosmos is going through Fa-rectification, so think about it everybody, during the Fa-rectification the entire cosmos, from the microscopic level to the surface, is constantly making breakthroughs. No matter how big the enormous cosmic body is, no matter how many lives it has, no matter whether it is a life or not, no matter if it has intention or not, no matter if it has an existence or not—nothing can escape, because everything in the future will be completely renewed. It's even more the case for the human race here in this world and all the lives at the surface—they have no way of escaping. The Fa-rectification also encompasses all of the higher beings, and right now no god dares to say that this Fa-rectification has nothing to do with him. Of course, right now nobody dares to say that, nobody can escape from it. So during the Fa-rectification, there must be a complete reckoning for what each life has done. It's not that if some life did something bad it will be destroyed and that's the end of it. That wouldn't work. It still has to pay, while undergoing complete destruction, for all of the bad things it did. I treat all beings with the greatest mercy. No matter how great a sin or how big a mistake any of the lives in history committed, I could overlook their faults and sins, and I could remove their sins. The prerequisite is of course that during Fa-rectification you can't interfere with it; I would save you even if you didn't do a single thing. But once a being interferes with Fa-rectification what it faces is elimination. And those who've committed the most egregious sins have to pay for everything they've done while being eliminated. However much was done, that's how much has to be paid for; however big the things it did, that's how much it has to pay for. So this time, when it comes to the evil beings that interfere with Fa-rectification, no matter how wicked they are, what they face is a terrifying end

that's never been seen before in the cosmos. And this includes the old forces themselves. Even though they thought they were making a contribution for Dafa's sake, in reality they were looking at things based on their own concepts. They never truly looked at themselves or used Fa-rectification itself to evaluate themselves, or used this Fa to evaluate themselves. But since the future *is* this Fa, and the beings of the future are created by this Fa, what other than this Fa could be used to evaluate things?

So when it comes to the issue of truth-clarification, since it's so important, you should do it even more calmly and level-headedly, and you should recognize more clearheadedly the different kinds of opportunities, ways of handling things, and approaches that we encounter while clarifying the truth. It's something you all need to pay attention to. You know that when I disseminate the Fa I don't pay attention to what group in society a person belongs to or his social status, and I don't differentiate between rich and poor, the various professions, or a person's status at his job. I don't look at anything except a person's heart. You should do the same when you clarify the truth. Don't think about him being some elite figure and create an extra mental obstacle for yourself, as if you're there to ask for his help. What's actually happening is that you're saving him, and you're giving him a chance to choose his future. That's for sure. So you should consider saving the world's people as the primary objective of clarifying the truth.

Everything that Dafa disciples are doing today and everything in society you encounter, I can tell you, you *are* saving all beings. So no matter what kind of person you meet, what strata of society he's from, or what profession he's in, don't think that you're just going to him to explain the truth merely because evil is persecuting Dafa disciples. I'll tell you, saving all beings is first and foremost, and clarifying the truth is the way to save people. When people understand the facts and find out how wicked the persecution is, people will naturally know what to do. And if afterwards you ask him to lend support and do something about it, that's him choosing a future. So with those people who've been deceived in the persecution, all the more so, how could you not give them a chance? If you don't tell them the facts they will lose their futures forever.

Also, with those people that you run into by chance, who you run into in daily life, and the people you run into at work, you should all clarify the truth to them. Even when in your daily life you pass by people so quickly that you don't have a chance to talk to them, you should still leave them with your compassion and kindness. Don't lose those who should be saved, especially those with predestined connections. Actually, a lot of Dafa disciples say when they're clarifying the truth, "I'm going to go clarify the truth now," as if at that moment they're going to clarify the truth, but they don't clarify the truth normally. Saving beings should permeate every single aspect of your daily lives at this time. If you can all understand and really see its importance, I think you'll probably save more beings. Now the world's people are gradually becoming more clearheaded, and the impact of clarifying the truth right now is even greater. The audience those evil beings have is getting smaller and smaller, so you must understand this issue clearheadedly.

There is a small number of students who are privately becoming like buddies and pals—"we do things together, we're a little group"—and they often talk about a bunch of useless things, wasting large amounts of time. Right now every minute and every second is crucial. If you miss out during this period of time, you miss out on everything. History won't recur. The history of the cosmos and the Three Realms have gone through so many, long, long years—what have all the beings been waiting for? What are they all here for? For exactly these few years! Yet there are [Dafa] students who are squandering their lives during these few years, not seizing the time. And yet you are shouldering such huge responsibilities for all beings and for history!

Yes, some students aren't clearheaded enough and feel that obtaining the Fa was quite a coincidence. [They wonder,] "Do *I* have such a huge historic responsibility? Am *I* able to take it on?" In reality

there's no need to even ask that, I've already spelled it out quite clearly in the Fa. Not everyone can cultivate in this Dafa that I'm imparting today. Why is it that so many people can't enter? Of course, there are a lot of new students who are now gradually coming in, and that's due to your clarifying the truth. It's like a master key, unlocking that old-force factor that seals the world's people off and prevents them from learning the Fa. Only your clarifying the truth can do this. To put it another way, not everyone can obtain it. With things that manifest in the human realm it's hard to tell what's true and what's false, the true state of the cosmos isn't allowed to show itself, and the special states of Dafa disciples that set them apart from the world's people cannot be completely displayed. After all, it's cultivation in the maze—it's about cultivating in that kind of state and breaking free from it. Don't underestimate yourself. Every Dafa disciple, as long as you've cultivated according to this Fa, you should do the things Dafa disciples are supposed to do.

Actually, I've said that for an ordinary person who has done something good for Dafa during this period, at this critical time, it's possible for even that person to reach Consummation as a god, let alone you, who are cultivating in the Dafa, who are doing what Dafa disciples should do, and doing all of it under tough conditions. You can't see much of a difference on the surface, but it does manifest in other dimensions—that is precisely the difference between humans and gods. The changes are gigantic. This place of humans is enshrouded in delusion, and the real state of things and what's here in this human place are totally different. Only those Dafa disciples who fall behind in Fa-study will display a lack of diligence and feel dejected during this period of time, even to the extent that they don't know how precious this time is and don't seize the time to do what Dafa disciples should do.

Even now, in fact, there are some students who are doing very poorly with Fa-study. Being able to study the Fa well is the fundamental guarantee that you can head towards Consummation, it's the fundamental guarantee that you can emerge from here. All beings were forged by this Fa, as are your futures. As for the cosmos's future beings, because many, many lives have been weeded out during the Fa-rectification, there are many places in the cosmos that are empty. But they won't remain empty forever. Dafa will create from the Fa all of the lives, along with various factors and matter that are needed by those levels of cosmic bodies. And Dafa is forging all of the new lives that are needed. The old lives may renew themselves only after assimilating to this Fa, and in this way enter the future. All lives are encompassed by this.

Actually right now the overall Fa-rectification is already coming to the surface more and more. The last factors that remain can't be called lives anymore, they can't be called anything, there's no language to express what they are and no concept to describe them, but everything is in this final process of Fa-rectification. Actually, if we were to use the concepts of "the cosmos" and "beyond the cosmos" to describe it, Fa-rectification already fits the concept of "beyond the cosmos." Meaning, Fa-rectification is now working on those factors that allow the firmament to exist, and even the factors in the factors.

That being said, right now you still can't feel it, but from the current situation of Dafa disciples' Fa-validation you can see that the situation has changed. The evil can't be sustained anymore, and that's because the evil lives and factors have been destroyed to the point of very little being left, and there's no comparison with how things were on July 20 of '99. I've described to you what it was like back then: evil beings from other dimensions attached to each blade of grass and each tree. As you walked down the street tree branches would whip you in the face, the grass would trip you, and the air was filled with evil. It's not that all of that really turned evil, it was the effect of bad lives and factors that were pushed down into the Three Realms during Fa-rectification. Everywhere, things were saturated with evil factors. They attached themselves to everything, doing the worst things in the Three Realms and among humans. If this Fa-rectification wasn't done in two parts and instead I did it in one step, then the wave of persecution would have been global, just like the European prophet said: in 1999 the

King of Terror would descend from the skies, and people the world over would feel the frenzy of the persecution. This time when the evil arrived, other countries around the world and other nations didn't experience the evilness of the persecution against Falun Gong that began in '99, and that's because this was to be done in two parts; having other nations or more of the world's people cultivate Dafa is something left for the next step. And you've seen that today it is Fa-rectification Period Dafa Disciples' cultivation, and things aren't directed at more people around the world. That's why the kind of persecution that took place against Dafa disciples in China hasn't happened in other countries, and as a result other nations haven't experienced evil of that magnitude. But because the evil factors were just so, so many back then, for Dafa students, no matter what country the student was in, he or she would feel mental pressure.

Right now the situation is no longer like that. The overall Fa-rectification is destroying evil factors in mass quantities, and Dafa disciples have clarified the truth while validating the Fa, along with this sending righteous thoughts to continually cleanse themselves and clear out the evil in other dimensions, as well as all the other things you've done validating the Fa. All of that is destroying those evil beings and factors that the old forces arranged, and it has had a huge effect. When a Dafa disciple's righteous thoughts are strong his existence in the world has a positive effect. So take a look, everybody— isn't it true that the amount of evil factors left now is tiny? It's nowhere close to the situation of July 20 in '99.

However, even though those evil factors aren't as many, the remaining ones are still pretty wicked. I always told you in the past: the closer it is to the surface the less power it has, but the closer it is to the surface the more evil it is. So it's making up for its weaker power by being more evil on the surface, and the evil still appears quite wicked. But you've seen that the environment has already changed. The evil can only be sustained in those places directly controlled by that evil ringleader—those places where hopeless, evil people are still doing evil. Right now they can't even be sustained at the surface of Mainland China's society; the evil's suppression is being carried out covertly, and they're afraid to let the world's people see it. Actually, all of the righteous forces are destroying it, and the evil is scared. They don't dare to do things out in the open, and they're carrying out the suppression by sneaking around. They're afraid more of the world's people will learn of the evil things they've done, and those things can't stand the light of day. They won't even let cadres—even high-ranking cadres in the Central Government—know about it. They're even lying and covering up the persecution internally. But it's only those few wicked, worst dregs of society that are making wicked people below them carry out the evil persecution. They're doing their utmost to cover up the despicable means they've used in the persecution, and they're even making false reports to the Central Government's cadres. They're using lies to sustain the evil persecution. The evil has now been destroyed in massive amounts, and it looks like the evil ones can no longer run wild. Back when the evil was rampant, there were countless rotten ghosts propping it up so that it could run wild, and even when others knew the truth of things they didn't dare to speak out. Around July 20 of '99, when that evil ringleader was stomping around making a ruckus to get its way, nobody dared make a sound. At that time the evil factors supporting it were just so numerous, and it wanted to suppress [Falun Gong]. The situation is different from what it was like back then, all of the factors arranged by the old forces are being cleared away and becoming less and less numerous, and the current environment appearing in the human realm is different. It doesn't matter how frenzied the evil people get, it's all over for them.

But in this period you've all seen something, and that is, how many lives have sinned against Dafa (and that's not including those who've committed the worst, most wicked sins). Once they understand the truth, is that the end of it? It's not that simple. But, when you have somebody understand things by clarifying the truth, that is giving him a chance. If he truly has an upright thought, it gives him a chance to atone for his sins. A person has to pay for whatever he has done—that's a law of the cosmos, and all beings are subject to it. When the persecution first started, how many people had to pitch in to bring

about that evil situation back then? If nobody played such a role, and nobody did or said anything, could that evil environment back then have been created? Whether they were in China or abroad, as long as they played such a role in that process, pushed the persecution forward, or actively contributed in words or deeds, they have to pay for it. No life can escape, unless he has made up for the losses he caused Dafa and Dafa disciples.

The gods of the entire cosmos are staring, wide-eyed. Boundless, countless gods are watching this tiny little Earth, watching intently every life's every thought. They're afraid even to blink, as they don't want to miss an instant or let a person's single thought slip by. At this time, I talk about these things to tell you to calmly, level-headedly, and more clearly understand what you're currently doing. No matter what you're doing, Dafa disciples must make validating the Fa the number one priority.

But, you have to clarify the truth rationally and in line with people's logic and ways of thinking. If you talk about it in a strange, otherworldly way, not at all based on people's logic and way of thinking, and not considering whether people can accept it or not, then you're doing harm and the result is opposite what was intended. Make sure you do it rationally and clearheadedly. When you clarify the truth to people you have to consider their level of acceptance. You'll be able to see and observe this, so you have to do well clarifying the truth. Don't just go to talk for the sake of formality. Whenever you talk to someone you need to have him understand. Of course, there are those that absolutely can't be saved, since they've gone all the way over to the opposite side. That kind of person no longer has anything righteous, and when you talk to him he can't accept it since whenever he accepts a little bit, a little bit of him has to be destroyed—whenever he accepts a little bit, a little bit of him is destroyed. If he completely accepts it, then he's completely destroyed, because he *is* evil. So there are those that can't be saved, but that's an extremely small minority, ultimately.

There are also some people who, even if you want to save them, like I said earlier, even if you give those people a chance and they understand, they still have to repay their debts. That's how it works. That's speaking from the Fa's principles. But you shouldn't worry about those things, since as Dafa disciples you cultivate Shan, and you have to be compassionate to all beings. As for how those lives should pay off those debts, naturally there's the Fa to determine that. Whether or not they should remain is determined by the Fa's standards. So as Dafa disciples, just do your best to save them, that's all.

Why should you save them? I've said before that the beings in today's world are different from the lives in history, and they're different from the people in the past. When any life arrives in this world and enters this world of delusion, it's truly terrifying. For a god, you know, just a moment ago when you saw him he was a magnificent god, but once he enters this world, enters a human body, and that brain is washed clean, that's really scary, and now he can't distinguish things; so based on his actions you can't tell the origin of his life, and you can't see the essential difference between him and his life in the past.

That is what I wanted to talk about, actually—to just talk with you about the subject of clarifying the truth. You still want to talk with me about some things, so I think I'll use the time that follows to answer some questions for you. If you have a question you can write it down on a slip of paper. (*Applause*) Let's not take too long since in the experience sharing conference there are still people who need to give their speeches.

Explaining the Fa

Question: Beijing students send greetings to Master (Teacher: I'm going to skip reading this part). When the Fa-rectification ends, or in other words, right before we reach Consummation, will I be able to see you? If that doesn't happen it will be my eternal regret. I don't know if I should think this way.

Will my wish come true?

Teacher: Aren't you seeing me right here and now? (*Everyone laughs*) You want to see my True Image. (*Teacher laughs*) Cultivate yourself well. Every Dafa disciple will be able to see it as long as he can reach Consummation. (*Applause*) Dafa disciples not only have the kind of predestined relationship that you have today, one that countless beings don't have, but in fact, I have prepared for you a being's eternal and everlasting glory in the future. (*Applause*)

Question: Dafa disciples in Wuhan City, Hubei Province miss you and send greetings to Teacher.

Teacher: Thank you! (*Applause*)

Question: Some people say that Falun Gong is good, but they aren't willing to help practitioners, for example, when we try to place our newspapers [in those places], or when they don't announce Dafa's name during activities. If these people aren't able to change, how will they end up?

Teacher: Actually, some people aren't clear about Dafa at this time. And that's especially so for those who've been too deeply deceived during this persecution that's so evil. If Dafa disciples aren't able to untie the knots in those people's minds when they clarify the truth, it's possible they are still in the process of coming to understand Dafa, and for the time being they can't be judged conclusively. At this time it can't be said that they are good and it can't be said that they are bad. It's possible you haven't done enough in clarifying the truth.

Question: How should we understand "The great disclosure of the truth will leave the world in amazement"?

Teacher: As a matter of fact, I used a gods' word, "amazement." Think about the immense changes of the entire cosmos, everyone. Just here among humans, in the next stage a lot of evil people will be weeded out, and the number who will be weeded out is large and terrifying. At the beginning people will still feel shocked, while by the end they'll be numb to it. What kind of state will a person be in when he sees dead people strewn everywhere on the street? The things that people don't believe in and historically have taken to be "superstition" will all unfold. People understand this material world through modern scientific concepts. When they discover that's not how it is at all, what will they think? Once the things that people don't believe in all appear, when they're faced with huge changes in this so-called material dimension, what kind of state are they going to be in? People will see that it turns out gods really do exist. "Whoa! It turns out Dafa disciples are all gods! It turns out everything Dafa disciples have been saying is true!" At the beginning they'll still have those kinds of thoughts, and then, while enduring suffering to pay for their sins, people will gradually become as if they don't have any thoughts. It will truly be "leaving the world in amazement."

Question: I want to write a historical chronicle of Falun Dafa and record all kinds of feats that have been accomplished since Master began to spread the Fa.

Teacher: I think it'd be remarkable if Dafa disciples could accomplish something like that. You may do it, but the effort will take a lot of time and energy. The Dafa disciples' three things are all major ones. Balance your time well.

Question: Please advise me as to whether I can write at a slightly higher level about righteous thoughts and righteous actions? Would it transcend Dafa?

Teacher: No matter how high a level you write at, you can't transcend Dafa, (*everyone laughs*) because it is just too enormous. The things that you can know are only what can be shown in the ordinary human society and those things that our Dafa disciples have done while using human actions to validate the Fa. There shouldn't be any problems with using those. After it is completed you can solicit

feedback from other people, and that way certain things will be done even better.

Question: I used to write martial arts fiction that had to do with cultivation. Is it OK to use the form of martial arts fiction to expound higher principles? How can I do a more intricate and detailed job in terms of artistic expression so that people of the world will accept correct cultivation concepts without realizing it?

Teacher: I think if you want to write a historical chronicle, that would be something more serious. Writing fiction is fine, but if you turn this whole matter of Dafa into fiction, it seems like the fictional aspect isn't all that appropriate. I think that with a historical chronicle it wouldn't hurt to cover more specific details and put more into bringing characters to life. With a fictional work, if it focuses on a certain disciple, a certain region, or a certain event, as it's just picking a subject matter, then that's fine.

Question: I would like to send greetings to Master on behalf of Dafa disciples in Mainland China.

Teacher: Thank you! (Applause)

Question: Secret agents use the gaps that we Dafa disciples have in Internet security to persecute us. But a portion of overseas Dafa disciples and those who are in positions of responsibility don't pay much attention to it, which has caused interference and damage to Fa-validating tasks and Dafa disciples. Master, please give us some guidance.

Teacher: I think everybody should pay attention to this point. Even though we don't have anything to hide, we can't let the secret agents interfere.

Speaking of secret agents, this occupation, which in the eyes of gods is the dirtiest human profession, causes people to become mentally twisted after leading lives that can't bear to see the light of day and that consist of doing things in a shadowy, secretive manner for long periods of time. It's actually a very tough life. And don't think they are all that capable. Not too long ago, a Taiwanese practitioner went to Shanghai and was arrested. Those secret agents in the State Security Bureau saw his fear and insisted on making him a secret agent. We all know those tactics were filthy and shameless, and only evil places are able to do things that way. Actually, I knew about their set of tricks a long time ago. Before they do this they first get to know you well. They even get to know what you like and dislike when it comes to food, clothing, living quarters, and transportation. And it includes getting to know the subject's relatives and friends well. Then they set a trap for you and arrest you. At the very first meeting they scare and threaten you, making you feel as if you're about to get shot to death. Then they take advantage of your mental state of being afraid and talk to you. If you don't want to talk, they'll share with you the things they gathered a long time ago. During the conversation you feel as if they know everything already, and it seems like they even know things only a very small number of people know. Under the influence of the attachment of fear, you strongly feel as if nobody around you is dependable, and you develop this erroneous notion that everyone is a secret agent, that nobody is trustworthy, and that you could be murdered at any time if you don't comply with the evil's demands. Actually it is your attachment of fear being taken advantage of. It's a ploy, and it is a set of methods that are used exclusively by spies. Of course, right now nobody in a democratic country dares to do things that way. Only an evil regime would dare to use that kind of evil method to violate people's human rights. In a democratic country that person would have been brought to a courtroom by now.

Don't be afraid of them making trouble. You shouldn't be overly concerned with every little thing, but you should all keep alert. You need to think about whether the evil can do harm to what you plan to do. You need to think about this. We don't have anything to hide, we don't have anything we're afraid of letting the world know, and we haven't done anything illegal. But as for the evil, we shouldn't give them any opportunity to do evil things. When it comes to the evil, the things Dafa disciples plan to do

must not be made known to the evil. So, many times you all really must pay attention to this matter. We can't let the evil people move first and do bad things before you have a chance to do something. That causes trouble and makes it harder for you to clarify the truth and bring salvation to people. So you must take these things seriously.

Question: Five hundred thousand Hong Kong residents took to the streets to protest Article 23. But some of those people still don't know the true situation with Falun Gong. Is it true they won't be saved just for opposing Article 23 and that they need us to clarify the truth to them in more depth?

Teacher: That evil Article 23 legislation, which has been rejected by all of Hong Kong's people, was from the beginning aimed at Hong Kong Dafa disciples and meant to persecute them. And it was aimed at Hong Kong's people so as to persecute them, too. So many people in Hong Kong stood up to oppose it. No matter what kind of perspective or what kind of motives they had at the time, when it was all said and done they were able to play a positive role in this matter. I think that with Hong Kong's residents, you could say they've chosen a very good future for themselves, and in terms of their attitude towards Dafa they already have a very good start. Many people knew Falun Gong well, and they were precisely against it [the legislation] for that reason. They laid a very good foundation for being saved in the future. As for those who are still unclear about Falun Gong and the reality of it being persecuted, you should clarify the truth in more depth, that's all.

Question: When inviting some big companies to participate in the Gala, if we don't clarify the truth and just invite them to celebrate the New Year with the Chinese people, isn't enough, is it?

Teacher: Of course it isn't enough. Everything that Dafa disciples are doing today is for the sake of saving people. Otherwise what are you doing it for? Clarifying the truth in an upright and open manner are the very things Dafa disciples should do. I'm also telling you that all beings in today's world came for the sake of the Fa. If you want a being to clearly understand this point, you should go and clarify the truth to him. It is a master key, the key that can unlock that thing all beings have had sealed off for a long time and been awaiting for ages. *(Applause)*

Actually, I'm thinking that with everything you, the Dafa disciples, are doing today, you aren't doing them for Dafa, and you aren't doing them for me, your master, either. You are doing them for yourselves. You are harmonizing your own worlds and establishing your own mighty virtue. You are collecting and saving beings that you need. You are all doing things for you, yourselves. From my perspective, as your master, I certainly have to tell you to do these things, because I want to harmonize everything of yours and I want to lead you to success. Only when you need things in certain regards do I tell you to go and do them.

Also, from the perspective of cultivating goodness and compassion, you should do these things. I'm just giving an example here. It doesn't stop at the Gala. It applies to all kinds of other things that you encounter and need to do. It applies to all those things. Saving all beings is what's most important. You shouldn't think [you are doing things] in order to add more programs to the Gala, and even less so are these things done to bring people some momentary happiness. I am asking you to save all beings. *(Applause)* If you're able to stage a high-quality gala that's filled with Dafa's positive energy, that in and of itself can have the effect of saving all beings. Wouldn't you be only too happy to do it? Isn't it an opportunity? *(Applause)*

Question: Some practitioners respect Dafa from the bottom of their hearts. They also are very diligent when clarifying the truth. But they just can't meet the standard when it comes to their own individual cultivation and they make mistakes frequently. They are bothered by it too.

Teacher: That's apt to happen. The reason is, you all understand the broader principles of the Fa, but

when it comes to individual issues, those factors of ordinary people that remain on an individual basis will in fact lead to attachments, and can manifest themselves. It might seem quite inconsistent but it actually isn't inconsistent, and when attachments get too big, bad cultivation states are going to emerge. When big problems arise you must pay attention to them. That's the most dangerous.

Having said that, another thing occurred to me, and that is, you shouldn't look at things in absolute terms. And that's especially true when it comes to those crooked principles that the evil in China propagates. For example, they spread, "if you want others to do well, you have to do well yourself first." Think about it everybody, is that saying right? Many people hold on to that saying and use it to hide their own mistakes that they don't want to correct. And that's especially so for those who have problems—they take it as the truth and won't let go. I can tell you, though, that this is absolutely wrong. Can't a person who isn't perfect tell you to do well? Can't a person who's made mistakes tell others to do well? What kind of logic is that? How many people have thought this over carefully?

As you know, Jesus said that all human beings have sins. So just because you have sins, you shouldn't tell your own children to behave well? Because you have sins, you shouldn't tell others not to commit crimes? That's definitely a ridiculous theory, isn't it? In reality, who among humans hasn't made a mistake? As soon as a person is born he creates karma. Everyone has made mistakes. Just because you have made mistakes it doesn't mean you can't tell others to do well. By the same token, just because someone has made mistakes, it doesn't mean that he can't tell you to do well. It depends on if what he says is right or wrong. That's how gods look at things. And in fact, that's how humans should look at things, too. That's the right principle.

The evil regime's propaganda has twisted that principle into this: if you want others to behave well, you have to behave well yourself. It's a very evil saying. On the surface it looks like, "Oh, it's true. That saying makes a lot of sense." But it doesn't make one bit of sense, and it can only play a negative role. Who can behave so well? Where can you find a perfect human being? Even with a cultivator who's reached the last step in his cultivation and not yet completely shed his human body, he still has sins and karma, and he still has attachments. But, when he reaches that step in cultivation he has far surpassed ordinary human beings. If we go by that saying, nobody can tell anybody else to behave well. Wouldn't society be done for?

Dafa disciples have attachments, ordinary human attachments that they have yet to eliminate by cultivating, and they have areas in which they fall short. But that doesn't mean a Dafa disciple is completely no good, it doesn't mean this being isn't up to par, and it doesn't mean this Dafa disciple hasn't cultivated himself well. In many, many areas he has cultivated very well. He makes mistakes because he still has attachments that need to be revealed so that he can realize his own shortcomings, and that's why they manifest. It's only possible to cultivate them when they show themselves. If things stay hidden and aren't displayed it's rather hard to remove them with cultivation, and if even he himself doesn't realize they exist, then it's really hard to cultivate.

Question: Master, please talk about how the media outlets operated by Dafa disciples should clarify the truth, especially the future outlook for cooperation in clarifying the truth inside Mainland China.

Teacher: Our current situation is basically like this: out of considerations for safety, conditions aren't yet ripe for Dafa disciples in Mainland China to set up media outlets; but they do distribute flyers and VCDs, and there are a lot of things they've done quite well. As for outside of Mainland China, the media outlets operated by Dafa disciples need to help the Chinese people see the true picture of the persecution as much as possible, they need to help all Chinese people see the truth—they must help all the Chinese people see the truth! (*Applause*) You need to save them. You need to help Chinese people see what kinds of things Chinese people have done during the persecution and what terrifying

consequences await the Chinese people if it continues.

Question: I could never completely eliminate my own attachments. I'm really worried about this, but I'm never able to do well.

Teacher: Study the Fa more, study the Fa more. *(Teacher laughs)* There's no magic pill. "Let's take a pill and the attachments will go away." *(Everyone laughs)* Actually, Dafa's mighty power is even more effective than some cure-all magic pill. Of course, you're all busy right now and have to do all kinds of things, there are a lot of things to do, and there are household chores, jobs, and other responsibilities to attend to. But you have to always cultivate yourself, so you still need to study the Fa.

Question: On this holiday, please accept all Dafa disciples' respect and gratitude. We will definitely do well and make Master happier and less worried.

Teacher: Thank you! *(Applause)* Dafa disciples are all still being persecuted. You want me to be happy, but I can't be. How many Dafa disciples are being persecuted in those evil labor camps in China at this very moment! But I do appreciate your goodwill.

Question: I've been thinking about the following: is it OK for those Dafa disciples who are well-known in society, for example the contact people of certain regions or disciples who've written many articles to clarify the truth about Dafa, to talk about their own thoughts, understandings, and analysis of certain issues in the human world, for example the issue of the [Chinese] territory, as members of society while participating in local activities, Chinese community activities, and activities of the "Bring Jiang to Justice Coalition"? What's the best way to do it so as to avoid misunderstandings from ordinary people?

Teacher: For Dafa disciples, cultivating and validating the Fa today are first and foremost. Dafa disciples must validate the Fa. For you, clarifying the truth and saving all beings are first and foremost.

In society certain democracy activists, and this includes some individuals who were involved in [the massacre on] June 4th, have been constantly assaulting the evil, brutal regime. They too promote things like human rights and freedom of belief, and their sharp criticism along those lines has had a positive effect in terms of exposing the persecution of Falun Gong. So from this perspective, they share common ground with us on this point. So then some of our practitioners want to speak from those angles, too. Actually, you need to remain level-headed and calmly analyze whether the thing you're doing has anything to do with Dafa and validating the Fa. If the answer is yes, you should go ahead and do it. If the answer is no, you shouldn't. You should never lose your way.

Do you know about your master? This cosmos is so immense. There are countless and immeasurable beings and countless and immeasurable cosmic bodies. So many beings are capable of dramatically affecting the human world with just one thought! There are so many beings, so many factors of the old forces and old beings, all of whom want to control this Fa-rectification and interfere with this Fa-rectification. None of them can change me. The path I've walked is straight. *(Applause)* They aren't able to interfere with me in any way. They can exhaust their ways and nothing will work. Here among humans there are all kinds of things that interfere, but none of that has any effect.

Isn't there a saying among people that, "You have your thousand brilliant ideas, but I have my own way"? In other words, Dafa disciples need to realize what they're doing. [You] must keep clearheaded about whether something is related to validating the Fa or not. We expose evil for the sake of saving all beings. As long as it has to do with the things Dafa disciples are doing today, you should go ahead and do it. And if it doesn't, you shouldn't. If a person goes in the wrong direction doing things and develops attachments as a result, those things will hurt the practitioner. If a task has to do with Dafa, and has to do with your validating the Fa or saving beings, then you should go ahead with it. In that case, the more

you do the more wide-open the road becomes. That's the case for sure. You absolutely must not get mixed up in the political struggles of ordinary people.

Question: Dafa disciples in Singapore and Malaysia send greetings to Master.

Teacher: Thank you! (Applause)

Question: When I have a lot of thought karma, can I send righteous thoughts at any given time and place?

Teacher: Do it based on your own situation. Some thoughts that you develop are actually interference, which can be eliminated by sending righteous thoughts. Some are the product of your own attachments, and some are concepts that you've formed in the human world; those things can't be eliminated by sending righteous thoughts just once. So they surface from time to time, and it seems that after you send righteous thoughts they still appear. That kind of thing happens. But it's not that you haven't done anything and it's not that what you did was not effective. It's just that each time only a portion of it can be eliminated. Those things that were arranged by the old forces have been divided into countless, countless portions by the factors of lives that come from higher levels. So, each time you send righteous thoughts you are only able to eliminate one or two portions, but more still remain.

It's not limited just to this. Within the Three Realms they have done many bad things and made arrangements for many things that they wanted. What's more, many of those things have become warped. During the passage of such a long period of time, even the so-called gods of the old forces who originally did those things cannot resolve them. If there were no Fa-rectification they couldn't be resolved. There are a lot of things in the cosmos like that, and it's hard to resolve them without the arrival of the whole immense force of Fa-rectification. But as for thought karma, it can be completely eliminated through sending righteous thoughts.

Question: How should we deal with truth-clarification pamphlets that contain photos and stories of former practitioners who have "enlightened" along a wicked path?

Teacher: They "enlightened" along a wicked path because of coercion during the persecution. When they are released they will come to their senses after some time. But it's a different matter for those who have caused irreparable harm to Dafa and Dafa disciples.

Question: Recently new students have come to do the exercises. How should we guide them to study the Fa and encourage them to attend our group Fa-study?

Teacher: It's fine to encourage them to join group exercises and group Fa-study. But don't be overly anxious and tell new students to immediately do Dafa disciples' things, since many of the new students belong to the next group. But at this time there are some who've gradually entered and belong to this group. Owing to the effect of your clarifying the truth, that lock has already been opened, and the future cultivators have begun to emerge. Both situations exist.

Question: In our media work we have published many reports that expose the XX Party's attempts to fake domestic peace and prosperity and that expose its evil nature. But revered Master, please let us know the relationship between these reports and directly saving all beings and validating Dafa.

Teacher: The truth is, its goal in faking peace and prosperity nowadays is to cover up the substance of its persecution of Falun Gong, giving people the false impression that there's no persecution going on. Behind the scenes they are carrying out the largest, worst, filthiest, and most evil persecution in history. You can directly expose this. As for other facets of it, you need to see if they're related to validating the Fa. If they are, go ahead and do it. When Dafa disciples outside Mainland China use the media to expose the evil's nature, they're doing that to help the world's people see more clearly its evil nature

throughout history. Some practitioners have been continually exposing the tricks the evil uses to fake peace and prosperity in order to cover up its crimes, exposing the evil and dirty things it's done behind the scenes.

Question: When clarifying the truth to the Chinese people on a large scale, in order to communicate more easily with ordinary people, we make use of things that align with their interests that inevitably have deviated factors, since everything of humankind has deviated. But, everything that Dafa disciples do will be left for the future. How do we reconcile these two things?

Teacher: When you are wisely clarifying the truth to save all beings, there's no such problem—what's left for the future people is the spirit of Dafa disciples rectifying the Fa and their path of returning to what is right. No matter what approach you take to clarify the truth, the goal is to have the world's people truly understand this persecution. Freedom of belief and human rights being trampled on are things people can understand. As for referencing some examples, that too is done to save people. When you make use of the different aspects of humankind's deviated culture today to clarify the truth, you have to be careful, because you don't know what this person is attached to. Perhaps what you use is exactly what he's attached to, and yet you can't spend a lot of effort thoroughly explaining what he's attached to, so it may have a bad effect. Try your best not to get involved with ordinary people's other issues.

Speaking from another angle, this is how everything of human beings is now—everything has deviated. And not only have things deviated, there's also a great deal of demon nature. Everything of human society has degenerated. If it weren't for Fa-rectification human history wouldn't have made it this far. So many catastrophes in the cosmos have been avoided because of it. What did people invent the atomic bomb for? Everything on Earth is the result of gods' making human beings do things, and everything has a purpose. Even though those things have passed, nothing of humankind exists by chance. When it comes to those things that aren't related to Fa-rectification, try not to discuss them when you clarify the truth. Also, don't talk about the truth at too high a level—the effect isn't good. Nothing of humankind is good anymore, that's the reality.

Question: Do new disciples who have just begun cultivation have the power to intimidate the evil when they clarify the truth?

Teacher: Yes. That's because while I clean out the evil factors as a whole, all dimensions of humankind and of the colossal firmament, and all dimensions in the Three Realms, are saturated with Dafa's factors. And I'm not just talking about the new cosmos. When a being plays a positive role, Dafa's factors will empower him, and that being will have good fortune in return from then on. Don't we already know of many cases of this? In other words, when a new student clarifies the truth, the factors of Dafa, Master's Law-bodies, and those righteous gods who fully cooperate will all help him and play positive roles. That's for sure. But the pre-requisite is that the new student has to do it himself first.

Question: During this urgent time in Fa-rectification, how do I balance Fa-rectification things and guiding children to cultivate?

Teacher: It's up to you to handle these specific things well.

Question: How should we understand conforming to the way of ordinary people?

Teacher: In your daily life, just try your best to conform to the way of ordinary people while cultivating. Dafa cultivation has no precepts, so in your daily life you basically keep the same ways as ordinary people as much as possible. On the surface, you basically conform to the way of ordinary human society. That's how it is, and at the same time you're a cultivator. I've already talked about this

many, many times; in a lot of lectures I've talked about how to do things.

Question: Many people haven't heard about Dafa or the facts about the persecution, nor have they participated in the persecution. Master, please enlighten us on the need for clarifying the truth to them.

Teacher: Some people haven't heard about Dafa, nor have they heard about the persecution, but clarifying the truth to them is still very important. People in this world have been sealed off for an extended period of time, and it has caused these beings to not understand for the time being this event which they've been waiting for over ages of reincarnations. When you clarify the truth to them you're not just telling them about this event that's been unfolding in this world, you are also telling them about Dafa and what Dafa is, and doing so will unlock the predestined opportunity they were sealed off from but had been waiting for, and it will help them realize that what they've been waiting for has arrived.

Question: I haven't done well for a while. If I start doing well now, will there still be enough time?

Teacher: As long as the Fa-rectification hasn't entered the human world you still have a chance. Whether you'll have enough time is up to you yourselves. Some people seize the time well, some don't. Some people have made huge mistakes and yet they don't want to pay for them, and they're still like they were before, leisurely spending their time. In that case, then it's hard to say. So, as long as this thing hasn't ended there is still a chance.

Question: Recently, many students who have shouldered a lot of work have felt very tired. Their energy level and state aren't as good as before. How do they break through it?

Teacher: This has to be addressed from two angles. First, the students have been working hard, truly hard, and they've volunteered to shoulder a lot. So perhaps we could find more people to help out, or think of a way to solve the problem. That's one point. Another is, a lot of our Dafa disciples are indeed quite tired, but on the other hand, they haven't taken Fa study and cultivation seriously. They've done lots and lots of things, but they haven't cultivated themselves, and so they'll feel fatigue, feel tired, and feel that it's hard. Actually, I've always told you that doing cultivation doesn't compromise your Dafa work, for sure. That's because doing the exercises is the most effective way to get rid of fatigue, it's the best way to quickly make your body recover.

Question: Does Dafa have ways to resurrect all the beings that were weeded out by the old forces and have them return alive to the new cosmos?

Teacher: Beings that have been weeded out by the old forces... This question gets big if I talk about it. If the old forces hadn't interfered I could have eliminated the sins and karma of all beings, no matter how much they sinned throughout history. Among the vast beings, the complicated gratitude and resentment harbored toward one another throughout history, no matter which level they are at, even the jumbled, deep resentment and intricate relationships that are interwoven and crisscrossing from top to bottom—I could balance all of them. I can do everything and anything. In other words, I could save all the beings in the cosmos. But the old forces insisted on weeding out a bunch.

Of course, I still have ways that the old forces cannot imagine. When beings have been totally destroyed and have disappeared without a trace, and even when they've been turned into other creatures or plants and later gone through various changes over the long course of time, I can still locate them and bring them back. Since I can transcend the utmost microcosm of all beings, I can find them. (*Applause*) I can even bring back beings' original matter and factors that would never exist again, bring back the factors that originally made up their beings, and bring back all the factors that made them up, in the way they were, and I can eliminate the part, the process, and the history in which a being sinned against Dafa—I can have a being re-born as if he'd never gone through that part of history. I can do anything, but I don't do things casually. I need to look at the cause. Master has to

consider things for the sake of the future cosmos, the wonderfulness of the future, and the beings of the future. (*Applause*)

Question: Did the old forces have a contract with Master that specifically restricts Master's Fa-rectification? If they did, all contracts should be abolished, and everything should follow the arrangement of the Lord Buddha.

Teacher: I can tell you, the fact is that the old forces managed to do many things in history by taking advantage of my split bodies reincarnating among ordinary people. When I was reincarnating lifetime after lifetime in this world, they took advantage of the opportunities and manipulated things. Since during those times [I] wasn't spreading the Fa, and was entirely in the state of a human being perfecting humans, they forcefully added some of the things they wanted. Those things weren't at all what I wanted to do, yet they happened in this world. There were a lot of such things in each period. As my split bodies reincarnated in the world, they would come and influence things. That's why they shift the blame to me for a lot of things that happened in history. They would say, "You did all that." Of course I can't accept that. History has been so long, and over this long passage of time they constantly did those things. Those things got too complicated and could no longer be resolved, so they would have to wait to be resolved in Fa-rectification. That's why once I started Fa-rectification, they realized that it wasn't at all what they wanted, so the old forces started to resist, and its manifestation became more and more pronounced.

During the ten-plus years of spreading the Fa, what you've seen is just the interference at the surface, while in fact, in other dimensions it's incredibly shocking and evil to the extreme. Of course, for you, Dafa disciples, these things have nothing to do with your personal cultivation. Cultivating, improving, and getting rid of your attachments are what you need to attend to. Their interfering with me is geared towards the process and the future of history. With the old-force beings, in order to save them I constantly explained the Fa's truths to them. Some listened, and some knew those things were wrong but were unable to resolve them because those things had already taken place in history; the specific things they planned had deviated, which made it even less possible for them to resolve things.

Many people are reflecting on the issue I just discussed (*Master smiles*). What I said was just about some major events in history itself, and it doesn't involve Dafa disciples.

Question: When we do Dafa work we need to study the Fa, but there is work that just needs to be done, too. During Fa-study there are often phone calls coming in, and I feel torn. If I only take care of myself and study the Fa, is that being selfish?

Teacher: I think when you study the Fa you should just study the Fa, and no one should interfere. That's because if you don't cultivate yourself well, you won't have mighty virtue in anything you do. If you called an ordinary person over and gave him something or gave him some money and asked him to do Dafa work, would he do it? He would, but then that would be an ordinary person doing Dafa work, wouldn't it? But what would be the point of that? What would be the ultimate goal of that? So Dafa disciples need to cultivate themselves well, and validate Dafa while establishing their mighty virtue. That is what Dafa disciples do, and you know how to do it and how you can do it well.

But the condition is, it has to be when there aren't major things at hand and it won't cause major problems for others—then it's right to set everything else aside and study the Fa. For example, to avoid interference while you study the Fa, you can switch your phone to "voice mail" mode. (*People laugh*)

Question: With truth-clarification there's a lot we should do, and no matter what we do we can never cover everything. I can't finish the things I'm supposed to do. What should I do about this?

Teacher: I think you all realize now that time is pressing. There are a lot of things that need to be done.

Just do your best to arrange your time well. Everyone is doing these things. Work together with each other and coordinate your efforts, and maybe you can get things done faster.

Question: All disciples from World Falun Dafa Radio send greetings to Master.

Teacher: Thank you. (Applause)

Question: Often we get requests from disciples to record Master's new articles so they can use them for Fa study. Since it doesn't contain Master's voice, would you please tell us if it could still achieve the effect of listening to the Fa?

Teacher: In the past, when my taped lectures on the Fa were being translated, I talked about this issue, and that it's okay if Master's voice is there. Yet my writings don't have my voice to go with them. I think that during this special period of Dafa disciples validating the Fa it's fine to do it this way, but the humans of the future can't do so.

I've made many things easy for Dafa disciples as they validate the Fa. There are a lot of things that actually can't be done in cultivation but I have allowed you to do them under special circumstances. And that includes some of the approaches you use to clarify the truth. Since they are done to save all beings, you're doing it like that, and it's not wrong. If they were associated with personal cultivation, though, many of them wouldn't be allowed and couldn't be done.

Question: I obtained the Fa after July 20th. Recently I met with a big ordeal. I can't tell whether it's a test given by Esteemed Master, or caused by my own attachments. I feel unworthy of Esteemed Master's merciful and arduous salvation.

Teacher: For sure some things in cultivation can't be figured out very quickly. Many attachments or causes can't be detected so quickly, and that's why you might feel it's hard sometimes. But from a different angle, if a cultivator could figure everything out right away and pass whatever tests instantly, wouldn't that be too easy? (Laughing) It would be a little too easy. I'm referring to personal cultivation.

Of course, in some cases what's at work is the old forces interfering. They imposed certain things that the disciples should not have to overcome at all, and even problems that are very hard to resolve, and what's more, those things and problems have the effect of interfering with this historic process of validating the Fa and saving all beings—there have indeed been things like that. So what should Dafa disciples do then? I think you should try your best to do well, study the Fa a lot, and do more of what a Dafa disciple should do. A lot of things will be settled effortlessly if you walk an upright path and do things well. You can't solve a problem for the sake of solving that problem, as that might easily generate new attachments.

Question: How do we handle things well when clarifying the truth from the angles of ancient Chinese science, culture, and history?

Teacher: There are a lot of things from history that you can draw upon, and you can cite facts from various fields of study. That should be fine, but it has to be done in an appropriate way. If the examples you use aren't appropriate then they won't be convincing. [It should be done] just right.

Question: My brother and I are English writers. We'd like to know whether we could select certain people from history as examples of traditional work. Shakespeare had quite an influence, as did the ancient Greek writers. Can we write in styles similar to theirs? Are we setting our standards too high by doing so?

Teacher: You're setting it too low. (People laugh) You are Dafa disciples, and there's never been anyone like you. You are what all other beings want to be but can't. You are creating new styles for the beings of the future—isn't that something "high"? You may draw on the positive aspects of some

historical figures, but I think Dafa disciples still need to walk their own path, right? Only then is it pioneering something. (*Applause*)

Question: May I ask that Master talk again about the stance of non-involvement Dafa disciples assume with politics, for example, putting that chief wretch on trial?

Teacher: That evil being is the primary culprit in the persecution of Dafa disciples. Our suing it isn't getting involved in politics. It has persecuted so many Dafa disciples to death, shouldn't it pay for it? Shouldn't we expose it? Shouldn't this evil persecution be stopped?

All beings in the Three Realms came for the Fa and were created for the Fa. In other words, this includes all forms in the Three Realms, including all the various forms that exist in human society, among which, of course, are today's laws, as well as the other forms belonging to mankind. Since all these were created by the Fa, why can't they be used by Dafa in validating the Fa? They can. But we choose those that are upright and good, and serve a positive role. We're using them selectively. That's looking at it from a broader perspective.

Looking at it more narrowly, we haven't gotten involved in politics. Whether mankind is good or bad, and what kind of social system the Chinese people choose, those are all human affairs. My Dafa disciples and I have never said what kind of system or way of life should be adopted. For instance, many democracy activists advocate for a democratic society, and I've never let Dafa disciples get involved in that. Dafa disciples only aim at exposing the persecution. We're only trying to stop the persecution. Shouldn't that be done? When your family members have been killed by persecution, wouldn't you reason things out with [those perpetrators]? But when you reason with them they say you've involved yourself in politics—is that reasonable? No, it's not!

Since the day I, Li Hongzhi, started teaching this Dafa, neither my students nor I have gotten involved in politics. We have no interest at all in it. But our Dafa *is* beneficial to society. It's beneficial to all people and nations that are under different social systems—no matter what social system you're in. Only that most irrational, most evil, most stupid thing in the whole world and of all time would do something this dumb, persecuting the kindest group of people who are the most beneficial to society. That's because in their eyes there is nothing but power, and they couldn't care less about whether something benefits the people. Whenever anything happens in society they immediately think about whether it threatens their power. What a tiring way to live, and what a tiring way to sustain that power! They've done evil for that reason. I'd say it's about time their power was over. (*Applause*)

While you clarify the truth some people who've been deceived by the propaganda's lies say that you're involved in politics. They only say that because they've been poisoned by the evil. We'll explain things to them, and help them see things clearly and become aware. Otherwise those people will sever their future. Of course, what a person chooses is his own business.

Question: Recently there have been isolated cases in which the lives of Dafa disciples were taken away by the old forces in the form of the sickness demon. Please tell us, could they achieve Consummation?

Teacher: I've talked about this issue many times, and a number of our students have in fact come to understand what it's all about. From the perspective of cultivation, for a person to rise above ordinary people, he has to get rid of all human attachments, and that's how the old forces took advantage of this and arranged all those things. For instance, they arranged for certain students to appear sick at certain times, and for certain students to depart first at a certain time. The old forces arranged for some people they picked to come in [to Dafa]. Those people seem to be cultivating Dafa, and some even appear very diligent, but in fact they came in under the old forces' arrangements to enable those things to happen when the time came. It was the old forces' intention all along to weed out those beings. So, they made

them commit sins by doing things that would interfere with Dafa—that's the role they wanted them to play. Of course, they only did that with the beings they'd selected for elimination. Among my Dafa disciples there are some who were used and deceived by them in the past, for example, [they might have said] “for you to reach Consummation you'll have to do such and such at such and such time.” There are cases like that. That's why the true and fake ones are mixed together, and it's difficult to tell right away which ones have come to stir up trouble and which ones are Dafa disciples.

But, I don't look at any of that. Whether you are arranged by the old forces or a Dafa disciple who was deceived by the old forces, once you've read my Fa and become my disciple, you are a Dafa disciple, and you don't acknowledge any of the arrangements the old forces made. Then I will be responsible for you. However, the occurrence of those things has indeed interfered some with Dafa disciples. Those students all knew not to acknowledge the old forces' arrangements, but they had no way of escaping them. I save such beings as well. (*Applause*) Of course, as for deceived Dafa disciples, there's no doubt about it, Consummation is for sure. But with those who truly played a bad role and were irrational, it's a different story.

Actually, during this time period the majority, including both people arranged by the old forces and deceived Dafa disciples, have done quite well, and they haven't caused additional losses for Dafa. And their family members have done pretty well in different respects.

In fact, out of those killed by the persecution in Mainland China, many were Dafa disciples deceived by them, while some were arranged by them; they all agreed to it at some point in history, and that is why it's hard to handle. Also, while being persecuted, they weren't clearheaded or rational, and didn't remember that they were Dafa disciples, nor could they remember Master, as if it were all just human beings persecuting other human beings. Plus, they were arranged that way by the old forces back in history, so they couldn't reject it. You tell me, how do you handle that? So, a lot of things aren't as easy as you'd imagine. Cultivation is a serious thing, and the Fa-rectification is by no means something trivial.

Question: The Chinese consulates threaten and entice overseas Chinese groups with the promises of profit and gains. They take advantage of overseas Chinese people's patriotic sentiment to incite hatred against Falun Gong. What should we do?

Teacher: Clarifying the truth is the master key. They win people over with money and incentives, which are all ordinary people's things, and they only last temporarily. Yet what you give them are things that have to do with their eternal existence, and the beings on Earth all exist for this event. Don't undervalue what you're doing. When you've really clarified the truth to the world's people in-depth, it will be different. If that still doesn't work, then it's a matter of people choosing their future.

In the time between when I asked you to clarify the truth and today, although this passage of history hasn't been long, the changes are already tremendous. When I asked you to clarify the truth at the beginning, there were still many factors obstructing things. Now there are still some, but they have become very few. So in other words, as you clarify the truth, there are fewer and fewer interfering factors, and there are more and more factors that allow the world's people to understand what is going on. Before, your truth-clarification didn't have good results sometimes. That was foreign, evil factors interfering. Now it's different. Since you're compassionate, let's think of ways to save the world's people, and have more people know the truth.

All the things Dafa disciples do are magnificent, and very important. As you clarify the truth, the words you speak and the energy you emit have the effect of intimidating and eliminating the evil. You are crucial in determining whether the beings in this world stay or get eliminated. If your words are pure and righteous they will really go right into the innermost part of people's thoughts, and instantly make

people understand.

Question: When we were making cartoons for truth-clarification we found that there were bad factors behind some of the 3D cartoon software. Some students felt unwell after using them for a while. Should we stop using those software?

Teacher: It's true some things are bad. Actually, when you use something you're selecting those beings and saving them. Some of what's contained in there will be benevolently resolved, and some will be weeded out, or changed and replaced. From a different perspective, your using it is being compassionate toward it. Some deviated things need to be rectified or weeded out, and that's the same as saving a life. But some things are extremely bad, so you need to use them selectively.

Question: Only after having cultivated this long have I realized what my fundamental attachment is, which is the attachment to my self.

Teacher: Yes. To put it plainly, that's the fundamental factor of beings of the past. In the past, when it came to this, you all had it, and many people really couldn't realize it. With all of you improving as a whole, it isn't that pronounced anymore.

Question: When we were validating Dafa before, although things were done to validate Dafa, looking at them today they were done on a selfish, self-validating basis. Our question is: why did we become aware of this so late?

Teacher: Validating the Fa is also cultivation. The cultivation process is one of continually recognizing your own shortcomings and then disposing of them. It's only that the earlier a lot of fundamental attachments are recognized the better. Recognizing them is, in itself, improvement. Being able to eliminate them, or overcome them, weaken them, and in the end completely eliminate them—that process is one of continually improving yourself, and it's the fundamental transformation of a being.

Question: I'm the Assistant in a region in Australia. I haven't been diligent enough in Fa-study, and have attachments to reputation and gain. I've been interfered with. I feel regretful, and fear that this may have a negative impact on Dafa. As a Fa-rectification disciple, I need to improve. Esteemed Master, should our region select a disciple who studies the Fa better to be the Assistant?

Teacher: Being able to recognize it is itself a big improvement. That's how cultivation is—when you constantly recognize your shortcomings you are improving yourselves, but how to strengthen your resolve is the most crucial thing for you to walk well the path that's ahead of you.

In passing I'll talk about something. In Mainland China, before the persecution happened, there were indeed a lot of students who practiced Falun Gong with different mentalities. They saw others doing it so they did it, too. "It can heal people, so I'll practice it too." Basically they didn't study the Fa attentively, so even less did they have a solemn understanding of cultivation, and you couldn't see their righteous thoughts. They were like that for a long time and in some cases it even dragged on for years. Many students liked to look at others, "Oh, he got healed by practicing. So I'll practice then." "He didn't get healed. So I won't do it anymore." What's even scarier is that a lot of people would look at the Assistant, and do whatever the Assistant did. When the Assistant did well, they would too. When the Assistant did poorly, they would follow suit. I ask every Dafa disciple to do well in walking his own path independently in cultivation, to establish his own mighty virtue, and to have himself truly reach Consummation and become a King who presides over his own domain. How could you not walk your own path, not study the Fa well, and not establish your own righteous thoughts?

Actually, when I select people to be Assistants I don't go by whose level is highest. In my eyes the beings are the same. I don't see beings as you being better than him or him being better than her. I only

look at whether the person has the experience and enthusiasm of working for a group. That's the only thought I have. I don't have thoughts like, "This person is able to cultivate himself well and is better than others, so I'll make him the Assistant." From the start of an ordinary person's cultivation until he reaches Consummation, how he cultivates himself in the process and whether he can achieve Consummation, everything depends on whether this cultivator himself can do it.

In fact, many regular Dafa disciples who are quiet and you don't hear much from have cultivated very well. Some have built an excellent foundation, some have excellent bases, and some are great in every regard. But if you ask them to do administrative work they might not be able to do it. So, I select those students who are able to pull things together, do things, and who are willing to put in for others, and have them be Assistants. I've talked about these things a number of times. But, some Dafa disciples' Assistants have performed truly well while some have performed a bit poorly. At the outset of the persecution there were Assistants who compromised with the evil since they hadn't studied the Fa for a long time, and that had an awful effect. So when some of those students who had all along been watching and following how others did things saw the Assistant do that, they would think, "Oh no, how come he can't handle it anymore? Since he stopped practicing, I will too." It's precisely those attachments that I want to eliminate from our students. I want students to cultivate themselves and bring out their own righteous thoughts. I don't want the goal of your cultivation to be helping the head of the practice site, an Assistant, or the head of an Association to cultivate. What everybody has to cultivate is himself.

During the persecution many of these students have matured, become clearheaded, and grown rational. They finally understand, after such painful lessons! In fact, I talked about it many times in the past, but they just wouldn't take seriously cultivating themselves. There are no role models in cultivation. You can't watch how others cultivate, and you can't just fix your eyes on others—"If you do well, I'll do well. If you don't do well, then I'll forget about it, too"—having no independent thoughts of your own at all. Tell me, when it comes to those students, how am I supposed to guide your cultivation? Are you the one cultivating? You're always foggy headed, and your words aren't genuine. In cultivation you can't watch others, you can only cultivate solidly on your own. How do you cultivate? Just study the Fa a lot, and don't watch others. If you want to watch gods, that's okay of course, but gods don't cultivate here. So, those who are cultivating here are all human beings. Only with this human body can you cultivate yourself out of here. As long as you haven't gotten rid of all human things you're still a cultivator. Only when everything on the surface has finally transformed will you be completely separated from human beings. But while cultivating you should have clear awareness, cultivate away your deficiencies, restrain your shortcomings, and eliminate your shortcomings. You must have a sense of constantly climbing up. That's cultivating.

Question: After Master taught the Fa on creating fine art, some disciples went to learn the basic skills of drawing and painting. Does this affect their truth-clarification work?

Teacher: It does. I'll tell you, the basic skills of painting and drawing are not something that can be trained and learned in one or two years. Many people began their training at a young age, and it takes a long time. All those highly accomplished painters have honed their skill for over ten years or even decades. You might say, "I want to paint a painting now, I want to paint a work of art," but we can't exhibit yours! (*People laugh*) What I talked about was mainly for those Dafa disciples who'd acquired the basic skills of painting or drawing or who specialized in that, or in other words, those who are specialized and accomplished in that area. My words were directed at them, telling them to change those notions of theirs that have been influenced by modern ideas, and to have them present upright things to humankind. If you try to learn [those skills] now it won't work, because that's not something that can be accomplished in a short time. And besides, I want them to present a high level of artistry. Be

it sculptures or paintings, mastering the basic skills is one of the most basic issues. Creating a work of art is a painter's biggest challenge, it's really hard. Depicting what's taking place in the subjects' minds and their expressions through painting or sculpture, really bringing them to life, is not something that's achieved just by mastering the basic skills. Upright, true art is a major skill passed down to human beings by gods!

Question: How can we help more students step forward and do the Fa-rectification work well together?

Teacher: Just do it with a lot of care and thought, like when you clarify the truth.

Question: What are the three souls and seven spirits, and how are they related to cultivation?

Teacher: Those are human things, and it's better that I don't talk about them right now. Of course, I've talked about some things regarding mankind to small groups in isolated situations, and that didn't impact mankind. In the next phase, when human affairs are involved, I'll talk about things within the Three Realms, including mankind's true history, the purpose of the Three Realms' existence, the roots of the ethnic groups and the origin of the human race and life, the true factors that compose the human body, and why everything in the world exists.

The master soul (*zhu yuanshen*) and subordinate soul (*fu yuanshen*) that I've told you about before were discussed while I was imparting the Great Law. As for truly discussing the Fa of mankind within the Three Realms, I haven't done that yet. So, all those things are to be discussed in the future. Since it's divided into two stages—Fa-rectification and the Fa's rectification of the human world—the future stage is to handle the human place here, and [I will] comprehensively explain the Three Realms, mankind, the relationship between the planets and earth and between life and the human body, the reason for each stage of development in human society—which is mankind's true history—gods creating human beings, and so on. All human affairs will be discussed, and everything that human beings don't believe in will manifest.

Question: Is there any overlap between the old Fa-principles and the new Fa-principles?

Teacher: They're very different, and there is no overlap on fundamental issues. The basis before was self-serving, whereas everything forged by Dafa is not attached to self. When it comes to some specific issues the understanding is the same. The concrete manifestations of good and evil are basically the same. But many things have undergone some changes, and life will be more wonderful in the future.

Question: Can we charge for the newspaper run by our students?

Teacher: Of course you can. If a lot of people read the newspapers you run, you can try it out by charging for a portion of them first. Actually, the newspaper you've created has already truly become the groundwork for the largest Chinese newspaper in the world. (*Applause*) It's available even in small towns in the U.S.—I've seen it even in tiny towns. That's something that other Chinese newspapers cannot cover or reach. You're sure to keep improving it, and when the conditions are ripe it can gradually enter a positive cycle.

Question: As a media form for clarifying the truth, how can a radio station do better in assisting and coordinating with the overall Fa-rectification situation and play a better role informing people of the facts?

Teacher: It's the same as the other media forms created by Dafa disciples. Learn from each other, draw from each other's strengths and supplement the weaknesses, and you can all do well. At the very least you can share news information and a lot of other resources, and that is something other media don't have. You can give it a try. So to have people know the truth, expose the evil's persecution, and save more beings, try to make the radio station known to more people—even the Chinese people in

Mainland China. *That* would be great.

Question: My husband doesn't cultivate. He has attended many Fa conferences and has done some things for Dafa, but he did bad things. He wanted to correct himself, but there was a force that tormented him mentally and he could no longer stay at home. We divorced. Does someone like this still have hope of being saved?

Teacher: During this persecution, I can tell you that strictly speaking, a lot of Chinese people have sinned against Dafa. So if you don't save them as you clarify the truth, they really have no hope of salvation. When you clarify the truth, aren't you giving them a chance? Aren't you saving them? Of course, many of those people were your family before. Give it a try. If they really prove to be hopeless, then it's different, and in that case you won't need to ask me—you'll know whether he is savable.

Question: When we write scripts for a film, should we directly write a script about the true situation, or use an everyday person's approach though mixing in some content that clarifies the truth? Which is better?

Teacher: You're just talking about different angles. Both ways are fine. But no matter which form you use to write it, you are a Dafa disciple, so you know how to validate Dafa and you are able to handle it well. So I'd say however you write it is fine.

Question: Is it appropriate to teach modern science on our TV station?

Teacher: I'll tell you that when Master discusses science, actually I'm not negating it. It is a product of the cosmos. Actually, I treasure everything that is forged by beings over a drawn-out period of time, so long as it's not by nature damaging to the cosmos and it helps the cosmos flourish. The course of life is not simple. I was only saying that science is unsuitable for mankind. Haven't its deficiencies now been exposed?

You've seen how under the influence of science human beings believe in gods less and less. And yet human beings were created by gods. Not only were they created by gods, the purpose of creating human beings was to allow lives that come from high levels to be saved when Fa-rectification takes place. What's more, mankind will become a level that is truly indispensable to the future cosmos, and will thus be connected to the overall cosmos. It has such a huge purpose, and there's such a grand background, and yet this science thing is damaging human beings' basic proper thoughts.

When beings use science on a large scale, it indeed has a very bad effect in the cosmos. The cosmos is a cycling entity, and all factors of matter are cycling. In the process of being eliminated, the beings that have sinned rid themselves of those sins. They are eliminated, eliminated, and eliminated, until in that elimination process they are reduced to only death matter with no life whatsoever, and then they will gradually rise one level after another and be utilized. The cosmos is a cycling entity, and if a substance is warped that will be a bad situation. The warped substance will be absorbed by lower-level beings, the high-level beings can't go to the low levels to resolve it, and when the substance that can't be resolved by lower-level beings is used again, it sublimates during the cycling, and after the initial warpedness sublimates, higher-level beings can't completely resolve it, either. As it sublimates it can't be completely resolved at any of the levels, and when this happens to numerous substances it causes a large part of the cosmos to become warped.

You know, the steel and iron we have today, most are composites of many different metals. When they are re-smelted you cannot again make the metal pure, and no technology can completely separate them anymore. You know, once chemical fertilizers are applied to soil, you can't grow anything out of that soil if you stop chemically fertilizing it; it won't grow anything anymore. The seeds that were chemically fertilized require the chemical fertilization each time around. The warped seeds can't

sustain themselves without chemical fertilization. The chemical fertilizers, you know, they're composites of chemical things.

There are many ways in which substances cycle. I'll just talk about the simplest way in which substances cycle: the substances of plants, animals, and the human body are all composed of particles, and there are gaps among particles. When you magnify and look at the gaps, you'll see that the gaps are huge. From those gaps smells are emitted, and those smells themselves, from the vantage point of a microcosmic level, are in fact fields that are composed of particles as well, so all animals and plants are emitting microcosmic substances. Those things are continually used by the level above them, and when all kinds of factors that compose water, air, and substances—which are needed in composing human beings and other living organisms—have warped due to the initial pollution, then what's used by the dimension one level above is now fundamentally warped.

I've told you before that because of alien science and technology, one layer of the human body, one of the human body's layers of particles, has been placed fully under the control of aliens. It consists entirely of alien planets' elements, including numbers, mechanical structures, electronic components, and so on. It consists of that stuff. And those things are continually creating a warped effect. The large-scale modern industries brought about by science have impacted many low-level dimensions in the cosmos. In my Fa-rectification I've found that quite a large layer of the cosmos has been contaminated by those things. And those warped things have had a considerably large resisting effect in the Fa-rectification.

Think about it, those things are warped, and yet they've elevated to such microcosmic levels, so if gods then absorb them, wouldn't those gods become warped too? And wouldn't the gods' worlds become warped? That's what has happened, in fact. Think about how horrifying that is! That's why I said that those things aren't suitable for mankind and can only be used by beings within appropriate, extremely small parameters and in an orderly fashion.

I'll tell you, the air has become so polluted that no one can restore it back to the degree of purity it had before. We don't need to go too far back: it can't even be compared to the air one thousand years ago. Human beings have warped too, and they've gotten used to it. And water has been so contaminated that there's no way to purify it to the purest degree, since water cycles, as well.

I've told you before that water is water, and ocean water is a different substance and not the same substance as freshwater. Freshwater can be extracted from ocean water, and it's the same as how metal can be extracted from rocks. It's extracted. Freshwater usually flows to a lower point, and when it gets even lower it's the ocean, as the ocean is certainly lower than land. So it flows into the ocean. But after it flows into the ocean, the freshwater doesn't disperse. Particles of water are smaller than the particles of the substances in ocean water, so the water flows through those particles and flows away, it works like the network of energy channels in the human body, and so the water then circulates back. That's why some rivers continually flow for tens of thousands of years or hundreds of thousands of years. Some people say that rivers flow due to the flow of underground water and due to ice melting. But as you can see, how could those rivers be so huge? And they've been flowing robustly for tens of thousands of years. For instance, the Yangtze River and the major rivers in the U.S., those rivers are so large, how much water is needed to sustain them endlessly? Some say that water comes from ice-capped mountains, but some rivers don't originate from ice-capped mountains whatsoever. The reality is, water cycles. After it flows away—its cyclical process is also its purification process—it is purified and it returns. But the pollution of water has gotten way too severe, and what pollutes it are not normal factors of human substances, but rather, what pollutes it are modern science's industries which were brought over by aliens. So it can't be purified to that degree anymore, and that's why we say that after it has warped nothing can purify it.

Some people erect dams to block major rivers or minor ones in order to generate electricity and change and accommodate people's electricity usage, and resolve energy problems. Actually, it's as if they are cleaving the body of the river right in the middle, just as if it were done to a human being or another life, because rivers are lives, too—isn't every object alive? If you sawed off a person at his waist, what would that do to him? Since a river is so large and since its time is different from that of human beings, you can't see its changes right away, but it is dying, dying slowly. Its dying process is longer than that of humans, taking decades or even more than a hundred years. Don't people push for changing and re-creating mountains and rivers, and changing and remaking nature? To change and remake nature is to damage nature, and to change and re-create mountains and rivers is to damage mountains and rivers. There's an underlying order to everything that gods create. Gods view heaven and earth differently from how human beings do, and they've arranged the equilibrium of all things very well. Human beings should only utilize things in a friendly way and not damage them. Many of mankind's natural disasters were caused by the fundamental damage science has done. In its effort to "develop" science mankind has excessively and wantonly harnessed energy and resources, and everything is being damaged.

You know, during the last century industry was flourishing in Europe and the U.S., especially the steel and chemical industries, and at that time the resultant pollution was quite severe. But the Europeans and Americans realized this in time and improved their protection of nature and ecology, and a few decades later the environment there really did improve. That's why you can see that the water in U.S. rivers is so clear, and the lakes are no longer polluted. Human beings' waking up can really have this effect, but still it's very hard to achieve the previous degree of purity. Haven't today's scientists also realized the harm science has done to mankind? But that's merely what people can see and perceive with their eyes.

Did you know this? Science's development in the microcosmic realm is even more terrifying. In its study of the more microcosmic particles, it makes the more microcosmic particles undergo fission, which causes the microcosmic particles to have continuous, chain-reaction fissions, which explode and split nonstop. The scientists have become aware of this and now they're afraid of it. If the explosions continue on like that, it won't take long before the entire earth disintegrates and is gone. At present none of the scientists who did those things are able to stop this type of explosion, and the fission and disintegration keeps on going. Those Chinese folks who knit sweaters know what this constant unraveling is like, with one link after another. And what science has brought upon mankind doesn't stop at that—isn't it terrifying?

Mankind thinks computers are great—they make things so easy! I'm not against computers, and I'm not against science. What I'm saying is that they're not suitable for mankind. Other beings can use it within a certain limited scope, since it is a product of the cosmos. Nowadays some people are so dim-witted that without computers they don't know how to do simple arithmetic, and without computers they don't know how to think things over—they rely solely on what's stored in computers. And when you reason with them they won't listen—"Let me see what the computer says." When you explain things to them they refuse to listen. Mankind is heavily dependent on computers now and can't do without them. What's more, the commands computers send out, whatever they say goes, and all the users have to obey the computers. Some people follow what computers say so closely. Aren't computers controlling people? If computers are developed further, people's dependency will grow greater, and computers' commanding nature will get stronger. That's when human beings will really be controlled by computers. If robots are made almost flawlessly and are just like the human body, and when robots are able to make robots, mankind will be destroyed, because they will continually make robots that will eliminate human beings. This sounds horrifying, and if it weren't for Fa-rectification, which has curbed the unbridled development of man's science, we would have already reached that

point today. You can see how nowadays when a lot of government staff handle a person's affairs, they don't listen to him and just go by whatever the computer says. That's how bad it's gotten. Isn't that horrifying? They go by computers—human beings have to go by computers and the information stored in computers, since they're supposed to be accurate. But human beings are complex, dynamic, and ever-changing; their thinking changes too. And human beings are unstable and changing between being kind and wicked, good and bad. Also, the things in the human world aren't stable, and human beings aren't some static substance that can be summarized with a conclusion. These are the negative things science has brought upon mankind.

Of course, nowadays that's what everybody is learning, so if you don't teach it what else are you going to teach? So there's nothing you can do about it. That's what you have to do during this period of history, and it's not considered wrong, since the rectification of all things is what's to be done in the future.

Question: Some Filipinos would like to translate Zhuan Falun into Filipino. If someone is going through the book and reading it but hasn't become a cultivator, can he help to translate it?

Teacher: He can help to translate it, but Dafa disciples need to take the leading role. That's because everyday people can't understand the Fa, that's for sure, so you really have to be careful about this.

Question: We have been working hard on clarifying the truth to everyday people, and we have been clarifying to them why this persecution of Dafa is the most evil in history. We tell them that this persecution is worldwide and is a persecution of humanity, kindness, and conscience, and that it's not limited to killing people physically. Could Master please give us more guidance on this?

Teacher: That's true. What they're damaging is the last bit of conscience that's left after the degeneration of mankind's morality. And it's not limited to just those things [you mentioned]. If this Fa couldn't save people, mankind would have no hope.

Question: Clarifying the truth is crucial for solving all problems, and we need to do it comprehensively and in depth, so we plan to set up museum(s) that document the facts of the genocide that has befallen Falun Gong students, helping government officials, those who invest in China, students, and media to understand the truth in depth, thereby saving beings on a broad scale.

Teacher: That's an excellent idea. Those places can display exhibits that chronicle Dafa disciples being persecuted and their validating the Fa, and serve as a place to save beings and clarify the truth.

Question: Compassion arises after emotion is removed. So how is mighty virtue cultivated?

Teacher: You walk this path of Fa-rectification well, you manage to overcome your limitations in cultivation, you let go of your attachments, you save all beings with righteous thoughts in your mind, and you handle everything you face with righteous thoughts—that is mighty virtue. (Applause)

Question: In the Fa-rectification process I did pretty well at the beginning, but later on I didn't do well and my righteous thoughts faded.

Teacher: Then do things well. You live in ordinary society, so all kinds of practical temptations in society appeal to the attachments you haven't eliminated in cultivation. When you can't handle them well problems will come up. Now that you've recognized it, just do things well again.

Question: During truth-clarification, some people ask, "Why would Dafa disciples bear so much torture and refuse to give in?" It's not easy to answer this question at the level of everyday people. How can we answer this question better?

Teacher: You can ask him back, "Why didn't the Christians change their faith even though they were

persecuted for over three hundred years?” Actually, answering this question for everyday people isn’t a big deal really. Haven’t there been a lot of people in Chinese history who preferred death over giving in? Actually [the question comes up] because the morality of today’s people is no longer up to par, and they don’t even understand the essence of being human. There were many people in ancient China who would rather die than go back on one promise, so why is this matter so hard for today’s people to understand? It’s because today’s people have warped. You can give them some examples to explain it from different angles. It’s okay to talk about it.

Question: There are some Chinese people overseas who basically understand the truth about the persecution in China, and they’ve expressed their sympathy and their condemnation of the evil, but they don’t believe in Dafa or that Master can save people, and instead, they even say some things that are disrespectful of Master.

Teacher: Then don’t talk to them about how Master saves people. You can just stop at talking about the persecution. Don’t talk about things at such high levels. If people ask about it and they can understand, then you can talk to them about it, but don’t talk at a high level.

People can’t understand cultivators, and you can’t explain things clearly in a few words, so the result will be the opposite of what was intended. Don’t talk at a high level. If in one shot you want to tell him all the Fa-principles you’ve understood while cultivating you’ll scare him. You’ve come to this stage of understanding only after so many years of cultivation, and you want him to instantly reach a level as high as yours? How could that be possible? Even for you, you cultivated up step by step, so you can imagine what it’s like for him, an everyday person listening to the truth. And what’s more, he’s somebody who was poisoned. So really make sure you don’t rush things.

Question: There is an adult class teaching the Chinese language to Westerners at our Minghui School. We want to use Zhuan Falun as our textbook for teaching Chinese, and we’re not sure if that’s appropriate since we can’t explain [the Fa to them]. Thank you, revered Master.

Teacher: You can teach them using *Falun Gong*. In the beginning you can use *Falun Gong*. I’ve talked about how to discuss things. You can discuss them based on your understanding and say, “This is just my understanding.” Or you can say, “This is how much I understand right now, but it has many more, higher inner meanings, and what I say isn’t absolute.” You can say those things and talk with the students.

Actually, a lot of people are studying the revised edition of *Falun Gong*, and you don’t need to explain things. The person will understand if you will just read it to him, because the Fa is at work. If there are isolated cases where they don’t understand certain words per se, and you want to explain those words, you need to add, “That’s how it’s understood based on the modern language’s grammar, but there are other meanings in Dafa.” There won’t be any problem if you explain it that way. As for learning the vocabulary, just explain the Chinese characters themselves [and it should work out].

Question: How can we have kids participate better in clarifying the truth? Are the people who’ll obtain the Fa in the next stage doing so during or after the Fa-rectification of the human world?

Teacher: The people who’ll attain the Fa in the next stage are already beginning to come. That’s actually something for the next step, when the Fa rectifies the human world. But now they’re already coming, because it’s so close, and when Dafa disciples have a really good effect clarifying the truth, the cultivators of the future will come. Kids can clarify the truth based on the circumstances. They shouldn’t be held to the same standards as adults.

Question: Some disciples have realized that it’s also important to clarify the truth in the economic sphere, because right now the evil...

Teacher: Yes, I thought of this long ago. Of the people in the world, there are a lot of heads of big corporations, and I can tell you, they had a wish in their previous lives to make money to use for Dafa. They've now become lost, and not only have they not used it for Dafa, they're using it for evil.

This time the old forces won't let those people come and attain the Fa, and that's because they think: if you had too much money the persecution wouldn't exist; if you had a few extremely rich people supporting you behind the scenes, could that evil in China keep being so evil? It doesn't want the Chinese people to know the truth, and what if you made a few satellites and sent them up there, and broadcasted into China non-stop? The old forces' obstruction has indeed ruined some people, and some people have committed grave sins.

You can do what you mentioned, just do the best you can. Sometimes it's not that easy to get through to those people.

Question: When there are disagreements over the coordination and harmonization of the whole body, should we always look for our own problems first no matter what?

Teacher: When there's a heated disagreement, think about whether or not you have an attachment. If everyone kept righteous thoughts the coordination would definitely be harmonious, and any problem would be resolved quickly. When you're having a heated disagreement and nobody is willing to give ground, you need to remember to look at yourself. Some students believe that the argument is for Dafa's sake after all, and they use this to cover up their attachments. When doing things for Dafa, your competitiveness, desire to show off, clinging to your own emotions, feeling like your reputation is being challenged, and other attachments might be mixed in.

Question: For those who have never heard of Falun Gong, is there a need to mention the persecution in China?

Teacher: Of course you should, because sooner or later he will hear about it.

Question: Master, you've said before that when we cooperate well and do things together we're powerful. Is it correct to say that Dafa disciples as a whole haven't shown cohesiveness?

Teacher: The whole body of Dafa isn't cohesive? That's not accurate, it's wrong to say that. The truth is, nobody can damage the Fa. Living beings, with the exception of myself, no life and no god knows my Fa. And with the exception of a few gods at the beginning who saw the form of an extremely small part of this Fa, no other life in this entire cosmos really knows Dafa's true manifestation. The Falun that you can see is the manifestation on the *gong*-side, but as for the Falun that truly stabilizes the Fa, other than myself no being can see it—and it's boundlessly powerful. (*Applause*)

This Fa is found in everything in the new cosmos, and everything is permeated with Zhen-Shan-Ren. As for how well Dafa disciples cooperate with each other, that's a matter of understanding of Dafa and personal cultivation. The Fa is complete, it's something that nobody can touch or see, and no life can budge it. While bringing with me Dafa and everything that was created by it, I am advancing quickly and forcefully, advancing towards the entire cosmos, towards the most microcosmic, towards the greatest gods, and towards everything there is, continually advancing towards the most surface, the lowest level and the world. Nobody can block it, it's an unstoppable force. (*Applause*) I am working on everything in the cosmos with tremendous speed and force.

Question: Your disciple has sinned, but I wish to atone for my fault by doing good. May I?

Teacher: Yes, you may.

Question: Guangzhou Dafa disciples, Changchun, Beijing, Hubei, Tianjin, Australia, Jiangsu, Zhejiang, Hangzhou, Shandong, Yantai, Xingtai, Handan, Jilin City, Zhanjiang city of Guangdong,

Lanzhou, students in England, the whole body of Dafa disciples in Toronto, the whole body of young Minghui School disciples, Kansas, Pingxiang City of Jiangxi, Shanghai, Kai'an, Dafa disciples in Japan, disciples in New Hampshire, Dafa disciples in Fengcheng City of Liaoning, Guangxi, the whole body of Dafa disciples in Scotland, Shihezi in Xinjiang, North America's Dafa disciples, Yichang Dafa disciples, Dafa disciples in Vancouver of Canada, Weifang, Mudanjiang, Dafa disciples of Mt. Emei, the whole body of Hengyang Dafa disciples, Shanxi, and Dafa disciples of Russia all send their regards to Master.

Teacher: Thank you all. (*Applause*)

Question: Recently in our activities, we often interview ordinary people and various political parties and groups. Since they show support for Dafa, this is going to lead a lot of people to think we have political inclinations.

Teacher: What I think is, it's not a problem no matter what political party it is that supports us, because they're people first of all, they're beings to be saved, and you don't need to worry about what people with bad motives are going to say. What Dafa aims at is people's hearts, we don't aim at organizations, and it's fine for anybody to support Dafa. Whoever plays a positive role in regards to Dafa, that's good, that's them choosing their future. (*Applause*) We don't have political goals, and we don't look at organizations per se. We only look at people's hearts.

Question: In the process of making phone calls, [we've found that] the Mainland has a small number of veteran students who seem to harbor some fears of persecution, and they don't want to say anything or they change the topic. And there's one veteran student that came to the U.S., who, owing to his attachments to reputation and gain, of late appears to have quit cultivation and often gets together with ordinary people of his own initiative, and very seldom does he participate in Dafa activities. I'd like to ask Master, can these people still cultivate?

Teacher: Whether to cultivate or not is up to the person himself, it's all up to the person to decide for himself. If a person wants to cultivate then he can cultivate, and if he doesn't want to cultivate then he doesn't. You can only offer him some good advice. I have taught this Fa to him, and I can save him when he cultivates, but whether or not he wants to be saved, that's something a person decides for himself. I'd never force anybody, and Dafa disciples wouldn't force anybody either. What I'm doing stems completely from compassion, and it's totally for the good of all beings.

Originally I didn't want to speak for so long today, but all the same I've spoken as long as I have. (*Long applause*) There's a lot, in fact, that I don't need to state in detail. Dafa disciples are all fairly mature now, and there's a lot you understand. Sometimes when I see the articles you've written I'm really in admiration, and I feel proud of you. I feel that the Dafa disciples truly have matured, and you really are able to grasp the Fa I've taught, to really grasp it at a deep level. This understanding is based on the Fa's truths and it arises out of righteous thoughts. When clarifying the truth now a lot of Dafa disciples are doing a really great job and doing it solidly. They're doing things quietly, with resolute righteous thoughts and rationality, and they are not afraid of hardship. Everything of the Dafa disciples' futures is born of your doing the three things, especially clarifying the truth. When I see everything you're doing I am thinking: truly amazing, you've truly, truly matured.

At present I don't say anything or say very little for a reason. It's to let you truly walk your own paths in validating the Fa, to let you correctly realize everything of your own and your mighty virtue. In fact the most important thing I've talked about today is the matter of saving all beings. I've centered on this topic, and I want you to become even clearer on it. There are a lot of things you know how to handle, and if I were to speak further in too much detail I'd be depriving you of *your* opportunities to create the future, of *your* opportunities to walk your own paths, so oftentimes I don't want to talk more and I'm

just quietly watching you. I know that you've really become more and more mature.

And the same goes for the Dafa disciples in Mainland China. Amidst the persecution they've become more and more strong, rational, and clearheaded—and this point is the most important one, clearheaded—they know how to handle things, and it's not just that they know how to handle things: with a lot of things they've done a great job. Disciples who do true cultivation must validate the Fa, and a huge number of disciples have done a great job all along. The reports that come out [from China] are the rather dramatic instances of persecution. The reality is that there are many who've done extremely well, only they don't say anything themselves, and they're just quietly doing things. There are a lot of extraordinary things. A lot of Dafa disciples have done extraordinarily well. Later on everybody will realize this.

So, seeing these things I really feel gratified (*applause*), I feel that my Dafa disciples haven't let me down. Before when I used to speak, I'd say that I didn't do things in vain. But now I can't put it that way, because now it's not just a matter of not doing things in vain: I feel that the Dafa disciples have truly matured amidst the tempering, that they are truly validating the Fa, and that they are truly walking the final leg of the path to godhood. (*Roaring applause*)

Li Hongzhi
November 29, 2003

Master's Fa Taught in the International Teleconference

The book⁶ does a certain amount to expose the evil's persecution of Dafa students and to save people. You can publish it in ordinary society, enthusiastically spread it among everyday people, or publish it in installments on certain websites meant for the public. However, don't promote it among our students so as to avoid causing them disruption. Nothing should interfere with how students progress towards Consummation and validate the Fa.

As far as its content goes, many passages in the book were written with human attachments. We absolutely cannot promote among students somebody's being attached to writing a book to expose the persecution and for that purpose being transformed by the evil. Do you know what "transformation" means? In fact, what Gods see is: the person got out of there to expose the evil because she could no longer endure it, and her pursuit of getting out was really an attachment that she wasn't able to let go. Under absolutely no circumstance should a Dafa disciple be transformed by the evil—even if it's to expose the persecution. Besides, exposing the persecution is not the ultimate purpose of a Dafa disciple's cultivation. So we cannot have other students who haven't completely removed their human attachments follow suit, and even less so should the book be promoted among students on the websites for students.

Cultivation is a solemn thing. I want you to cultivate into gods, and in that process you are able to validate the Fa. That is why I have imparted the Dafa to you, and why I have given you unprecedented, eternal glory. It is not to have you simply become a hero among everyday people in counteracting the persecution. Rather, it is to have you validate the Fa while negating the old forces' arrangements and opposing the persecution, and to, through this, progress towards godhood.

Li Hongzhi

January 19, 2004

⁶ Translator's note: A reference to a certain book published by a Dafa practitioner. Future Clearwisdom articles will discuss this book and relevant matters in greater detail.

Stop the Evil Acts with Righteous Thoughts

Compared to the past, right now the evil factors that persecute Dafa disciples have become minuscule, yet the bad people and wicked policemen are still committing acts of evil against Dafa disciples. That is human beings committing sins directly against gods. Therefore, you may stop them by taking all kinds of approaches, such as exposing the evil acts, clarifying the truth, and directly telephoning those people.

Everything Dafa disciples are doing at present is to save the world's people and all beings, to expose the persecution, and to put an end to the persecution. So you cannot accept any of the evil's persecutory acts, and even less should you allow the evil to do whatever it wants persecuting Dafa disciples. If the wicked policemen and the bad people can't be dissuaded and persist in doing evil, you can stop them with righteous thoughts. When Dafa disciples have strong righteous thoughts and no fear, they can use righteous thoughts to turn the tables on the evildoers. Whether it's when the wicked policemen are using electric batons or when bad people are injecting drugs to persecute you, you can use your righteous thoughts to redirect the electric current or the drugs back to the person doing violence to you. You can do it with or without your palm erected—it works as soon as your righteous thoughts emerge.

When you are persecuted in any way you can use righteous thoughts to turn the tables on the bad people and stop the persecution. And this includes those who assault the students with punches and kicks: strong righteous thoughts can make the person's punches and kicks land on himself, or make the wicked policemen and the bad people lash out against each other, and they can transfer all the pain and injuries onto the wicked person or policeman who assaults you. But the premise is that you have strong righteous thoughts, no fear, and no human attachments, apprehension, or hatred; only when you're in that state will it be effective, and it will take effect as soon as your thoughts emerge. While sending righteous thoughts, don't panic or be afraid, and as long as that wicked person keeps being violent, keep sending righteous thoughts. This is not to be done with anyone or anything else in the world outside of the persecution. The basis of what Dafa disciples do is saving people and doing good. These righteous thoughts are to stop wicked people from doing evil, to warn other bad people, and to prevent the world's people from committing sins, and their purpose is still to save all beings.

Li Hongzhi

February 15, 2004

Eliminate the Dark Minions With Righteous Thoughts

With regard to things at present, the rotten demons that have taken part in persecuting Dafa disciples have been eliminated to the point that the remaining ones are extremely few and can't have much of an effect. In this circumstance, all of the various types of gods that the old forces let in from beyond the Three Realms before—those that they themselves want to weed out, that are at low levels, that have turned bad, and a portion of whom have the form of Buddhas, Daos, and other Gods—should have disintegrated and been weeded out long ago amidst the old Fa's law of formation-stasis-degeneration-destruction. The reason the old forces let them into the Three Realms at the start of the Fa-rectification was to have them interfere with the Fa-rectification and take part in persecuting Dafa disciples.

The old forces knew that doing those things was an enormous sin. They were afraid of being cast down to hell for directly sinning against the Fa-rectification, so they have controlled from beyond the Three Realms those bad gods (the dark minions)⁷ that are within the Three Realms, and the dark minions have in turn directed rotten demons to interfere with the Fa-rectification and to persecute Dafa disciples. All of the persecution against Dafa disciples in these years was done under their direct command. Their sins are boundless now, and the weight of the evil and sins they have committed is now beyond what they can pay for.

The destruction of the old forces as a whole, and all of the last factors that will be eliminated, are related to the enormity of the dark minions' sins. The dark minions have been a part of all the disruptions to things big and small that have happened to all Dafa disciples since the start of their cultivation and all the different situations [that have arisen] in Dafa disciples' personal cultivation; they have seized every opportunity. The number of dark minions is large, while in this dimension their manifesting bodies are quite small. They range from being as big as a coin to as small as the tip of a pen; most of them are the size of a pen's tip. They could hear all of the Fa that I have been teaching over these years, and I have given them chances all along, yet they have kept on doing the vilest of things. As a result of the advance of the Fa-rectification and Dafa disciples' righteous-thought-guided actions, the rotten demons have been destroyed to the extent that too few remain to be of use to them, and so the dark minions are now themselves taking part in the things that the rotten demons have been doing. They are directly persecuting Dafa disciples and interfering with the Fa-rectification.

For this reason, all Dafa disciples, new and veteran students alike: when you send righteous thoughts, besides the targets that you specifically lock in to, aim directly at those dark minions and completely eliminate them. Along with this, when you send righteous thoughts you need to have your mind be more focused, purer, and steadier, so as to mobilize your greater abilities, disintegrate all of the dark minions and rotten demons, and eliminate the final disruptions that are in other dimensions.

Stop letting the evil exploit gaps, and stop being interfered with by human attachments. Do well the things that Dafa disciples should do, and walk the last leg of the journey well. Righteous thoughts, righteous actions.

Li Hongzhi
March 16, 2004

⁷ Translator's note: The term used here in the Chinese text, *hei shou* (lit. "black hand/s") has sometimes been translated as "behind-the-scenes helpers," and should not be mistaken for a different term.

Teaching the Fa at the 2004 Western U.S. Fa Conference

Hello! (*“Hello Master!” Applause*) This persecution has gone on for years. But, when it comes to those evil beings, their habitat and chances of survival are getting smaller and smaller, and life is becoming more and more difficult for those bad people who orchestrated the persecution in this world. In terms of the Fa-rectification’s overall situation, right now when it comes to this persecution that the dregs of humanity and the scum orchestrated, the people of the world are becoming clearer and clearer on it, and the people in Mainland China, in particular, are waking up to it—people have seen the evilness of the persecution and have come to know the reasons behind the persecution. You could say that the current situation is becoming more and more favorable for Dafa disciples to clarify the truth, save the world’s people, and expose the persecution. Right now, because the majority of the world’s people have been able to become clearheaded after the evil was cleared away and they’re able to rationally reflect on the persecution of Falun Gong on their own, it’s getting harder for the bad people to keep up the wicked suppression. The fact that the world’s people are waking up has made the evil quite afraid. The people of the world no longer want to be blamed for what the evil beings have done, and this is making the evil factors and vile people truly unable to keep up the wicked persecution anymore, and yet it’s hard for them to pull themselves out of it. When the evil beings are in a frenzy and irrational, they keep escalating the persecution but to no avail, so they become even more frenzied. It looks to me like now they can’t escalate it any further, but they can’t back down; they can’t back down yet they’ve lost their footing. The world’s people have seen right through the evil suppression now, but the harm that this most wicked persecution has done to Dafa disciples is huge, and in all of history there has never been a persecution this malicious. From a different perspective, whatever they’ve done to Dafa and Dafa disciples is the same as doing that to themselves, because in the future they will have to pay for it many times over.

In the cosmos there is good and evil, negative and positive, and virtue and vice, and these bring about mutual-generation and mutual-inhibition in the cosmos. In reality people aren’t able to see, and the vile people are even less likely to think of, the fact that from the very beginning the persecution was doomed to fail, and that in the process of it, it has enabled Dafa disciples to succeed in their cultivation. In other words, the vile people’s intentions were wicked, but they happened to provide conditions for Dafa disciples to establish themselves as Dafa disciples. Of course, I didn’t want this situation to come about, and while being persecuted, Dafa disciples and I have been working to stop the persecution and to not let beings sin against Dafa. Those beings that are beyond saving insist on doing evil, but they don’t know the principle of positive and negative emerging simultaneously out of every word and action. Because at this level of the old cosmos there is the principle of mutual-generation and mutual-inhibition and the two different factors of positive and negative, something positive and negative emerges at the same time whenever a person does something. And that includes everything that’s done in human society, those two factors simultaneously manifest in everything. It includes whenever someone says something, does something, or even has a thought—positive and negative factors will manifest in all of these. Likewise, with this persecution, you all know what its goal is and that the intention behind it is really evil, but the outcome is that when they’ve done evil things they have also enabled Dafa disciples to, while opposing the persecution, be tempered to the point of maturity. And, the more severe the persecution is, the more it’s able to establish Dafa disciples. The vile people don’t know about this principle at all. From my perspective, as your master, during the Fa-rectification I absolutely don’t accept the using of this evil persecution to test Dafa disciples, and Dafa disciples shouldn’t have the wrong idea that they can cultivate higher by enduring persecution. Dafa and its disciples oppose the persecution, that is Dafa disciples’ duty. If you don’t cultivate yourself based on the Fa, you can’t cultivate higher by just enduring persecution, much less reach the standards for a Dafa disciple. Don’t acknowledge this so-called “environment” that the old forces have provided, because

during the Fa-rectification I would have had all beings assimilate to Dafa, and it wasn't at all necessary to temper Dafa disciples amidst this kind of evilness. The Fa-rectification will definitely succeed, and Dafa disciples will definitely succeed. My disciples will succeed with them doing these things, and my disciples would have succeeded without them doing these things. It's only that the evil insisted on doing all this, which has interfered with the Fa-rectification, has led them to commit sins in the course of their doing evil, and has caused many beings and people, themselves included, to be weeded out. In the cosmos this factor of a-positive-comes-with-a-negative and a-pro-comes-with-a-con truly manifests.

Human beings can't see this principle clearly. When an ordinary person wants to do something in society, in reality as soon as his thought appears, or as soon as he does something, two effects are produced. In the past cultivators had a saying, "good and bad outcomes come from a person's one thought." Another layer of meaning those words have is that in the process of doing something there can truly be two effects. With persecuting Dafa disciples, they didn't expect that it would end up tempering the Dafa disciples, that's something they couldn't expect. The past principle of the cosmos was absolute in terms of having negative and positive manifest at the same time, and it held for human society as well, with it manifesting in everything. With whatever everyday people want to do, positive and negative, and good and bad, come with it. For example, when someone hits or insults someone he doesn't like, he gives the other person virtue while hitting or insulting him, and he will also have to pay the other person back in a concrete way later on. This is how it is with regard to things people can't see. The same is true for what people can see. For example, when people teach their children, they often want them to come out on top, but it doesn't occur to them that their kids are straying further and further from being pure and kind, further and further from the cosmos's nature, and further and further from divine beings. People worry about their children getting harmed, so they teach them to retaliate and attack others, but it doesn't occur to people that when they tell their children to do that, they're harming human beings' moral values and kindness on a fundamental level. Whenever people do something, it produces the two effects.

In the past few years, the persecution of Dafa disciples has fully demonstrated that as well. How can a political power deny people their beliefs? How can it deny people freedom of thought? What it's doing is unprecedented. How could it possibly succeed in doing that? In order to achieve that, it has even sought to completely destroy thousands of years of ancient culture. They have tried to entirely overturn, completely topple, and even "stomp on" so as to "never let rise again" the things that have sustained human moral standards for thousands of years. Whether or not they were really able to achieve that, what they've done will bring about retribution, and that's something that doesn't occur to them. Ever since they did that, the Chinese people no longer believed in anything and lost the standard for their morality and behavior—people like this dare to do anything, and are capable of doing any kind of bad thing. Every facet of society is corrupt, lies just roll right off the tongue of today's Chinese people, to them lying is as normal as making small talk, and there's nothing they're ashamed to do. Then is a group of people like this good for the political power that brought it about? People didn't anticipate any of this.

The pro and con exist simultaneously, and it's totally impossible for human beings to achieve something *they* want in ordinary society. Whenever human society goes through any changes, or when something takes place in human society, it is in fact all controlled by divine beings. Only when divine beings direct people to do something, and under the influence of divine beings, can different circumstances come about in human society. Trying to do something out of sheer human wishes won't work, and the wretched demons and the divine beings in low-level dimensions can't just do what they want, either. Only the most wicked, stupidest thing could do something so irrational as to persecute good people, cultivators. In the future people will have a new understanding of history, especially the

history of the past hundred years or so—it will be evaluated anew.

In any case, in the course of opposing the persecution you've seen that Dafa disciples have been maturing and the world's people have been waking up more and more. The evil and the vile people who've orchestrated the persecution in this world are becoming weaker and weaker. The authority that they've utilized and all of the methods they've used to rule will be eliminated by history along with the persecution of Falun Gong students. You've all seen that it's inevitable. Then, for Dafa disciples, in this kind of situation it's no longer hard to save the world's people and clarify the truth. That's the situation we see right now, and going forward it will become even easier for you all to clarify the truth, because the people of the world are becoming more and more aware. People will come to you on their own to hear about the true situation, and people will come to you on their own to learn our practice. That's about to happen, and in Mainland China the entire population is going to step forward to oppose the persecution. (*Applause*) Whatever human beings do, they're doing it to themselves. Persecuting Dafa disciples is in fact the persecutors persecuting themselves. That is something determined by the nature of the cosmos. Back when all this started, the persecution of Falun Gong was a campaign that mobilized the entire population. There is a pro and a con to it. Let's wait and see the final result. Human beings aren't able to just do whatever they want to do. Human beings think that they're powerful, but no matter how wild your propaganda machine gets it's no use. That bunch of villainous lies and deceit is useless against cultivators. When you do something that is not allowed by divine beings, after you're done making a ruckus, divine beings will settle the score with you. That's how it works.

As Dafa disciples you should be more clearheaded, and before the evil has been completely destroyed you still need to work hard on clarifying the truth and saving the people of this world, and do well the things Dafa disciples should do. All of the things that Dafa disciples do today is Dafa disciples' validating the Fa, and is your walking a divine path. You can't slack off in the final stages; keep doing well with what you should do.

Some students need to pay attention here: every time I mention that the evil is getting smaller and smaller, and becoming less and less able to carry on, a lot of students think, "Hmm, then I'm going to drop everything else and just do Dafa work." You can't do that. You can't go to extremes with anything Dafa disciples do. Just live a normal life and cultivate normally, and at the same time do what Dafa disciples should do. That's how it should be at present. In ordinary society, other than doing what Dafa disciples should do, there isn't any difference in form [from ordinary people], on the surface it looks the same as ordinary society, only you're a cultivator. That's how it should be. What you're doing today is establishing things for the future, and that's how this path should go. This is the most upright path and what cultivators of the future will follow, so you can't behave in an extreme way at all or go to any extremes, as that would create unnecessary obstacles and trouble for yourselves. Any and all extreme ways of thinking are not from what I've told you, and they could be a form of attachment and will cause trouble; we've already experienced a lot of things like that. I think that as Dafa disciples who have come this far today, you are supposed to be very clear on a lot of things and be more and more rational now, and you should know what's going on when you run into problems. So in these areas you should be very clearheaded now, and you should no longer be interfered with by certain things.

Another point is that everything Dafa disciples are doing right now is validating the Fa, because your understandings and improvement all come from the Fa. Then as Dafa disciples, of course you should validate the Fa, that goes without saying. But everything that's done in validating the Fa is done for yourselves—not a single thing is done for me, and that includes the things I've told you to do. Since every Dafa disciple has to establish his own mighty virtue in the process of going towards Consummation—especially since you are beings forged by Dafa—you have demonstrated [your ability

to do that] in validating the Fa. So all of what Dafa disciples do is magnificent. That includes what seem like the simplest things, such as handing out flyers, clarifying the truth to the world's people, sending righteous thoughts at the consulates and embassies, Dafa disciples validating the Fa in various ways to government, to society and the community, and to the media, etc.—all of it is establishing mighty virtue for yourselves, and all of it is the path that leads to the final Consummation. In other words, all the things you're doing, including the small and insignificant things, all of them are done for yourselves, and not a single thing is done for Dafa, nor is a single thing done for me, your master. (*Applause*)

In the future you'll all see that other than saying what needs to be said at Fa conferences, I usually say very little. That's because everyone needs to walk his own path, everyone *must* walk his own path. Only then can mighty virtue be established. So I can't push you along at every moment and in every instance, as was done before. The time of just studying the Fa and cultivating oneself has passed, and the present time is for Dafa disciples to consummate their final things, all the things that you need. It looks like you're doing things for Dafa, and some people may be thinking, "I'm doing things for Master, because Master told me to do them." (*Master smiles/chuckles*) In fact that's not the case. The things I tell you to do, those too are done for yourselves.

No being can damage the Fa. It existed before and was brought here; it's something that pre-existed before. It's just that it is imparted to all beings to save all beings, but how many beings can see the true, specific forms that the Fa manifests in? That's pretty difficult to do, they can't be seen, and that's why the substance of the Fa can't be seen. The Falun that you see is just a form of the *gong*; it's pretty hard for ordinary beings to see the wheel that is truly stabilizing the Fa, and even those at high levels can't see it. So who can really damage the Fa? Nobody.

I've told you that it's hard to save sentient beings, and that in order to allow the beings as a whole and beings at different levels to obtain the Fa and be saved, the choice of teaching the Fa at this place of humans, who are the lowest-level beings in the cosmos, had to be made so that beings at each level could hear it. Then with the Fa being taught here, who among the people in this world would be here to listen to the Fa? There had to be such beings, and such beings are today's Dafa disciples. (*Applause*) The choice had to be that Fa-rectification take place when the old cosmos reached the final stage of formation-stasis-degeneration-destruction—in other words, the most difficult time—to save sentient beings and the entire firmament. The purpose of creating the Three Realms way back when was to have it be used by the Fa-rectification at this stage. So who would be the sentient beings in the Three Realms, what kinds of beings would be here, and what kinds of beings and what ways of existence for beings would be needed later on—which includes the beings' ways of thinking, how they conduct themselves, their cultures, and so on—all of these things would take shape over the course of history. But looking at them [now] during the Fa-rectification, [it seems] they were planned poorly, and that's because the old forces came about. What I'm saying is, many aspects of mankind aren't the way they are by accident, they're orderly. Exactly because they are quite orderly, they seem natural. But when it comes to things like whether or not a Dafa disciple can enter Dafa's door when the Fa is being taught, whether or not he'll continue to cultivate when going through a test, whether or not he can eventually progress towards Consummation, and whether or not a Dafa disciple can do well in validating the Fa when persecution or other forms of disturbance take place, *these* things depend on the individual himself. So in validating the Fa, you've all seen that there's a problem, namely, the old forces' emergence seriously interfering with the Fa-rectification and Dafa disciples. But no matter how they've interfered or how evil the things they've done are, when you look back you'll see that in fact nothing has "escaped from the Tathagata's palm."⁸ (*Applause*) And that's for sure. No matter what the old

⁸ Translator's note: This is a phrase commonly used to suggest that someone has complete control of something,

forces, the wretched demons, or the wicked human beings want to do, in the end things will have to be completed according to my Fa-rectification's requirements. Whether it's the various forms of disruption that occur during the process or the different kinds of behavior and states that certain students have shown, these things are no more than states manifest by the old cosmos's beings during the last stage of formation-stasis-degeneration-destruction, and [are no more than] certain disruptions to the Fa-rectification. But when it comes to Dafa itself, no one can damage it. And no matter how awful the pain is that Dafa disciples experience, in the end they will reach divinity.

From the Fa you've all realized this principle: in this cosmos, no being will suffer in vain. This is especially true for someone who cultivates Dafa, and on top of that is a Dafa disciple in the Fa-rectification period—as long as he's still in the Fa, no matter what ends up happening to him, what awaits him is Consummation. In other words, no matter how the evil persecutes us it can't achieve its goal, and in the end everything has to be harmonized according to the Fa-rectification's inevitable outcome. That's how it is. When there's disruption to the Fa-rectification, then during the Fa-rectification [I] make use of the situation of disruption, and in the end the goal that Fa-rectification needs will still be accomplished, and that's for sure.

In the future, after Dafa disciples have made it through and you take a look at everything, you will definitely see that that's true. When divine beings in the cosmos saw that during the cosmos's process of rise and decline it was progressing toward the last stage of formation-stasis-degeneration-destruction, they found it horrifying. No one wanted to be destroyed, and everyone wanted to save himself. In order to save themselves they would have had to save the entire cosmos, and yet, after exhausting all their ideas, the beings still couldn't achieve their goal, particularly because the ideas that the beings came up with and the things that they did at that time couldn't be considered good. No matter how high a being was, he couldn't be considered completely perfect or completely good. That's why they couldn't achieve their goal. Yet the beings in the cosmos saw the final, horrific end and wanted to do something about it. And that's why the cosmos's old forces came about.

As the whole Fa-rectification in the cosmos has come to this stage today, I can't in fact describe it accurately with human language anymore, as human language can no longer express it. I can only describe things in general. The things that I planned way back when have all been completed. In fact, our own cosmos has been completed. (*Applause*) The only things left are those final factors that make it possible for this gigantic cosmic body to exist, and all of those factors are things that are separating the human surface on a fundamental level.

At present, the situation manifest in human society is very similar to the situation of Fa-rectification in the cosmos. Things are becoming clearer and clearer [for people to see] now. And I think this situation might start changing even more quickly. When the Fa-rectification of the human world starts, that's when it will really impact human beings. At the beginning of the Fa-rectification this Three Realms area had already been encircled. So the Three Realms was separated from the original cosmic body, the beings up above could no longer have contact with the beings down below, and in the future when human affairs are being worked on it will be unrelated to what's outside the Three Realms. In recent times, the beings in upper realms saw all of this, and before the Fa-rectification they descended and incarnated in this world in large numbers. So to human beings those appear to be the same human skins, but in fact the persons inside the human skins are different now. Many high-level beings came to obtain the Fa and incarnated as human beings, and many are beings from different, faraway cosmic bodies. And actually, while Dafa disciples validate the Fa at this time, a lot more people were supposed to obtain the Fa, but for various reasons they were separated back then by the old forces, who wouldn't

regardless of how hard others might try to change things or how things might appear to be.

allow them to obtain the Fa. And during this persecution some beings have even sinned against Dafa—something they can never fully pay for—and now face elimination. And there are also ones who haven't sinned against Dafa but aren't able to cultivate; they will be humans in the new epoch. These are all future matters.

Let me take this opportunity to mention something. Recently a lot of Dafa disciples have written books. I've looked at a few of them briefly. The intentions behind them are good, and many of the books are about cultivation, being persecuted, and opposing the persecution. However, they cannot be circulated among Dafa disciples. Their starting point is affirmed—they're validating the Fa using the form of books, they're saving the people in this world, and they're doing what Dafa disciples should do. But as you know, Dafa disciples need to reach Consummation, so nothing should interfere with the form in which today's Dafa disciples validate the Fa—this is extremely critical. Don't add anything in beyond Fa-study. So you absolutely cannot circulate among Dafa disciples anything that isn't a part of Dafa itself, and you absolutely cannot disrupt Dafa disciples in any way.

I've talked about these things before. In today's special situation and unique circumstances, and with the occurrence of the special situation of being persecuted, I'm bringing it up again. Those books can be promoted in ordinary society, Dafa disciples can help advertise them using the media outlets established by Dafa disciples, and you can spread them in ordinary society. All of you can help do it, and that's all good. It's just that you can't cause a stir among Dafa disciples. From now on, besides Dafa books, don't sell at Fa conferences any materials, or any audio or video materials, etc., that aren't part of the Fa itself. Even less should you make Fa conferences or our students your primary customers. You cannot make money off of Dafa disciples. Materials for spreading the Fa, clarifying the truth, and so on, should target society. That's how things should be done.

Next, I'll take some time to answer some questions for you. (*Applause*) You can pass up question slips. Let's get right to it.

Question: Can we use legal means to deal with the French policemen's behavior?

Teacher: While the Chinese leader was visiting France, you went there to appeal to and welcome him. It was originally a very good thing. But some of those gangsters from the group that persecutes Falun Gong had to stir up trouble, which led the French policemen who didn't know the truth to harass our students. The incident was certainly the work of the evil, the work of that bunch of gangsters that persecutes Falun Gong. [The French police,] the law enforcement agency of a democratic country, completely followed the orders of another country, a government controlled by evil, and violated human rights. For a country that advocates democracy and human rights, I don't think that's something to be proud of. It's completely appropriate to use legal means to resolve the problem.

Question: Dafa disciples in Thailand send greetings to Master.

Teacher: Thank you. (*Applause*)

Question: While clarifying the truth, some students aren't coolheaded and they speak in an extreme way.

Teacher: Dafa disciples should do everything cool-headedly and with *Shan* thoughts. Whether you're clarifying the truth to people or participating in an activity, you should always have people see the goodness and kindness of Dafa disciples. Absolutely don't do anything that's too extreme. When you save beings and clarify the truth, if you speak in an extreme way it won't have a positive effect. That's because when you lack *Shan* you won't disintegrate the evil elements that exist in the minds of those people who have been poisoned, so you won't be able to achieve a positive effect.

I've told you before that *Shan* isn't something pretended, nor is it a state that's just maintained on the surface. *Shan* truly comes from within and can only be attained and embodied through cultivation. When you're before sentient beings, as soon as words come out of your mouth and as soon as your thoughts emerge, they are able to disintegrate bad elements and the bad things that poison the world's people and that exist in people's minds. And then people will come to understand, and you'll be able to save them. Without the mighty power of true *Shan* at work, you won't be able to disintegrate those things, and you won't achieve anything in clarifying the truth. Those who do things in an extreme way, in particular, let me tell you that it absolutely won't have a positive effect. That's because the abilities you've acquired in cultivation won't manifest, and your *Shan* won't manifest. So, while doing anything, don't have any combative thoughts, that's wrong. Don't go to extremes, even when you go to the consulates and embassies. You should be compassionate to people. But it's different when it comes to evil beings. When we send forth righteous thoughts, we clear away the evil that doesn't belong to mankind, and the demons, ghosts, and monsters that have engaged in the persecution. However you handle those wretched demons and dark minions is fine. But you need to be *Shan* to people. Aren't we saving people? Since we are saving the world's people, how could you save people if you're not *Shan* to them?

Question: As more beings are created, some beings grow selfish, and they drop down. Is that one of the reasons why the cosmos has degenerated? Will there be as many beings in the future?

Teacher: Selfishness is a fundamental attribute of the cosmos of the past. Because of that attribute, formation-stasis-degeneration-destruction and birth-aging-sickness-death are inevitable. In the future the Fa will be all-harmonizing, perfect, and selfless. The change in that fundamental attribute of the cosmos leads to fundamental changes in the cosmos's progression and beings' characteristics. The fundamental attribute of the cosmos has determined the fundamental state that the cosmos is in. The impurity of beings, and even the dropping down of beings that have gone bad, have been caused by formation-stasis-degeneration-destruction. And formation-stasis-degeneration-destruction, in turn, results from the fundamental attribute of the cosmos, but it doesn't seem to relate directly to the fundamental attribute.

You're now thinking about matters of divine beings with a human mind. It's not like what you think. The number of beings in the cosmos is fixed, and it has nothing to do with beings degenerating or not.

Divine beings are present everywhere, and beings are present everywhere, and there are so many of them they're impossible to count. You know, with the air, there are so many particles that make up air. Everything we see when we open our eyes is composed of microcosmic particles and even more microcosmic particles that form particles of the next larger layer. There are beings in every layer of particles, and there are even gigantic groups of beings in every layer of particles. Some manifest in different dimensions. Presently they can't be seen using scientific methods, but they do exist. That's how numerous they are—if you pick up a speck of dust, there are countless beings on it. And I'm not referring to bacteria here. If you magnify a particle so that it's as large as the Earth, take a look at it and you'll see how many beings are on it. And that tiny speck of dust isn't the most microcosmic particle. There are more microcosmic particles, even more microcosmic particles, and ones that are almost infinitely microcosmic. This is about the microcosmic things. Then what about larger particles? In the macrocosm, how many beings are there in gigantic cosmic bodies that are larger than molecules, even larger, and larger still? How many beings must there be altogether?! The cosmos is a richly diverse and incredibly large cosmic body. Everything is alive and everything is a being. There are so many beings that they're everywhere. Whether beings are good or not has nothing to do with their number. The lengths of all beings' lives were determined by the nature of the past cosmos; in the past, the law of formation-stasis-degeneration-destruction caused that. In the future the Fa will be all-harmonizing and

perfect.

Question: Is our current appearance identical to our soul's (yuanshen's) appearance and our appearance after we've completed cultivation?

Teacher: I've talked about this before. The higher up you go, the more wonderful and the younger [you look], and you'll still look like you. Whether you are old, middle-aged or young today, your soul may not be like that. But the higher up you go, the more wonderful and more beautiful you look, for sure. Well, since it's wonderful, being wonderful includes being beautiful. So when you reach a very high level, say you've cultivated to a certain point, you will find that you're so beautiful that you don't look like you do now, and that you don't look at all like people on earth. It's a manifestation of the realm that comes from ascending there out of humanness.

Question: Where in the body is the energy field particularly strong? (People laugh)

Teacher: This is from a new student. It makes no difference where, the strength is the same everywhere. It's just that different parts of your body are sensitive. You wonder where it's sensitive and where it's particularly strong? Under the effect of *gong*, the changes are the same everywhere in your body.

Question: There are some students in Mainland China who haven't stepped forward because they're afraid. What will their future be?

Teacher: At present I don't want to say anything conclusive on these things. You're actually all quite clear about this: when a person has benefited from Dafa, yet in order to protect himself, when Dafa is faced with adversity, he doesn't say anything about the true situation, does that person deserve salvation? Let me give a simple illustration. There was this person who saw that another person was in danger and saved his life. Then the person whose life was saved sees that the person who saved him is in big trouble, but he ignores it. Is that a good person? You are a being that was created by Dafa and have had a new life given to you by Dafa, so when a situation arises where Dafa disciples are all being persecuted and Dafa is being harmed, yet you aren't able to safeguard Dafa, are you still a Dafa disciple? You can't even be called a good person in the most basic sense. Besides, you've truly benefited [from Dafa]. In the eyes of divine beings, you are the worst being, even worse than those who've directly persecuted the Fa. That's because the people who have persecuted Dafa disciples didn't benefit from the Fa. So, such a person is even worse than those vile people. What's more, this is the Great Law that created all life in the cosmos. As for how they'll be dealt with, the Fa has its standards.

Question: Do the "excessive thoughts" in "All excessive thoughts extinguished // Cultivating Buddhahood is not difficult"⁹ refer to thought karma?

Teacher: Yes, that's right. Thought karma mostly manifests as going off into flights of fancy or indulging in wild imagination, which is all human attachments. Most of the time, those are wild thoughts of wanting to get things that one desires, things that one wants but can't get. That's why they're called "excessive thoughts," thoughts that are useless, futile. (*Master smiles/chuckles*) That's the idea.

Question: When reporting news from Taiwan, what angle should we use in order to highlight the contrast between the two sides of the Strait?

Teacher: "When reporting news from Taiwan, what angle should we use in order to highlight the contrast between the two sides of the Strait?" The question isn't written clearly. What you're actually trying to say is that they have different attitudes regarding Falun Gong. How to contrast the two? The

⁹ Translator's note: This is a translation of two lines from *Hong Yin*, Master Li's book of poetry.

attitudes that the two sides of the Strait hold in and of themselves form a contrast. They have the same ancestry and the same culture, yet the two places have two different attitudes toward Dafa. Isn't that itself a contrast? In truth-clarification articles you can contrast them and help the world's people see it.

Question: How do we clarify the truth to large corporations?

Teacher: At this point I make no distinction as to whether they're big corporations or small corporations. No matter what, we should save all those who should be saved. You should do whatever you're supposed to do, save whoever can be saved, and do whatever you can do. Whether people want to be saved is their own issue.

Question: A Dafa disciple in our area is too busy doing Dafa work and has thus neglected the responsibilities he's supposed to fulfill in his family.

Teacher: The student who raised this question seems to have an attachment, too. Don't try to use Master's mouth [to criticize others]. What I've told you is that you should be a good person wherever you are and have others say that you are a Dafa disciple. You need to handle the things in your family well and handle the things in your workplace well. As Dafa disciples, how well you've cultivated is precisely reflected in these areas, in front of the world's people. You might say, "I've cultivated well, I'm a Dafa disciple." Yet when you're dealing with the world's people your behavior in those areas isn't good. Then how could you show that you've cultivated well? (*Master smiles/chuckles*) Right? Of course, some of our Dafa disciples have cultivated well but it's just that they've overlooked those things. But the state of having cultivated well isn't something that can be acted, it's just how a cultivator is.

Question: That chief evil thing in China that was chosen by the old forces must have a shameful past. Could Master tell us its background?

Teacher: It actually doesn't have much of a background. It was a puff of evil air emitted by a decomposed body that was thousands of years old, and it turned into a toad embryo and was chosen by the old forces. Being prone to jealousy that stemmed from its short temper and pettiness, and through its wheeling and dealing in bureaucratic circles, it developed its ways of hurting people to get ahead, forming cliques, having no noble aspirations, bootlicking, and doing utterly shameless things. The old forces felt that it completely met the standard for being human scum—it had more than satisfied all the requirements—and had all kinds of wickedness. The old forces were incredibly fond of it and they knew it was sure to be quite useful when the time came. It was selected by the old forces and was then deliberately molded. When they were making the selection back then they were looking for something that's evil and stupid. That's why it completely behaves as it does.

Question: Please tell us more about the significance of sending righteous thoughts and appealing in front of the consulates and embassies. We practice in front of them every day, rain or shine. Although the conditions are poor, we're all quite steadfast.

Teacher: The consulates and embassies in different countries are places where overseas Chinese people can go to express their views. Of course you can go there. There are people there, too, who can be saved. So it has great significance. Also, everything that you do there can be seen by the world's people. But for Dafa disciples it really is strenuous. In the North winter is very cold, with its freezing winds that chill to the bone, yet Dafa disciples still keep up their efforts. They're amazing, truly amazing! Everyone is walking his own path of validating the Fa. Those students too are walking their own paths of validating the Fa.

Question: You've often talked about the mighty virtue of Dafa disciples. Of course I believe everything you've said. But it's difficult for me to see the mighty power of the small things that I do. They just look

like a drop of water in a mighty river. I'll continue to study the Fa, and things will become clear through the Fa.

Teacher: It does feel that way because basically all beings in human society are living in delusion, and human beings are the most deluded. I've talked with you about the purpose of that. It's to give human beings a chance to return, a chance to cultivate while being in delusion. While not being able to see the true picture, if humans are still able to do well and on top of that persist in cultivating amidst suffering, then that's the key to returning. If people could all see the true picture of the cosmos and the existence of divine beings, then everyone would do well. There wouldn't be any need to talk about giving human beings a chance and it wouldn't be necessary to save human beings. Everyone would try to do well. Every day they wouldn't want to do anything else anymore, and they wouldn't want anything else anymore—they would all want to cultivate themselves. In that case would it still count as cultivation? Even if they were able to cultivate, I think they would definitely cultivate very slowly since they'd have seen the true picture—"Divine beings are right there. There's the goal. Let's go, and we won't stop until we get there." But while being in this delusion you can't see the end, and you can't see your goal. And you can't even see the true effects of those magnificent things you do. Exactly in such an environment, if you're able to emerge from it and succeed in cultivation, divine beings will all be won over. They'll think that after going through such hardship, being in such delusion and in an environment where there's all kinds of disruption, and resisting all kinds of worldly temptations like fame, self-interest, and emotion, you were able to break away and step out of humanness. Only then will the divine beings be won over. Only then will they think that you're remarkable and worthy of being a divine being. That is mighty virtue. If all that weren't the case, the Three Realms and mankind would be the same as other levels of the cosmos, with the true picture being known to each level. Then this wouldn't be mankind here, it would be a world of divine beings here. At a minimum we'd be able to say that these were divine beings at the lowest level, instead of human beings who are at this lowest level. That's how these things are related. When today's Dafa disciples are able to do well with what they're supposed to do, and are able to make it through these few years that are full of trials and tribulations, in the future you will see everything. Cherish it. Cherish it! You must cherish the part of the journey that you've already completed, and you have to do well with what's left ahead, too. *(Applause)*

Question: How do we understand the Chinese character "bei" in the term "ci bei" (compassion/mercy)?

Teacher: I don't impart Dafa in order to explain words, because these things are too insignificant, so insignificant that they amount to nothing. Let me endow you with two sentences: "Without 'nothing,' it is a human feeling. If it is a human feeling, then it's not *bei* (compassion)."¹⁰

In human society, over the course of a very long time—as I've told you before—China has been the stage of this grand pageant of history. For thousands of years the groundwork for everything was constantly being laid for human beings so that when the time for obtaining the Fa came they would have the right culture, thinking, behavior, way of life, and the ability to know and understand the Fa; it also included how amidst delusion, people would be affected by attachments and wouldn't be able to see the true situation, yet at the same time, as long as they developed righteous thoughts through studying the Fa, they'd be able to break free from it. This is precisely the kind of environment that was created. Really, a great deal of effort was put into it, and today's mankind was created. But because of the old forces' meddling, what we have here is no longer the best situation, and I'm just making use of

¹⁰ Translator's note: These two sentences are a sort of play on words. The Chinese character "bei" consists of two parts, one that can be understood as "nothing" and the other as "feeling."

it wisely. There are many white students, black students, and students of other ethnicities. Today you're not in the setting of Mainland China, but let me tell you, over the course of history almost everyone in the world came out of Mainland China. (*Applause*) Your thinking is different from today's Chinese. But some time in history you laid the groundwork for that kind of thinking. Deep down inside your being you understand. In other words, you can understand the Fa I'm imparting today. The words at the surface [of each language] are different, but what's contained inside is the same. You're able to know what's contained in the Fa, and are able to experience and sense what's contained in the Fa. That's why your cultivation won't be affected.

So, the [concept of] *ci bei* was created when culture was being established for mankind. *Ci bei* describes the state of a godly feeling being displayed, a feeling that transcends human beings. Of course, the two-character term *cibei* is now being used in ordinary human society as well, but it's definitely not something human beings can attain. That's happened because today's culture has become confused. People don't believe in divine beings anymore, and don't know that they should cultivate anymore. Humans dare to be blasphemous against Buddhas, against Fa, and against Gods, and use cultivation terms among ordinary people. Humans have done all of that. But those are not ordinary human terms, it's just that ordinary people have taken them up and used them.

Question: "The entire nation will defy it." Could you elaborate on that more?

Teacher: Heaven's secrets can't be revealed too early on. (*Master smiles/chuckles*) (*Audience laughs, applauds*) As I've told you before, the persecution of Falun Gong has caused misunderstandings about Falun Gong among Chinese people, so what I'm saying is, although a lot of people aren't familiar with Falun Gong, everybody condemns that wicked ringleader. Isn't it like that now? (*Applause*)

Question: Recently, I've been fighting a strong element. I feel like I might not be able to keep it up, and I've never felt so tired mentally and physically.

Teacher: Send forth righteous thoughts to clear away the dark minions. At present, whenever Dafa disciples have abnormal and persistent interference while they validate the Fa, then it must be the work of the dark minions. When you eliminate them, be sure to dissolve them completely. But those students who obtained the Fa later on or stepped forward later on, your cultivation and validating the Fa are joined together at the same time, and that will make the pressure on you seem even greater. Of course, this is cultivation, and as long as you have strong righteous thoughts you'll surely be able to overcome it. There are bound to be difficulties. Human beings have karma before they cultivate, they need to eliminate karma during cultivation, and when they eliminate karma they suffer. That's the karma you owed from before, and Master can't eliminate all of it for you. If you were to become a divine being without paying off any karmic debt, divine beings would find your presence to be a nuisance: "How can you be among us? Have you paid off those debts you owed? They were all taken off and paid off by your master. Since when does it work like that?" Of course it doesn't work like that, and that's why you need to endure a certain amount of suffering when you cultivate.

Yet relatively speaking, for students outside of Mainland China, the suffering you endure is a far cry from the suffering borne by cultivators in the past. How hard it was back then! Today it's not as hard. Do you know where the suffering lies today? In the past, people suffered both mentally and physically, and now you only suffer when you can't let go of your attachments. Your suffering only comes from not wanting to let go of your attachments—"My! How come I feel so awful! Why do some people always treat me so badly? Why is my body always eliminating karma?" Human beings just can't let those things go. What's the maximum you can let go? Can your thoughts be righteous and can you be like a true Dafa disciple? Be upright, dignified, and confident, and regard yourself as a Dafa disciple. If you can truly let go of your attachments in any circumstance, and treat yourself as a Dafa disciple who

is different from an ordinary person, I believe everything will change. Veteran students have experienced this deeply, as they have gone through all of that. So, newer students should ask and seek advice from veteran students in these areas more often, and spend more time reading the Fa I taught before. These questions have been explained quite a bit. Another thing is, recently the bad divine beings (dark minions) that crept into the Three Realms have also been directly participating in persecuting Dafa disciples. Very often they've been the ones doing things. When you send forth righteous thoughts, destroy them and eliminate the disruptions.

Question: I'm very grateful to Master for saving me. But I'm in serious financial debt, and have all kinds of human thoughts and attachments. I'm very worried. Esteemed Master, please help me.

Teacher: I can save you, but I can't help you for *those* reasons. (*Audience laughs*) I can only tell you to cultivate. If you say that "I owe so much money now, I can't calm my mind and cultivate. Teacher, help me make a fortune and pay back all the money so that I can cultivate without worries," let me tell you, that's not cultivation. I don't want you to cultivate that way. That's because human beings all have debts to pay off that are owed over here and owed over there, and everybody has suffering they have to go through, and it's precisely during such difficulties that you show whether you can cultivate. If you can, then everything might change. But your cultivation has to be solid, real, and self-motivated. If you say, "I'll cultivate and I'll do the exercises every day," but deep down inside you're secretly thinking, "As long as I practice, Master said all those troubles of mine will be removed and changed," then if you have such thoughts, things won't change. That's because in that case you have a gap and you're covering up your attachments. You might fool yourself, but you can't fool divine beings. When you truly become a cultivator, become a Dafa disciple openly and nobly, everything will change.

All the same, there are some cases where the dark minions are interfering. You should seriously eliminate the disruptions with your righteous thoughts.

I'll mention another thing in passing. Recently many students have noticed that a very small number of students are disrespectful of Master. The truth is, I can forgive all of that, but be careful: the various factors of the old forces and the beings in the cosmos that haven't been rectified by the Fa won't. They'll jump on this and do what they want with you. This type of thing happened quite often when I was imparting the Fa in the Mainland way back when. Once somebody is disrespectful of Master, they will for sure push him over to the opposite side. All beings came for the Fa, to play either a positive or a negative role. Those who play a negative role will be destroyed in the end. So, when they see a student acting that way, they'll definitely push that person over to the other side, and have him do as many bad things as he can from then on.

Very dangerous. So, once such situations come about, the old forces will do that right away because they will have found a reason to do that. They'll say the person's huge debt was eliminated by his master and borne for him by his master, who scooped up a being like him—one that was as good as in hell—allowed him to become a divine being, and gave him so many things. Although he doesn't see them, all those things are real and have truly been given to him. They'll think, "How could he dare to treat his master that way?" And so they will insist on pushing him over to the other side, get him to do bad things, and eventually have him destroyed.

Of course, I don't acknowledge these arrangements of the old forces, and I don't allow them to do those things. And that's why I try my best to have students realize these things themselves. But if our students don't pay attention to this, it will be hard for you to break free from this kind of tribulation. This issue just came to mind a moment ago. You do need to take this seriously—all deviant paths are fraught with danger and pitfalls.

Question: I obtained the Fa only seven months ago. Am I a Fa-rectification disciple? Will I go back

when the Fa rectifies the human world?

Teacher: I can't say that what you're asking is wrong. But you have an attachment there. Whether you're a newer student or a veteran student, and no matter which category of disciples you fall into, now that you've entered the door of Dafa cultivation—now that you've entered the door of true cultivation—don't be attached to anything. A single human thought can become an obstacle that hinders your improvement. That's why there's a saying in cultivation, "Have the desire to cultivate, without the desire to obtain *gong*." You can cultivate but you can't be attached. When you have no human desires and aren't attached to anything, you'll cultivate quickly, improve quickly, and have fewer ordeals. Whenever you have attachments your cultivation will be slow.

Don't worry about whether you're a Fa-rectification period disciple or a future disciple. Now that you've taken up cultivation, you're already a being that's envied by countless other beings. So just walk your path well. With anything a being does in the cosmos, he'll get returns for it. There will be returns for doing good, and there will be returns for doing bad. Cultivation of course involves returns as well—it's the good return of achieving an Attainment Status for validating your Attainment Status. This is an absolute truth in the cosmos. Don't think too much, and don't get concerned with what your own situation is. If you can do what it takes and you can cultivate, then go ahead and cultivate.

Question: Teacher, please explain "benevolent solutions."

Teacher: By saying "benevolent solutions," I was referring to a way in which beings in the cosmos are assimilated to the Fa during the Fa-rectification. Some beings aren't worthy of a benevolent solution, in which case whatever should be done will be done. For some beings who have sinned against the Fa-rectification, they deserve still less of a chance for a benevolent solution. The moment the Fa-rectification passes through, they are purged. The beings that are handled with benevolent solutions are assimilated to the Fa by the best method. And Dafa disciples are getting something even better than a benevolent solution, because Dafa disciples are cultivating proactively, and cultivating themselves toward the future, so it's more precious than being benevolently resolved.

Question: All French Dafa disciples give Master their best regards.

Teacher: Thank you. (*Applause*)

Question: In France, there's a Dafa student with mental problems. Once while he was handing out flyers to Chinese tourists, he lost control and began yelling in front of many Chinese tourists, which had a negative effect. When he sends righteous thoughts in front of the embassy he can't stay still, and he wrote things all over the Chinese Embassy.

Teacher: When it comes to these things, as Dafa disciples you should handle them well. That student, being a Dafa disciple, can't do that. We can only save beings with compassion. Doing things irrationally will bring about negative effects.

When a very few students can't keep their own emotions under control, other students should stop them. Dafa disciples are one, and you should cooperate with each other and not allow things like that to happen anymore—when they have happened, you should resolve the problem appropriately. If the person really does have mental problems, then I think we should try to persuade that student to practice at home; Master will look after him all the same, and there's no need for him to go out in public. If it's not an issue of mental problems, then you should help him.

Question: Everything in the cosmos has a certain predetermination to it. Some beings are doomed to be destroyed. What determines that for that kind of being?

Teacher: "Everything in the cosmos has a certain predetermination to it" refers to the cosmos overall.

For instance, the old Fa-truths predetermined the fact that the cosmos would go through formation-stasis-degeneration-destruction. That's the extent of that old Fa's wisdom. Although the destiny of the cosmos is predetermined as such, and although the fundamentals of the specific beings within it are connected to the cosmos historically, as for what a being does specifically and how much karma he has, he needs to pay for all that, and if his karma gets large he'll be destroyed. These are all matters that have to do with that being himself. And also, what direction a being himself takes, these are things that are basically unstable. But, through what a being does, people can see what will happen with him in the cosmos next, and then next, and then next. In other words, away from the time setting of this dimension of ours, in another time setting you can see what he'll be doing later on, a continuation of his current state. If his present state suddenly changes, then his state in the next stage will change as well, so these things are unstable. But the overall formation-stasis-degeneration destiny for the cosmos is stable.

Question: [Whether someone can become] a Dafa disciple is to a large extent determined by his predestined connection with it. Then what's the root cause of the predestined connections?

Teacher: I've talked about predestined connections in *Zhuan Falun*, and I've talked about them in many other Fa lectures. I've specifically talked about Dafa disciples' predestined connections. There are three types, Dafa disciples fall into three types of situations. I don't think I should repeat it here, as we don't have much time here. I might not end up answering all of the questions. (*Master smiles/chuckles*) Look up my Fa-teaching from before.

Question: Many fellow cultivators have different views on how we should perfect and complete¹¹ the Fa at this human level.

Teacher: Perfecting and completing this human level? That's an incorrect statement. If you haven't done things well, that's a cultivation issue, and it doesn't involve any issue of "perfecting and completing."

Question: How can a person break through his base¹² or the limitations of his base?

Teacher: You shouldn't be attached to these things in cultivation. That's not relevant. Don't worry about how your base is. When a being has managed to enter Dafa today, his base is not bad. Look at the world's people—there are more than 7 billion people in the world, and how many Fa-rectification period Dafa disciples are there? Yet you are one of them. So why should you still talk about your base? (*Applause*)

Question: While being part of a group, if a few project coordinators have strong human concepts, how can we manage to work together better?

Teacher: Every Dafa disciple is cultivating, every person is walking his own path, and each person still has human attachments, which is why you can still cultivate. Then the human attachments will show. Don't be unwilling to work with other students when there are conflicts or differences of opinion. Keep in mind that all of you have been through that state, and from time to time each person may experience that state. You should forgive others and be understanding of others, and you should help each other. To be able to work together and do well the things that Dafa disciples do to validate the Fa—now *that's* what you should do.

Question: What will happen to those countries where there are no Dafa disciples? How should we spread the Fa and clarify the truth in those distant countries?

Teacher: Dafa disciples are doing what Dafa disciples should do. If you're able to, you can go do that.

¹¹ Translator's note: The Chinese term rendered here as "perfect and complete" is sometimes translated as "harmonize."

¹² Translator's note: The Chinese term rendered here as "base" is sometimes translated as "inborn quality."

You can go spread the Fa in places where there are no Dafa disciples. But when it comes to places where it's too difficult or places that have very close ties with that group of gangsters in China that persecutes Dafa disciples, you shouldn't go for the time being, because there are things that will need to be done during the next stage.

Question: If the beings become degenerate again in the future, will Fa-rectification be necessary again?

Teacher: This is something that has never happened before and will probably never happen again.

If the cosmos's beings had become even more degenerate, then Fa-rectification couldn't have been done. Fa-rectification happened, this undertaking began, exactly at a time when the beings in the cosmos and mankind were no longer good enough and were about to be weeded out, but hadn't gotten to the point of being beyond salvation. It was then that the Fa was imparted. If they truly become as bad as beings that go to hell, then at that point they're no longer worthy of salvation, even though I can certainly do anything and everything and could save them.

Question: When a rocket travels beyond the scope of the nine major planets, will it have gone beyond the Three Realms?

Teacher: That's only the range that's made up of the layer of molecular particles. It's really hard to use human language to describe the range of the Three Realms. Now when I tell you how large the Three Realms is, I'm using concepts from human sensual and visual perceptions, and from the particles that are at the same level. The biggest difference between how divine beings and how human beings look at the cosmos is that divine beings don't look at things on the basis of the structure of this *one* layer of particles. They simultaneously look at things from all directions and three-dimensionally, on the basis of the combined cosmic structures of the different layers of particles below that and the different layers of particles above that. They can see the whole structural appearance of things at different levels in the cosmos, and see what they look like on a fundamental level. Human beings, on the other hand, can only see this world that's composed of this molecular layer of particles; they can only see things that are composed of *this* layer of particles. But the cosmos isn't composed of just this one layer of particles. Human beings can't see the true picture; human beings can only see this one layer. This results from the separation and restriction that's due to various factors, and the limitations of the human eye's structure, all of which are meant to produce this false picture of things for human beings. Humans just aren't allowed to see the true picture. In other words, even when it comes to things that are composed of *this* layer of particles, human beings aren't allowed to see the full picture, and human beings are given this kind of eye precisely to limit their perception of the cosmos, which makes for this culture here. Everything has been created with a certain purpose.

You know, besides infrared and ultraviolet light, there are other invisible kinds of light and inaudible sounds, but they do exist. Today's scientific devices can detect and recognize that they exist, but human eyes can't see them. In other words, human eyes aren't even allowed to see all the things that are at this level of the human world. The kind of world human beings are allowed to see is deliberately designed so that human beings' cognition is stabilized in this state. But actually it's not absolutely stable or impenetrable—through cultivation a person can break through it. But how much a person can break through and how much of the truth of the cosmos he can see depend on the cultivator's level. Conversely, the more materialistic a person is, the more he's trapped inside this maze. The more materialistic a person is, the more so his thoughts and understandings are trapped in this "reality," and the more he is within this "reality."

The larger boundaries of the Three Realms are the size of the small universe. The Three Realms' boundaries in the microcosm are actually, when you look at it in the microcosm, I'd say that "inches

away” is an overstatement. You know, microcosmic particles make up particles of one level higher. So in other words, particles at different levels are all composed of smaller particles one level below. It can be said that the Three Realms’ boundaries are right here, right amidst everything, in the microcosm of all things. There is no distance in the way that modern people think of or understand it—you almost can’t calculate their distance. But the particles of the different levels that constitute the Three Realms have their boundaries at different levels. That is, when you look at them on different planes, the different levels have their boundaries and distances. The cosmos is a very complex entity. The Three Realms that we talk about is a range that was designated for use by the would-be Fa-rectification. But there are identical particles in identical states that exist along with the Three Realms and they are connected with an even broader area. And many divine beings at the very highest levels generally refer to that, too, as “the lowest level.” The Three Realms that we refer to, though, is this specially-designated range. The scopes of those other related dimensions that are composed of particles in the same class as those of the Three Realms are incredibly immense.

Question: Why do Dafa disciples call you the Lord of Buddhas? Why is it that you came from a higher, more distant place?

Teacher: (Master smiles/chuckles) I actually don’t have any titles. Just because I wrote in one of my writings, “The Lord of Buddhas’ mercy...,” students speculated: is Master the Lord of Buddhas? The fact is, anything people call me is inaccurate. Each person’s life has a place of origin in the cosmos and at the same time has more ancient, remote factors, and this includes beings at the lowest levels—even the grass on the ground has a place of origin and more remote factors. There are different plants in different historical periods, and over the long winding course of the cosmos’s history, planets and particles have been continually disintegrating and then being reborn, disintegrating, being reborn, continually being renewed. And a lot of the dust in the cosmos may be factors of beings that disintegrated a very, very long time ago. A lot of the dirt that’s fallen to the ground may be matter from very, very far back. Then the grass absorbed matter from that dirt, and perhaps that grass also has various factors from way back. This is talking about it in terms of the surface of matter. Everything is alive—as long as it exists, it’s alive.

From another perspective, the Bible said that Yahweh created man out of clay. In fact, what Yahweh created was one species of white people, not all white people. White people don’t all belong to one species of man—they were created by several divine beings. Yellow people were also created by several divine beings. And other peoples, for example the people of India, the ancient Egyptians, and so on, were all created by different divine beings. People believe that God created man in his own image, when in fact that’s simply how a divine being’s ability works—the man he creates is bound to be of the lowest part of him and the lowest level of particles of him, that’s all. Plainly put, it’s a particle at the bottom of the divine being’s foot; you could also call it a cell. I’ve told you in my Fa lectures before that, every cell of a being—humans, animals, plants, and so on—is in the image of the main body.

Everything of the human beings that were created way back when, including all that makes up their souls and beings, was created with substances and elements from within the Three Realms. Then of course the divine beings that created the different peoples would watch over their own people. This continued all the way until recent times, when the time for Dafa to be spread was imminent, at which point many of the souls inside the human skins consisted of beings that came down from high levels, instead of the souls of human beings, as before. Another thing that needs to be clarified is, everything made up by the layer of particles at the human-surface level is called human skin, and that includes a person’s bones, internal organs, as well as his skin at the surface. This surface human skin dies from old age, but many of the things that the surface skin receives during its lifetime are passed down to the next generation. Over ages and ages, generation after generation, humans have been passing on the cultural

contents that divine beings created for man. On a cognitive level human beings don't know about these things, but they are part of them internally. When it got to recent times, when many beings that came for the Fa reincarnated as humans, the souls of the humans that were created by divine beings stayed in the netherworld, and divine beings that came from high levels beyond the Three Realms reincarnated as humans and put on that clothing (the human skin). So in other words, the human skin created by that divine being in the past was put on by a different divine being.

Then something else needs to be clarified here: that different divine being might not be lower than the divine being who created the human being; he may be higher, or, of course, lower, or at the same level; he came and took over the human that [a divine being] created, which means that another divine being has entered the boundaries of the divine being that originally created the human being. I often say that today's people all have a significant background—few if any of the world's people have the souls divine beings created back then. No matter who it is, when he has entered this world of delusion, everything he comes into contact with and sees with his eyes is like this, this is how he sees the world from the moment he's born from his mother's womb. And in this society of delusion he'll generate karma just like everyone else. What's more, the mankind of recent times has created a culture that makes people even more lost in this society, raising itself in this materialistic culture. It's extremely hard for human beings to transcend the thinking here—for someone to comprehend what's beyond all of this, he can only achieve that through cultivation.

There's another phenomenon, too. Different divine beings created different peoples, but over the past few thousand years various religions have been spread beyond their region or ethnic group. As a result, some people have begun to believe in another divine being, which has made the divine being who created them quite sad. What's more, the divine being that the person now believes in can't save people created by another divine being. And many ethnic groups no longer have any idea who their true god is. This situation has come about quite often in the course of history, leaving the divine being who created those humans no choice but to abandon the humans he created. Once this happened, many ethnic groups became people without roots and have no divine beings watching over them. Things like social turmoil, losing rationality, and disrespect for divine beings mostly come from these peoples. These ethnic groups and individuals are all impoverished.

As for why Master came from a higher, more distant place, actually, perhaps a lot of Dafa disciples in the audience here also came from some higher and more distant places. (Applause slowly begins and increases.) It's just that I came from a slightly more distant place, and because of that, during the Fa-rectification I can save everyone. As for where I came from, for the beings in the cosmos, it's now irrelevant whether I came from a high or low level—what's most important is that I'm going towards what is the highest and the most ultimate. It's enough for you to know that I came to impart and build up this Dafa.

Question: Some Dafa students believe that systemically clarifying the truth to lawyers, learning the details of the law, and eventually seeking the most favorable resolution is being distrustful of lawyers. Would Master please say a few words on this?

Teacher: Human society has been boxed into a very tight space now by man himself. Human wisdom is limited, and many restrictions are boxing humans in. A lot of things are indeed difficult to resolve, and it's hard to save people now. Handle these things with wisdom. As for what to do, it is of course not a problem to clarify the truth. Act according to your specific situations. None of the things that you come across in the course of validating the Fa are the same, so it's impossible for me to comprehensively cover everything or talk about these specific things here, so you still have to handle on your own the things you encounter. Figuring out how to do things well is part of your validating the Fa and walking your own path.

Question: Does demonstrating the exercises for people, including tourists from China, count as clarifying the truth?

Teacher: Demonstrating the exercises can achieve a certain effect. Everything you do can achieve a certain positive effect. But, if you don't talk about the facts, don't get into the specifics and only do the exercises, then you won't be able to resolve the many perplexing issues in people's minds for the time being.

Question: Dafa disciples from China's Xishuangbanna of Yunnan Province, Qinghua University in Beijing, Jiayuguan in Gansu Province, Hebei Province, Guangdong Province, New Zealand, Peru, the City of Tianjin, Montreal Canada, the City of Changchun, Beijing, the City of Shenyang, the City of Harbin, Leshan of Sichuan Province, Emei Mountain, Guangzhou, the City of Zhengzhou, and Mudanjiang send greetings to Master.

Teacher: Thank you all. *(Applause)*

Question: What should a person do if fellow practitioners mistake him for a spy?

Teacher: Let me talk a little about the issue of spies. *(Master smiles/chuckles) (Audience laughs)* Do you know how Master actually looks at these issues from a different perspective? Of course, those things that the old forces concocted are tests that target Dafa disciples, but in fact I'd say they are an insult to the Fa, they bring shame to mankind, they disrespect the Fa, they are disruptions to the Fa-rectification, and they shouldn't have happened. But it's exactly because beings are no longer up to par that Fa-rectification is necessary. Such an occupation has, after all, come into being among humans. So, is it true that only the most vile and the worst people were chosen to become spies? No. What a person does is largely determined by his own preference, but there are also many people who reluctantly do a job under the circumstances, and there are those who've been picked because they are considered smart and able to do a certain job. In other words, the choice of a person's occupation is not determined by whether his nature is good or bad. Are there good people among spies? Definitely. The different occupations in human society don't tell us whether a person is good or bad, or whether that being can be saved.

I saw this issue, so since the time I started to teach the Fa I've said—and I've followed through on it—that I don't draw lines based on occupations or social status; I'll save you no matter what your line of work is. My door is wide open, completely open, so open that there's really no door left—as long as you want to cultivate you can come in. I'll save anyone, no matter what your line of work is. But whether or not a person enters is up to that person himself, and whether or not he obtains the Fa is his own issue. It's hard for today's people to dictate what occupation they'll do—how could someone just go and do whatever he wants in life? How could it be that easy? It's really hard. In other words, a person who lives in this world can't just choose whatever occupation he wants. I saw that, and besides, all human beings have come here for the Fa, so no matter what work you do, no matter what your job is, I can save you. But whether or not you can persist in cultivating well depends on you, and whether or not you want to cultivate is up to you, too.

I've been up front about this and have put it into practice, but over these years a lot of our students still haven't truly understood the purpose behind your master's words. I've completely opened the door, and I let in people from any occupation or segment of society. Then why do *you* still insist on making unnecessary distinctions and drawing lines? *(Applause)* It's because it is human beings cultivating, not divine beings. When humans are cultivating, humans have human thoughts, and human thoughts include occupational habits and attachments and tendencies caused by their professions, which are all at work subconsciously. When a person hasn't cultivated well, his habitual attachments that were formed at his job will show. Then of course, a person's tendencies as a spy or special agent will show

too, and he might even do wrong things when he can't pass a test. During this time when Dafa disciples are being persecuted, specifically, when he's unable to pass a certain test he'll go report some information in a moment of confusion. But on a fundamental level, whether this is a bad person and whether he can be saved can't be determined just by how he is at one given time. You have to allow him to make mistakes and give him the opportunity to correct his actions—that is what's magnificent about our Fa. (*Applause*)

I've said before that nobody can undermine Dafa, and that only when Dafa disciples don't do well can they undermine Dafa. So during this persecution, that bunch of gangsters wants to use Dafa disciples to undermine Dafa, but in fact they can't undermine Dafa one bit. The premise of what I said was that a Dafa disciple is truly cultivating, but during his cultivation he doesn't understand the Fa's principles that deeply or that thoroughly, and he doesn't walk his path correctly, which has a bad effect. Actually it can only have an effect here among humans—nobody can affect the essence of Dafa. As for those who've gone over to the opposite side during the persecution, they're not Dafa disciples anymore, but those who can come back, though, are a different matter. When they are no longer Dafa disciples, they've essentially become part of that evil bunch of persecutors, and they deliberately do bad things, intentionally undermining things, turning the truth upside down, and stating lies as facts. That can't undermine Dafa, and can only help Dafa disciples become more and more rational, and their thoughts become more and more upright, and make them become more and more clearheaded and aware. Isn't that the outcome of the persecution? Haven't you all matured? What I'm talking about is, only when Dafa disciples don't do well themselves can they have a bad effect and impact in this world. If a Dafa disciple has an ordinary person's mentality and isn't doing well, or was a spy before, or a student did something wrong because he couldn't pass a test, and thus everybody drives the person out or regards him differently, truly causes his predestined opportunity of thousands of years to really be ruined, and causes him to go over to the opposite side, then, let me tell you, *that* would be truly doing something bad. (*Applause*)

Only when we're able to be forgiving can we save people. If every Dafa disciple could think that way, then think about it, with that power from compassion, would there still be any room for bad factors to exist? With that said, let me tell you, the professional spies aren't able to get in. [The spies among us] are [Dafa] students who used to be in that line of work before 1999 and who didn't cultivate well, or students who gave in to the evil at one point out of fear and didn't do well. If you were to tell them to really harm the Fa, they wouldn't do it. It's just that they became confused at a certain time, didn't do well, and couldn't pass the test, at which point they took the wrong path. There are also some Dafa disciples who are attached to those little things that they have, and some who just wanted to do enough to get the rogue spy agencies off their back. The reality is, it's impossible for anyone to truly harm Dafa.

So this has happened exactly because some students still have human attachments and still haven't done well in some respects. As for the idea that spies have truly infiltrated us and snuck in, I'll tell you, that's impossible, since what we're doing is cultivation. They want to use students to provide them with some so-called "intelligence" for them to find targets. But all of that's useless, and they're only fooling themselves. Those spy agencies know full well that Falun Gong has no secrets at all, and they know very well that Falun Gong is a group of good people who are just against the persecution. They know that themselves. One of the crooked means they use is to generate a climate that pressures people and whips them up—in China they're used to creating these campaigns. That's all they know how to do, and they hype certain things up to influence people. Does that work on cultivators? A few years have gone by, and haven't Dafa disciples become more steadfast and more rational? (*Applause*) Has anyone been scared by it? Nobody has. Under such a wicked persecution, have any of the Dafa disciples in Mainland China been scared? Of course, there are those who couldn't come through it, but those who

couldn't were deliberately arranged to get in by the old forces. I've said that all beings came for the Fa, but not all of them came to play a positive role. The old forces' purpose was to have that type of being play a negative role so that Dafa disciples could be tempered, that's all; it's not that the vile people have the ability to do anything. Humans can't see these things clearly, and humans are just attached to what humans want to do. But whatever humans have done, they have to pay for it, that's for sure. *(Applause)*

But I also know that there really are special agents taking advantage of the gaps in students who have attachments. That's caused by the students not doing well and being too attached. The few students who aren't clearheaded have got to pay attention to this now.

Just now I taught this Fa from a positive angle. But I also know that while Master is giving chances again and again there are still a few people who don't get it and who haven't been taking Master's continued mercy seriously and have been doing the dirty work of spies, betraying their own consciences and betraying Dafa disciples. They've been repeatedly providing so-called "intelligence" to the evil, and in the eyes of divine beings, the negative effects that their actions have brought to Dafa are now beyond what they can pay for. That kind of involvement in interfering with Fa-rectification is in fact directly participating in the persecution, and the consequences will be the same as for that group of gangsters in China that is persecuting Dafa disciples. I now have nothing more to say to these people, and what I said a little bit ago doesn't hold for this type of person. As I got to this point, a divine being just said, "It looks like all they have left is a chance to plan their funerals."

Question: You said that by doing the three things well everything is encompassed. Does this mean that all of a person's attachments and the conflicts a person has had will be benevolently resolved? I sincerely ask Master to enlighten me on this.

Teacher: *(Master smiles/chuckles)* If a person can't resolve those fundamental problems of his in cultivation, then you can't say that he's cultivating. What *is* cultivation? What is the ultimate goal of cultivation? It's to emerge from among ordinary people. When you're no longer one of them, can ordinary people's various conflicts, attachments, and different factors still have an effect on you? Absolutely not. But whether you can emerge from it and cultivate out of it, whether you can forge ahead diligently, whether you will progress quickly or slowly in cultivation—all of that depends on you, yourself. I, as your master, will absolutely be responsible to you. But whether or not you can move forward diligently is still up to you. Could a divine being be swayed by all kinds of human attachments? Not a chance, of course it's impossible. So anything can be resolved. It just depends on how you cultivate. If you're just cultivating with your mind focused on solving that problem, then you're not truly cultivating. Cultivation has to be completely unconditional.

Question: The level of the cosmos created by a Dafa disciple won't last long. Could Master please clarify that?

Teacher: I didn't tell you that it wouldn't last long. Right now you folks are thinking with a human mentality. *(Master smiles/chuckles)* A human thought... since humans don't have any abilities, what they send out is like a bubble of air, it's tiny, and it dissipates in no time. But the things that arise from a Dafa disciple's thoughts are strong, and the higher the disciple's level, the more powerful and bigger the things that emerge out of his thoughts, and the longer they last. For a gigantic divine being, his one thought can create cosmic bodies and cosmoses. Well actually, there are more fundamental factors involved. The Fa is all-encompassing and all-perfecting, and all of the imperfect factors in the cosmos of the past are perfectly resolved this time during the Fa-rectification. So since it's an all-encompassing and all-perfecting Fa, even the cosmos's fundamental nature of formation-stasis-degeneration has changed, and its time concept can't be comprehended with a human mind.

Question: Lately fellow practitioners have often been using electronic software to share understandings

and study the Fa, and are even strongly encouraging its usage. As a result, people have less opportunities to share their thoughts and study the Fa in person.

Teacher: Indeed that's not right. Except for little disciples, you shouldn't do that. But that's not to rule out using it occasionally when you're very busy, just don't make a habit of it. That isn't something I want to pass down. There's no problem with you studying the Fa in person as a group, and studying the Fa and exchanging thoughts in person. You can take advantage of [such software] when you're busy, but you can't all do that, and you can't do it frequently.

Question: I don't understand very well the difference between matter being impure and matter having deviated. Master, would you please explain?

Teacher: Matter's impurity and deviation is the fundamental reason for the fall of the old cosmos, and it was caused by the old cosmos's nature. Formation-stasis-degeneration-destruction was the extent of the wisdom of the Fa back then, and it was a way to cyclically purify different specific domains, but when the whole thing reaches that stage, that's the end. As far as matter's impurity and deviation goes, if you look at it in terms of human society, the modern-science-wrought impurity of air, soil, metals, water, and various chemical elements cannot be resolved by mankind. In the eyes of divine beings, mankind's thinking has deviated so much that it is no longer human. Everything in the cosmos is cycling, so after those things are extracted by higher-level beings they'll make the elements and beings in high-level dimensions impure. That's just putting it simply. Take a look at my last few talks on the Fa.

Question: As for the role of the Minghui website in clarifying the truth, how should overseas students work together and help?

Teacher: The Minghui website's role in clarifying the truth is irreplaceable. It's the most important window through which we get the truth out about the persecution and the overall situation of Dafa and Dafa disciples' validating the Fa. When it comes to the things of Dafa disciples, you should always cooperate with each other and work well together.

Question: Recently I came across a student who claimed that he had reached Consummation and could switch to cultivating in another discipline now. May I ask if he has enlightened along an evil path or was just letting his imagination run wild?

Teacher: I'd say he's got a fever, (audience laughs) and he's become foggy-headed from the fever. Well actually, whoever says that is in a dangerous state. Beings who don't have rational, upright thoughts and clear heads are the ones divine beings look down on most.

Question: Is it appropriate for media to publish Master's photo?

Teacher: I think it's fine, no problem, because I have my ways. (Master smiles/chuckles) (Applause)

Question: Master said in Touring North America to Teach the Fa, "I do not know who I am, either." I don't understand that so well.

Teacher: What about it is hard to understand? What's past is past, and now I'm a puzzle to all beings, and in the future nobody will know where I am. I am omnipotent, and nothing can hinder me. Anything you call me won't be accurate. In the future different beings will see me in the image of their own ethnic group. Everything was created by me, and yet I'm not amidst anything—that's the idea. (Audience laughs, applauds)

Question: Currently diseases that are transmitted from animals to humans such as the bird flu and mad cow disease are appearing all over the world. May I ask revered Master, how is this phenomenon related to the progress of Fa-rectification?

Teacher: Mankind has too much karma. It's because human beings have already slid down into a very dangerous situation in all regards, their karma has gotten greater and greater, and on top of that their attitude about Dafa... much of it was caused by man himself. This doesn't appear to be directly related to the Fa-rectification, but everything revolves around Dafa, and nothing happens by accident. People are being warned through these things.

Question: Why is it that those who engage in spying among the students still aren't awakening? If we expose who they are right in front of them, would that be uncompassionate?

Teacher: Doing that to protect the Fa can't be considered uncompassionate. Why don't you sober them up, then, or you can expose them if you want. It'd be better if we could save them, but if they can't be saved that's their own choice.

Question: Some Dafa disciples have posted some articles on the Internet about Dafa-related miracles, and this has caused some Internet readers to misunderstand Dafa.

Teacher: Discussing things about that topic responsibly isn't a problem. Don't worry about misunderstandings, but don't do things in a weird and incomprehensible way, either. If you validate the Fa magnanimously and rationally, there won't be any problems. Dafa disciples are, after all, cultivators; we aren't some ordinary people's political group in society, we're a group of cultivators, and we cultivate divinity, so of course miracles have indeed happened. *(Applause)*

Question: You've said that if sexual attraction and desire aren't relinquished the person absolutely cannot reach Consummation. Currently there are still many disciples who haven't let go of their sexual attraction and desire. Would you please tell me what the unit of measurement for Consummation is? Is the unit of measurement calculated by particles?

Teacher: Nobody's ever said that—did that come from some wild thinking you had? I've never said anything to you about any relationship between Consummation and some unit of measurement. Dafa disciples: I said long ago that sexual attraction and desire are a fatal roadblock that a cultivator absolutely must overcome. [Those people are] driven by human feelings and emotions way too much. If they can't even pull themselves out of this little thing, then it would seem that back then the old forces should have arranged to put them behind prison walls in Mainland China, as only under those circumstances would they correct the problem, right? I wonder how you'd behave in a brutal environment like that. Are you like this because your life is too comfortable? All those who don't remove that attachment and make excuses for their behavior are fooling themselves and trying to fool others—it's not like I've made any special arrangements for you.

Question: Is it true that we don't need to send righteous thoughts at set times?

Teacher: Didn't the Minghui website announce that all Dafa disciples around the world should send righteous thoughts as a group at certain times? I think that's a pretty good idea, and so why don't you do that, then. When it comes to any other specifics, you can do things according to the different situations in different regions.

Question: Every time I see Master all of my questions vanish without a trace. With Teacher here, with the Fa here, there's nothing that can't be resolved. We should really cherish this period of time.

Teacher: With strong righteous thoughts, everything can in fact be resolved. And with strong righteous thoughts, everything becomes clear. When a person doesn't have clear thinking, that's always when he has attachments that he can't let go. When he feels uneasy inside he doesn't think clearly.

Question: Would you please tell us whether including magic acts in our Dafa disciples' concerts is appropriate in light of our efforts to validate the Fa?

Teacher: I actually don't think there is anything wrong with that. To me, forms of performing arts are forms of performing arts. If it's something that people enjoy and like to watch, and it's not in bad taste, then I think it's fine.

Question: Through its mechanisms, Dafa ensures that the beings in the future won't develop attachments or selfishness even after they go through a very long period of time in the cosmos, and thus the cosmos will be perfect and harmonized and will never perish.

Teacher: No, that's not how it is, it's not the right understanding, and that's not the idea. Dafa is perfect and harmonized, and the fundamental nature of the cosmos is selfless. When a being cultivates and reaches that realm, that's how he'll become, too. The Fa has provided for all beings' existence, the Fa has created for all beings the mechanisms of the cosmos and the rich variety in the cosmos, and the Fa has created all beings, all the myriad things, heaven-and-earths, human beings, and divine beings. But how the beings conduct themselves is to a certain degree their own choice.

Question: Greetings to Master from Dafa disciples in Yichang and Gezhouba of Hubei Province, Three Gorges, Melbourne, Haiban Province, Nongan, Kaian, and Jilin City of Jilin Province, Heze of Shandong Province, Heilongjiang Province, the North Gate area of the Temple of Heaven in Beijing, Sichuan Province, and Ziyang of Chengdu City.

Teacher: Thank you all! (Applause)

Question: You've said in your book that when others treat you badly, they are giving you virtue and you should be happy about that. But if we are happy about it, are we not being compassionate enough?

Teacher: (People laugh) That's not being uncompassionate. Only true cultivators and Dafa disciples are able to remain unmoved when self-interest and feelings are involved. As for the one who strikes giving virtue to the person who is hit, that results from the nature of the cosmos; it's not something you can get just by being happy. When the person who was hit feels no resentment or hatred while experiencing pain and settles what was done to him with a smile, isn't that compassion? From a human perspective, no one would say he's being uncompassionate—when someone hits him, he responds with a smile and feels no resentment. Of course, a cultivator shouldn't smile or laugh the way an ordinary person does after he gains something (people laugh); you should feel quite at ease, and everyone will say you're a good person. When someone does bad things to you, you can advise him to do good so that he doesn't lose virtue, and that is your being compassionate to him. If he doesn't listen and still wants to do evil, then there will be retribution as a result of his evil action. Just like in the case of those vile policemen and bad people in labor camps in China, it is they who want to do evil and refuse to listen when they're urged to stop. In that case there's nothing we can do; they insist on beating people and can't be stopped no matter what. Then after they carry out the beatings, they are going to hell when the time comes. That's not Dafa disciples being uncompassionate.

In each dimension there are the Fa-truths of that dimension. Although truths become higher at higher levels, in any given dimension, if a being can follow the truths in that dimension, then he's a good being in that dimension. When you can transcend those truths, you will have transcended that level of beings. No one is happy about being hit, human beings are unhappy when they suffer—that's how human beings in this dimension are. No ordinary person would say, "No matter who mistreats me, I'll still be happy." Only cultivators are able to do that, and that's being in a higher realm than ordinary people. Being able to maintain your *xinxing* while enduring physical pain, that's a cultivator's compassion. As for others giving us virtue, it's not as if Dafa disciples took it from them, it's not as if those people could give it out if they wanted to, and it's not as if anyone could get it if he just wanted to. It's the mechanism of the cosmos that does that transformation, it's the nature of the cosmos at work. What I've done as your master is to teach the Fa-truths to all beings.

Question: Since pregnant disciples don't have the essence of the human body, how could they cultivate their bodies?

Teacher: Who says pregnant disciples don't have the essence of the human body? Nothing can interfere with Dafa cultivation. Quite the opposite, it's good for the baby.

Question: My husband, [name omitted], was just freed, but he's still in Mainland China. He learned that I was coming to this Fa conference and asked me to tell you that he misses venerable Teacher.

Teacher: Thank you. (Applause) As their master, I won't leave behind a single Dafa disciple in Mainland China, except for those who've gone over to the opposite side and can no longer be saved. (Applause) I'm thinking of all of them.

Question: Recently I've felt that time is going even faster now. Has the time in the Three Realms already been replaced?

Teacher: Yes, time is going very fast. Before the Fa-rectification of the human world reaches this dimension of ordinary people, the time at this human place won't slow down completely.

Question: In the old cosmic system, one wrong thought of a high-level being could cause countless beings to go awry. But in the new cosmos that will never happen. Is that because the mechanism of the new cosmos is more perfect?

Teacher: That's not the right understanding, as that can happen in the new cosmos as well. Why do I say that both the Fa-rectification and [your] cultivation have to meet the standard? No matter whether it's those who've been assimilated or those who've been rectified by the Fa during the Fa-rectification, all of them absolutely must meet the standard. Dafa disciples, if you cultivate to a very high level and will be governing a high-level cosmic body, a single thought of yours will indeed be all-powerful within your own cosmic body. That's for sure. That's why Dafa disciples must cultivate themselves well and become upright by cultivating. Of course, your cultivating yourselves is only part of it. In addition to that, during the Fa-rectification Master is helping you resolve the things of yours that are impure at their most fundamental levels. So, in the future [you] will definitely be very upright.

No matter how long the period of time [you spend] in the human world lasts, even if it's tens of thousands of years, when Unlocking of Gong takes place this will all in fact feel like a dream to you. It will be so vague that it was like a dream, and gradually it will feel like you've forgotten it. You will no longer have the human thought structure or think about mankind with human thoughts, you won't have thoughts like that, and your thought structure will be that of a divine being. I've said before that a Tathagata Buddha knows the thoughts of even cattle and horses, but he would never use their ways of thinking to think about things.

Question: Verses of Master's poems occasionally come up in my mind. Can I say them out loud? If I do that, do I have to recite the entire poem? If I recite only two verses, do I need to add Master's name to note the source?

Teacher: No, that's not necessary when you're just saying them out loud. If you put them down in written form or make an audio or video recording of them, then it's different. A lot of the poems I've written are actually related to Dafa cultivation, and thus they too are part of the Fa. So they can't be used at will by someone else as his own things. When you mention them to others or quote them in articles, just bear that in mind.

Question: Russian and all Russian-speaking Dafa disciples around the world, Dafa disciples in Vancouver of Canada, Yujiaweier, Taiwan, Korea, Japan, Nanjing City of Jiangsu Province, Texas of the U.S., Shanghai, young disciples in Vancouver of Canada, Anshan of Liaoning Province, and

Chaoyang of Liaoning Province send greetings to Master.

Teacher: Thank you all! (*Applause*)

Question: Dafa disciples who have technical expertise, especially those who are eminent among ordinary people, are really jealous of each other and have big egos. Master, please offer some guidance on this.

Teacher: It's not that serious, is it? But I won't rule out unremoved attachments manifesting. If you haven't cultivated yourself well and have those kinds of attachments, you need to get rid of them. Don't be conceited no matter what special skills you have. Do you know that the only one who can fully explain the whole cosmos and all of mankind is me, Li Hongzhi? No other being can possibly do that. (*Applause*) But I have never put on airs before you. So Dafa disciples, you must not get bigheaded if you've acquired some little human skills. They're nothing to get bigheaded about. The fact is, you've learned what you've learned because you had that wish and accordingly arrangements were made for you back in the past since it would be needed in validating the Fa, that's all.

Question: I feel as though right now time passes quickly every day and there are a lot of things I haven't been able to do well in a timely manner. In a sharing on Minghui, a student said that when he's in a very good state he is able to do something well in a short period of time. Could Master please talk about the issue of time?

Teacher: This is actually still what I think: it's all right for our Dafa disciples to have human attachments, but how you manage to establish your own righteous thoughts is what's key. If your righteous thoughts are strong and you're like a cultivator at every moment—or, instead of saying “every moment,” let's say when you come across certain things you can act as a Dafa disciple does—then you'll know how to handle things, you will produce miracles, you will demonstrate extraordinariness, you will be able to tell right from wrong, and you will be able to do everything well. (*Applause*) You're cultivators, after all. You are different from ordinary people. Even though you're all cultivating in delusion and it's hard to have many of Dafa disciples' things manifest, it's actually not as if you don't know anything. If your righteous thoughts are strong supernatural things do manifest.

Question: I brought with me some friends and children. Even though they're seeing you they don't understand what you're saying. Are their master souls listening? Can they return to their homes?

Teacher: You need to know that I'm teaching the Fa to Dafa disciples. (*Master smiles/chuckles*) If an ordinary person comes today he won't know what I'm talking about, and for kids it's even harder. But human beings all have a side of them that's aware; that side will know and will benefit from it. But don't focus too much on these things. In the case of a person who can't be saved, it's useless even though that other side of him is aware.

Question: When it comes to the materials being used to clarify the truth to people in China on a large scale, some students believe that “cultivation is what you handle, gong is what the master handles,” so the selection of content is not that important.

Teacher: Then they've gone to another extreme. In validating the Fa you need to do things rationally. How you make the selections and do things better, that's your validating the Fa and that's your blazing your own path righteously. If everything were done by me, you would've turned into a typewriter, then why would I have you be Dafa disciples? You might as well reincarnate as a typewriter, right? (*People laugh*)

Question: Would you please tell us whether the people who will obtain the Fa and cultivate in the future include Dafa disciples who haven't done well enough during the Fa-rectification period?

Teacher: No, they won't be included. I can give you a definite answer on this. For this batch, this group—this is it.

Question: Now disciples are very busy with their Dafa work. Is it necessary to have disciples take time to write ordinary people's articles for use by a newspaper Dafa disciples run? Or should we try our best to use articles that have already been written by ordinary people?

Teacher: I think that depends on your needs. However you handle it is fine. Don't think that writing ordinary people's articles is not saving beings. You have a share in the saving of beings that results from everybody's collective efforts with that media outlet, even though what you wrote were ordinary people's articles. (*Applause*) Of course, you won't be writing ordinary people's articles all the time, you'll do some other things that a Dafa disciple should do, right?

Question: Dafa disciples in both northern and southern California give their regards to Master. Esteemed Master, some veteran students pursue supernormal abilities, energy, etc., and like to show off. And one person fell asleep when he was doing the exercises and sending righteous thoughts, yet when we brought it to his attention with good intentions, he got angry. We don't know what to do about him.

Teacher: If he gets angry, so be it. If he gets angry it means there's a problem in his cultivation. Why should he be angry when he's done something wrong? Even if he's going to get angry, you still have to let him know about it with the intention of being responsible to him, in which case, just don't worry about him getting angry. (*Applause*)

What's the point of showing off supernormal abilities to Dafa disciples? What's there to show off? Why don't you show them off to the wicked dark minions? Wouldn't that be better? Haven't all of your abilities actually been given to you because you cultivate Dafa? Don't go showing things off to other students, and don't feel smug and think you're so able—what can those little abilities of yours do, anyway? Don't make Master reprimand you over these things again—you should at least have some self-respect. You've been driven by attachments so much that you're not seeing straight anymore. Other than those few people who listen to you out of attachment when you show off, do you realize how other students view you?

As soon as you show those things off they become nothing. Don't be attached to those things, and even less should you spread, with human attachments, among our students what you've seen. In fact, it's not that those things can't be discussed among cultivators, and it's not that you can't have supernormal abilities. What's key is the intent behind the act. If it's used in a positive way it will benefit Dafa disciples; if it's to show off, you will be interfering with them.

Today Dafa disciples are consummating their incomparably high honors and glory as well as Attainment Status as they validate the Fa. Nothing can get in the way—whoever gets in the way is committing a sin, and it's absolutely prohibited. If you refuse to listen to others the first or second time it happens, and you carry on for a long time, then you must be doing that because the old forces want to push you over to the other side—*that* will be the kind of role you're playing. If you really reach that point, you will be considered beyond redemption. I don't acknowledge the old forces' arrangements. Master is rescuing and saving you and giving you second chances. Don't continue to be like that time and time again. If your divine powers truly manifest in a magnificent way as you clarify the facts, save beings, and defy the persecution, then all the Dafa disciples and I will praise you. Isn't that so?

The cosmic body is so immense that it's beyond description. There are a lot of things that I don't tell you. What you know is so trivial. When a very high-level divine being sees the broadness and the enormity of a larger cosmic body he is shocked and dumbfounded; you know, even a divine being will be like that. So when a human being learns a little bit about a larger dimension, of course he gets stirred

up by it. But Dafa disciples must be rational.

Question: The media outlets run by Dafa disciples are powerful and influential overseas. At this, the final stage of the Fa-rectification, should these media outlets be entering Mainland China on a large scale via our existing truth-clarification channels, such as the Internet, postal mail, etc.? Also, should we consider the levels at which the Chinese people can understand and accept things? I ask because the people in Mainland China are different from those overseas. They've been badly poisoned by the lies.

Teacher: I'd say that the things we're doing right now are being done in a rational way, for the most part. Whether it be people who live in Mainland China or Chinese people outside the Mainland, they can both understand it. I think the way the media outlets are being run is fine. In terms of how they report on things and the articles they've written to clarify the truth, the people in Mainland China are fully able to understand and accept them.

Right now it's still not feasible to fully target Mainland China. In the future the newspaper run by Dafa disciples will be the biggest newspaper in the entire world, (*applause*) because all those media that have made up lies have committed sins, and those people will have to pay for that, as will those media of theirs.

[Well, it looks like] I still answered all of your questions. (*Applause*) Human society has gone through a process 100 million years long. And all beings have come for the Fa—all beings in the Three Realms came for the Fa, were created for the Fa, and were formed for the Fa. That includes all the myriad things. And everything in the human world has been revolving around Dafa, whether ordinary people sense it or not; whether you think they're aware of it or not, everything is revolving around Dafa. That includes all the people in the world today, regardless of whether they seem indifferent toward the persecution or concerned about it—they all revolve around Dafa. The Fa-rectification requires that some people be in a certain state where they are sealed off and kept there so that the next batch of people will be able to cultivate. In other words, even though everything appears to be disorderly, it is in fact orderly, and everything is closely linked to the Fa-rectification.

Everything we're doing is magnificent. Everything Dafa disciples are doing is saving beings. And everything Dafa disciples are doing is simply unprecedented. It is magnificent because it's of Dafa, it's magnificent because Dafa is establishing this batch of cultivators, and also because Dafa is being spread in the Three Realms and in the human world and yet this tiny Earth is in fact having an impact on colossal cosmic bodies. Things appear to be ordinary, and they don't look much different from ordinary people's things, but the mighty virtue corresponds to the highest cosmic body.

Dafa disciples have already gone through such a difficult time. I hope that all of you will walk the last leg of your journey well and treasure the journey you've already completed. Everything of your future is shown in how you validate the Fa. (*About one minute of applause*)

Li Hongzhi

February 28, 2004 in Los Angeles

Teaching the Fa on Easter, 2004, at the New York Fa Conference

Hello! (*Audience: Hello Master! Applause*)

We have a grand occasion here. (*Applause*) A lot of people have come to this Fa conference, about four thousand it seems. (*Master laughs*) Looking at the current situation, I'd say that when it comes to the Fa-rectification's overall state, Dafa disciples have done extremely well in the Three Realms, and they've played a crucial role. Master thanks you all for this. (*Warm applause*)

Over these few years we have been under severe persecution. The Fa-rectification is by nature a serious thing that affects all living things. The cosmic body is infinitely large, and the number of beings is measureless—so many they're countless. Even on a tiny particle there are measureless, countless beings. Then how many beings does such an enormous cosmic body have? Fa-rectification impacts something that huge, and yet the old forces, along with some low-level beings they're using, and whatnot, are interfering with Fa-rectification, attached as they are to their wants, and are using every conceivable means to try to steer the Fa-rectification. The sin is huge. It's actually clear to me that, in essence, the old forces and those final, final old beings want to use this Fa-rectification to eliminate and weed out the beings they don't want kept, and that's why they make some beings interfere with Fa-rectification. Even a little disruption or bit of disrespect towards Dafa by the old forces or a being who isn't able to see Dafa the right way—and not one of them is outside of this—will mean they can't remain. Ultimately those high-level old factors want to dispose of those numerous beings that they don't want, and that's why they let loose and directed a huge number of beings to do things that interfere with Fa-rectification. On a fundamental level they know that no being at any level can harm the Fa-rectification. While I'm controlling the fundamental things, those final beings in their respective realms are overseeing the safety of this affair out of self-protection, and the number of beings they want to weed out is downright huge.

Very early on in the Fa-rectification I realized something: Whenever I want to clear away any group of beings at any level, there's not much to say or do—one thought disintegrates everything, and it's extremely quick. However, in the Fa-rectification, keeping certain beings, that's just extremely hard to do, with challenges piled atop one another; beings that have interfered with the Fa-rectification aren't qualified to stay now, having interfered with Fa-rectification as they did. So in the Fa-rectification, once a being gets involved and has the effect of interfering, which I don't accept, it's in dire peril. I'm talking in essential terms here. In this process, in all realms, and at all levels, the beings that affect the Fa-rectification all act in their own specific ways, and they are different in their levels and realms; and being in the realms they are in, they have different understandings of Fa-rectification. That's because the chaos resulting from the different understandings of the Fa-rectification at the vast number of levels, and held by the vast number of beings, has fully reflected the actions of the multitude of degenerate beings in the final stage of the old Fa's law of formation-stasis-degeneration-destruction.

So what does “a measureless number of beings” mean? Think about this: Even with any ethnic group or country on this tiny Earth, whenever something happens there are going to be plenty of people who are for it and plenty against it, and people will have all sorts of takes on it. Then with the cosmos—such a gigantic cosmic body—and Fa-rectification—such a major thing—and when the situation is that beings don't realize what danger the great firmament is in or the peril all beings face, and when it's that Fa-rectification involves the vital interests of all beings, you can imagine how beings will react differently and how complicated it all is. A lot of students have been thinking, “So with validating the Fa, if I could see what happens in other dimensions I could do better.” But the fact is, in a few cases where people have their Third Eye open and can see those things, they're actually more apt to get interfered with. For a few people their attachments caused what they saw to interfere with their cultivation and validating the Fa. That's why I think that during this period, the best way to go is to

ensure a great deal of Fa-study. If each Dafa disciple can evaluate everything with the Fa, you'll go about things in an even more upright way, and then our students won't be prone to problems, whether they can see [other dimensions] or not. That's because with the Fa here, you can just go by the Fa's requirements. No matter what states other beings are in, none of their various, ever-changing, complex manifestations can interfere with a Dafa disciple.

So looking at the current situation, the whole mighty current of Fa-rectification is getting closer and closer to the outermost surface, and closer and closer to what is highest, final, largest, and most central. I've said that many prophecies aren't accurate in their depiction of the final times; they were plenty accurate about the course of things along the way, but they're off the mark toward the end. The reason is, even though our cosmic system is immense beyond compare, the concept of the multitude of cosmic bodies along with the incalculable number of beings that I've talked about, they're all within this system. And this persecution that the old-being-formed forces arranged to "test" Dafa disciples, along with the specific reasons that the old forces came about, the Fa-rectification itself, the beings to be saved, and so on, they're all within this [system's] scope. But this enormous cosmos of ours, no matter how big it is, it's not the only thing there is in the cosmos; there are factors beyond this cosmos, and those factors all have to do with the fundamental issue of whether or not the cosmos can exist. Those factors are even more microcosmic, and all of the changes [that have unfolded] have been caused by those enormous factors being affected in the Fa-rectification.

In other words, it's a question of whether this cosmos can exist independently after I'm done with Fa-rectification. To give an analogy, if you hold a ball in mid-air, once you let go it will fall, and once you let go of a balloon it will fly away. These analogies aren't all that accurate, it's just to give you the idea; in fact it's not quite like that. The factors beyond the cosmos needed to be worked on too, but whatever the case, working on those things during the Fa-rectification is no longer an issue. Those factors are not within the range of the gigantic cosmic body of this cosmic system of ours. Everything that was to be done during the Fa-rectification as well as the old forces' arrangements, and this includes how all the beings would act, are within this range. The issues beyond this range no longer exist. But their existence caused a separation in the microcosm, and that separation is keeping the final, surfacemost human world separated. Right now the Fa-rectification is already in the process of resolving these problems. After the problems are resolved, then basically everything is resolved. In the last Fa lecture I said that actually this cosmos has already been completed, and that's what I meant.

Even though more than four years have gone by, the persecution hasn't ended, and that's because the final reasons have yet to be completely resolved. But the overall situation has undergone tremendous changes. As you've seen, the evil factors have become very, very few, and the dark minions that I asked you to clear away, those bad gods that made their way into the Three Realms, they too have been cleared away to the point that only a few are left. And along with this, outside of the Three Realms some high-level beings that have played a negative role are in the process of being cleared away. So as things now stand, because the forces that affect the Fa-rectification have been shrinking, and all of the disruptive factors in the Three Realms have been greatly reduced, the people in this world are becoming ever more awake. And it's not just the people in this world—all beings in the Three Realms are waking up and thinking things over for themselves. There are still some people whose heads are somewhat foggy due to the evil's propaganda, but when you do a good job explaining things as you clarify the truth, people will immediately get it since there is no more evil's control at work.

In the process of clarifying the truth, Dafa disciples are indeed playing an important role, and they've done a great job. Your circumstances are quite tough; even other people know that Falun Gong has no money. Some Dafa disciples are in straitened circumstances. But in this situation, you still need to consider the image you project in society and to everyday people, because a Dafa disciple needs to be a

good person wherever he is, right? So out in ordinary society, at work, in the family, or in whatever interactions it may be, you should leave people with a positive image of Dafa disciples. Your resources are limited, and that's why it is so trying and hard to do. But even so, we still need to make our Fa-rectification path a straight and upright one and we cannot go astray. If we're to make it a straight one, then, well, you know, there's only one path that is straight, and just one step off the path means going amiss. We cannot go astray, and this means our path is none too wide or easy to walk, it seems. You can't do as you please or do whatever you want—if that were the case, the Fa wouldn't be righteous. You need to make your path of validating the Fa a straight and upright one. Every single step, every single thing, including a Dafa disciple's words and actions, and your conduct in every respect out in society must be upright. As far as this goes, Dafa disciples as a whole have basically managed to do that, and the image of Dafa disciples that's been presented to the world's people is a good one. Now the members of society are quite clear on this and they know that Dafa disciples are all good people, and not just good people but the best bunch of people. The fact that the people in this world can recognize this is the result of our Dafa disciples' great sacrifices and laborious efforts validating the Fa; it's only with these that the world's people have come to recognize it. There's such a vast number of beings, there are more than 7 billion people in this world, and relative to the entire world, Dafa disciples are but a drop in the ocean. So how much sacrifice did you have to make to achieve this? How much effort did you have to expend? Extraordinary, just extraordinary! (*Applause*)

Because the world's people have woken up, right now this persecution that the evil created is getting harder and harder to sustain. Around the globe the evil beings are losing the environment they need to do evil, and in China too they are losing the environment they need. You've seen and heard about this, and in doing work to clarify the truth you have come to know this full well. Right now in Mainland China a lot of people are extremely annoyed by this persecution. Of course, there *are* some people who don't know the truth yet, and in this situation those beings are waiting for our Dafa disciples to further bring the Good News and the truth of the situation. But there are always going to be some people who just aren't up to par. If everyone were up to par then there wouldn't be a Fa-rectification. If all of the beings in the cosmos were up to par, then there really wouldn't have been any validating of the Fa. It's exactly because they aren't up to par that they really do exhibit the state and behavior of the beings of the past cosmos during the last stage of formation-stasis-degeneration-destruction.

Because the Fa-rectification hasn't ended yet, even though people are waking up to the persecution of Dafa disciples, the morality of the world's people is still declining fast, and that's extremely scary. The longer the end time drags out, when it comes to saving the beings of the future... That doesn't pose a challenge for me, and even if you've fallen down into Hell I could still do it, but whether it'd still be worth doing and whether it could still be done, that would be a question. While Dafa disciples clarify the truth, when they allow the world's people to see the truth, that has the dual effect of stopping man's moral decline, to some extent.

Of course, Dafa disciples and I don't acknowledge anything that has to do with the old forces. Dafa has forged the Dafa disciples, and Dafa disciples will definitely safeguard the Fa as they cultivate. But, the ability of Dafa disciples to validate the Fa isn't for the purpose of enduring this persecution, and even less is it for clarifying the truth among the world's people. I only asked Dafa disciples to clarify the truth because persecution has taken place and has caused this situation. To put it more clearly, Dafa disciples don't exist in order to clarify the truth; we do that because the old forces caused this persecution and we were left with no choice. We are making use of this persecution while we defy it, and we are establishing even greater mighty virtue for Dafa disciples as we clarify the truth. What Dafa disciples have given absolutely will not be in vain.

As you know, there is a law that's part of both the old cosmos's Laws and the new cosmos's Laws: No

matter what kind of hardship a being endures or what blessing he receives in any dimension of the cosmos or in any environment, there will be payback—either a reward for good or retribution for evil, and that’s for sure, absolutely. Then since Dafa disciples have done so much for the beings, none of their enormous sacrifices while being wrongly persecuted were endured in vain, that’s certain. So what awaits Dafa disciples in the future is sure to be most, most wonderful. (*Applause*) No matter how many beings there are doing evil, the suffering and persecution they have imposed on Dafa disciples—no matter what the motive or what the means—will bring those beings the most severe and most terrifying consequences, and that’s for the persecuting they did. This kind of payback is the retribution they get for committing the greatest sin—interfering with the Fa-rectification—and what’s in store for them are the most horrible things. With Dafa disciples, on the other hand, even though they’ve endured all kinds of interference and persecution, what Dafa disciples have gained from it is a most distinguished, most magnificent, and highest mighty virtue that will last forever and ever. (*Applause*)

The journey of Fa-rectification won’t go on for long, it won’t always be like this. So those Dafa disciples who, during this period of time, have made it through, have managed to do very well, and have managed to walk their own paths well despite all kinds of things interfering, they have all established their own mighty virtue. Each of the true Dafa disciples has done what he should do, and has established all that is best for a being in the future. With that much achieved, I can now rest assured, and I no longer worry about whether you can make it through. (*Applause*) What’s transpired is proof that you have made it through. In the future, when you look back, [you’ll see that] this path was brilliant and promising, magnificent, and something that’s never existed—even since the beginning of time. You can talk about how such-and-such number of the cosmos’s gods came down to the world before to save people and established such-and-such mighty virtue, but I’ll tell you, my true Dafa disciples: Your future mighty virtue will surpass that of any god who came to this world before at any point in history, (*applause*) for you today are part of Fa-rectification. You need to treasure it—you have to treasure the path you’ve walked. Only when you treasure the steps you’ve taken can you do well on the path ahead. Not much of the journey is left. Do even better on your path and do things even more righteously.

During this persecution every Dafa disciple has become clearheaded and rational. Back when I’d just started to impart the Fa, as I looked at the people in the audience, I was thinking about something. At the time, those people’s heads had few righteous thoughts in them, and it was even rare for them to have their true, own thoughts. Human beings are influenced by all kinds of ideas out in society, and with their postnatal concepts they form fixed ideas about various things in the human world. And what’s more, some outside factors control and interfere with people. That’s the kind of beings I faced back then. At that time when many students said “Dafa is great,” they weren’t sincere, and some people had some doubts about the huge changes their bodies were going through. As I looked at those beings, I would think to myself, “Can they do it? Will they be able to come out of that state they’re in?” And then there were factors in their cultivation path that would bring interference to their cultivation and my Fa-rectification. How hard that was! Back then I thought about this all the time. But now I’m not worried about those things anymore. Those Dafa disciples who have made it through the persecution, I’ll tell you, they’ve become more and more coolheaded and more and more aware of what they’re doing, their righteous thoughts are getting ever stronger, and their awareness is increasingly clear. Not only have I stopped worrying about those things, I’m even happy to see the state you’re in. (*Enthusiastic applause*) These beings have truly become aware, and their lives are now in the hands of their own righteous thoughts. On top of that, they’re beings that are cultivating themselves in the Fa-rectification and who are clear about the paths they want to take and clear about the goal and meaning of their existence. How extraordinary. So looking at the present situation, I don’t worry about anything now, and I know that the further we go the better you will do. In validating the Fa, you are the ones

who've come up with many of the ideas, and you've resolved many a problem yourselves. And with validating the Fa, you are thinking about how to do well validating the Fa, this most magnificent task, and Dafa disciples the world over are thinking about their shared tasks. You're all cooperating together, discussing, and debating and analyzing things with each other to come up with the best approaches. Whatever the case, this is Dafa disciples' unique way of cultivating, and it's something history has never had before. (*Applause*)

Today is Easter, the day of a god's resurrection! (*Enthusiastic applause*) This is all I'll say today. On this special, glorious day, may Dafa disciples' divine sides also be resurrected! (*Long period of enthusiastic applause*)

Li Hongzhi

April 11, 2004

Be Clearheaded

If you, as a student [of Dafa], do not follow Master's requirements, it is definitely no simple thing. The old forces have arranged for all Dafa disciples a set of their things, so if a Dafa disciple doesn't follow Master's requirements, he must be following the old forces' arrangements. The old forces are in essence gigantic trials and tribulations that accompany you at all times, focused on whether in Fa-rectification Dafa disciples are able to step forward.

If after going through this ordeal some students are still not clearheaded, then they will miss [the opportunities presented in] all of this. Only when you follow Master's requirements are you validating the Fa and cultivating yourself as a Dafa disciple, and only then are you a true Dafa disciple.

Li Hongzhi

May 8, 2004

Comment on a student's article

Teaching the Fa at the Meeting with Asia-Pacific Students

Question: Some coordinators aren't able to listen to different opinions. They've become like the bureaucrats found among everyday people.

Teacher: Coordinators have to be willing and able to listen to different opinions. But if you think about the coordinators, they're cultivators too and they're not perfect. Some students wonder, "Why don't we pick whoever is smartest and who's cultivated best in our area to be the coordinator?" (*Audience laughs*) It doesn't work that way. And why don't I come out and do things directly myself? I want to leave *you* with the opportunity of Consummating and forging mighty-virtue. If I were to do everything, or to tell you how to handle each specific thing and you just followed my direction, sure the coordination would be good, since [you'd think,] "That's what Master told us. There are no if's, and's, or but's about it. Let's just follow Master." But would you have any mighty-virtue then? What would you have forged? Would you have walked your own path in the face of challenges or hardship? Only when you find ways to do things well as you validate the Fa and meet with challenges, and when your success comes from your own efforts—only *that* is extraordinary.

The coordinators among Dafa disciples are in fact just coordinators, points of contact, and people who relay information. Don't think of them as Master, and don't have such high expectations that you rely on them as you cultivate and expect them to handle everything just right. It's not like that. If the coordinator were really like Master, or able to consider things from all angles and never be wrong, then a lot of people in that area couldn't cultivate successfully, since with him thinking things through so well there'd be nothing left for you to think about. If he were to do everything just right you wouldn't have a chance to show your great qualities. You see the idea, right?

Actually, long ago I told the regional coordinators to manage things loosely, and that, except when it comes to group efforts, which need coordination, they shouldn't restrict the path that each Dafa disciple takes as an individual who's validating the Fa. So other than when it's a case of something bad for Dafa and the coordinator needs to put a stop to it, each Dafa disciple has to fully play his role and proactively do what he should as a Dafa disciple. As you go about validating the Fa, whatever you think of, see, encounter, or can recognize, go ahead and do it, and only then are you walking your own path and forging your own mighty-virtue. Isn't that how it works? (*Applause*)

With some students, I'm finding that they're still fixated on the coordinators, thinking, "How come this coordinator just isn't up to par?" (*Master laughs*) If the coordinator were indeed really good and could think of everything ahead of time, then I think the other students in that region would really have no way to put their skills and abilities to work. If a certain region is doing well, then it's definitely something like this: the coordinators just say that something needs to be done, and Dafa disciples, of their own initiative, coordinate with each other and overcome the challenges together, fully utilizing Dafa disciples' wisdom, to get it done well and in a more ideal way. Even when the coordinators don't think things through too well or have even overlooked some things, the Dafa disciples will perfect it along the way—and *that* is your mighty-virtue. Don't get resentful when things are tough, and don't think that you need to have people see what you're doing. Master can see everything you do, and so can all gods. When you have done well that's your own, eternal mighty-virtue.

In your cultivation you can't always look at others. You need to look at yourselves, and cultivate yourselves. When there's a problem, examine yourself and try to find the problem on your part. When you see that something is lacking, figure out how *you* can do each thing well, keep your thinking right along the way, and manifest the righteous thoughts and righteous actions of a Dafa disciple when faced with challenges—now *that* is extraordinary. And as a Dafa disciple, *that* is your validating the Fa with

righteous thoughts, and only then are you truly worthy of being a Dafa disciple.

Question: Some countries in the Asia-Pacific region have close ties with the evil, and the disparity in how we've done saving sentient beings is huge.

Teacher: Just do however much you can, and do things that are within your ability and where conditions are ripe. You can hold off in areas where the evil is rampant—that's okay and not our students' fault. Of course, wherever there are no Dafa disciples there will be problems saving lives in the future; since you're Dafa disciples you will think of this. Do things according to the situation, do however much you can, and when it comes to the things you can't do, we'll see what we can do later on.

Question: When we don't have any [preconceived] notions or preset plans, the effect of validating the Fa is excellent, and when the opposite is true the effect is poor.

Teacher: Yes, with a lot of things you do, when you are free of human notions your own attachments won't get mixed in. If, beyond being responsible to the Fa, you have no human attachments, none of your own things, and none of your personal factors mixed in, then you are sure to do that thing well. Whereas once you've mixed in your own factors, then you can't do that thing well.

There's something you must pay attention to: you are validating the Fa, not validating yourselves. A Dafa disciple's responsibility is to validate the Fa. Validating the Fa is cultivation, and what you remove in the cultivation process is none other than the attachment to self; you can't, instead, go and exacerbate the problem of validating oneself, even if you do it unwittingly. When you're validating the Fa and cultivating, that is a process of removing self, and only when you do that are you really validating yourself. That's because ultimately you have to let go of all your human things, and only after you've let go of all your human attachments can you step out from the throngs of everyday people.

You are a cultivator, so you need to have mighty-virtue. And where does your mighty-virtue come from? Doesn't it come from letting go of self and being selfless in this grueling environment, and being completely responsible to the Fa as a Dafa disciple? Isn't that, itself, mighty-virtue? And what's more, you did it in a grueling environment. The more you put *you* first or mix in [factors of] self, the less mighty-virtue you have, and that's why it is less likely that you succeed at things or do them well. Dafa's things should be the most sacred, and that's why the less you have of your own notions and involve your own factors, the better you can handle them and the more likely you are to succeed.

Question: Can we include photos of Master going through the exercises in the big poster boards we use to display the truth about Dafa?

Teacher: I don't think it's a problem if it's meant to clarify the truth—and haven't you done that already? (*Audience laughs*)

Question: (Teacher: I won't read out loud all of the courteous words before the questions, okay?) The television media outlet that was created by Dafa disciples needs manpower, material resources, and money to operate for the long haul. And fellow cultivators at the TV station often say to me, since I'm a Taiwanese disciple, "There are 300 to 500 thousand people in Taiwan cultivating Dafa, so when the TV station needs help we shouldn't always have a hard time finding people." Master, could Taiwan focus more on the medium of television to clarify the truth?

Teacher: Those who know the technology or have the special skills, whether they're from Taiwan or elsewhere, they are usually welcome, for sure.

Question: When the progress of a translation gets bogged down, is it due to interference?

Teacher: Usually the specific things Dafa disciples do are related to their own cultivation, and are, at the same time, related to their circumstances. With specific things like this you still need to discuss together and figure out how to handle them better and walk your own paths. None of the foreign-language Dafa books were translated by me (*Master laughs, audience laughs*), and every Dafa disciple who is involved shoulders different responsibilities. The translation work isn't assigned by somebody. It's all done by people actively discussing [to arrive at their best translation] and coordinating with each other. So just figure out how to do it better. In everything you do, you are validating the Fa and cultivating yourselves, and those are all things you should do.

Question: Should we be selective about admitting students to a Minghui school? (Audience laughs) Master, please give us some guidance on this.

Teacher: What I think is, you are running a school now, so you shouldn't be selective about admission. Actually, you know, Dafa is about cultivation only—Dafa has nothing but cultivation. And even though today the path of cultivation Dafa disciples take is different—in order to clarify the truth, to save more of the world's people, to keep the persecution in check, and so on, some students have gotten together and started up media outlets or done this or that—none of that is part of Dafa itself. Those are cases of students walking their own paths validating the Fa, and those are things created by the students themselves. So that too forges *your* mighty-virtue, and it's remarkable.

Since it's not part of Dafa, then it must be part of ordinary society, and so it should align with ordinary society. Who you're saving are the lives in ordinary society, so all the more so you need to come closer to ordinary society and have your media outlets become something the general public loves to see and hear. Only that way can you achieve a better effect.

The same is true for Minghui schools. Dafa itself doesn't have schools, but Dafa disciples are saving sentient beings and clarifying the truth, are leaving behind the best things for the people of the future, the beings of the future, and they are nurturing new, young Dafa disciples. So what it comes down to is, what you are doing are all good things. Then since you are doing good things for sentient beings, you can't make distinctions between who can enter and who can't. Wouldn't it be better to admit more people from ordinary society? Put differently, if you want to move toward having a positive cycle—it's draining to always have Dafa disciples fund it—then you have to be rooted in society and get into a positive cycle. That's the way to go.

Question: Can we set up a Minghui class within the educational system and at an existing school?

Teacher: Just do it according to your circumstances and however you do it should be fine. There are no restrictions or set schemes when it comes to doing good things for sentient beings. Whether it be you setting up a Minghui school or holding Minghui classes yourself, or maybe you're a teacher and you teach the students according to Zhen-Shan-Ren in class, there's no problem with any of that. And of course, setting up a Minghui school is just a great thing. Now that they've been set up, I hope you will run them better and better, make them bigger and bigger, and set up more and more of them. They are, for all beings, a blessing, and for the evil beings, it clears them away.

Question: There are often people who come to learn Falun Gong in order to apply for asylum. How should we handle these things?

Teacher: (*Teacher laughs*) Actually, that's really a disgrace for the Chinese government. How come it's not people from other countries applying for asylum? (*Audience laughs*) Why are so many people from China applying for asylum? Isn't China claiming to be "strong"? Ever heard of a strong nation having so many people flee it to become asylees? Sounds like that "strong" bit is bogus.

Looking at it another way, all motives aside, if people want a chance to remain in the United States or

in another developed country, the easiest way right now is to apply for asylum using the name of Falun Gong. I've heard there are seminars in New York City's Chinatown on applying for asylum, and (audience laughs) they specifically teach in there how to learn Falun Gong. Of course, they're not really teaching people Falun Gong. They're telling people how many movements there are, how many exercises, and what books there are in Falun Gong, along with what the immigration officer will ask in his test (audience laughs). That's what they are doing.

Anyway, once somebody applies for asylum in the name of Falun Gong, he has given his future to Falun Gong. That's because he is changing his fate using Falun Gong's name—whether he's aware of it or not. That's putting it in ordinary human terms. The truth is, everyone came here for Dafa, and if the whole world came for Dafa, then of course it's no big deal if they benefit a little from Dafa. So go ahead, then. (*Teacher laughs*) As long as the local government doesn't object, we won't either.

However, when somebody has gained political asylum using Falun Gong's name, he is indebted to Falun Gong since it changed his fate. Then that person absolutely cannot be against Falun Gong, or he'll be severing his future. There is nothing more dangerous. So with people like him, it's fine if they come to learn the practice or do the exercises, but along the way you should tell them about what's at stake: "Make sure you don't get involved in persecuting Falun Gong, don't even think about doing that. This is for your own good. I'm telling you this only because you want to use Falun Gong; otherwise I wouldn't say anything."

Question: I, a disciple, would like to write in the form of poetry to assist Master in Fa-rectification. I'd like to ask Master, how can I improve my creativity and writing skills?

Teacher: Actually, I know that what you want to ask is how you can enrich your wisdom to good effect validating the Fa. If you have the foundation that's needed, you will be able to compose good pieces, for sure, whereas if you're completely lacking one you'll have a certain amount of trouble at first. For example, if you want to write Tang-style poems then you need to first learn about things like what Tang poetry is like, [or similarly,] what Song verse is like or what Yuan drama and verse are like, and then you can try to compose something. Since you're a Dafa disciple, perhaps when you really want to do that, you will be able to, and well, and you will definitely start off more quickly and mature faster than others, for sure. There are several Dafa disciples who write poetry very fast and without much effort; when they want to compose something they can just compose it right away. With ordinary people, though, it's a big strain for them to compose something, and they have to get in the right mood and think of some approach or other. But with Dafa disciples things should go quickly, whatever it may be. When you let go of self even more, your wisdom for validating the Fa will naturally come forth.

Question: Recently you mentioned that certain words in your writings need to be revised. Can we directly paste the correct words over the old ones, instead of scratching the old ones off?

Teacher: Actually it's fine however you do it, as long as you correct them. The students in Mainland China don't have the means to do this. I know that in the past, most of the books printed in Mainland China used newsprint, and it was pretty thick, so it won't be damaged if you scratch it lightly with a thin blade. I'm just giving you an idea. You don't *have to* do it that way. (*Audience laughs*)

Question: Out of economic interests, some Asian governments pretend they don't see the persecution that's happening in China. Should we put more effort into helping them see the truth about China's economy?

Teacher: You can do anything as long as it benefits sentient beings. People think about things differently, and they have different norms they live by. Some people might not consider material gain that important, and you will get good results after they learn the facts. But I know human beings tend to

be tempted by material interests.

So let me talk a little about the people in this world. Material interests are necessarily the driving force for lives of the past, who are selfish. The world's people just live for and are driven by self-interest. And more than anything self-interest can make a person agonize or feel happy, but even if somebody fulfills his desires, what he gains isn't something everlasting for him, or something concrete and real. Besides, no matter how hard human beings fight for such things, it's not truly in their hands, since a person's whole life in this world was determined far in advance, and gods control every step a human being takes. No matter what a person wants, that doesn't count, though a person's pursuits can become attachments. The world's people invariably do things out of self-interest, even though they can't really achieve what they want. That's how human beings are. Regardless of whether human beings can obtain something, they will act on it, and that's human behavior. And it wouldn't work if they just sat there and waited for good things to drop in their laps—human beings have to do things. When it's something that belongs to a person, he has to work to get it; and when it's something that doesn't belong to him, out of attachments he'll labor to get it just the same. That's how human beings are. The truth is, beyond being attached, while human beings live in this world they are never able to take their fate into their own hands. There's no way they can get whatever they want. For a person to get something, it has to be something that's preordained as part of his life; if it's not preordained for him he will never have it. I've said before that two things can change a human being's life. One is cultivation, and the other is for that being to start declining. Those things can change a person's life. Besides them there's no other way for a person to change his life.

So then for a human being what's the meaning of life? It's to experience the feeling you get from being attached to self-interest and enjoying the course of a human life soaked in emotion. Think about how pitiful that is, and what kind of feeling that really is. They're happy when they get something and miserable when they lose it; when they eat meat they find it tasty, and when they eat candy they find it sweet... but in the human world there's also bitter, biting, and painful things, there are the feelings young people have which come from emotional attachments, and then there are the feelings people in different social strata have as they chase after, gain, or lose things over the course of their lives—even though those gains and losses aren't something that really come from effort. That's how people are when they live in this world. People are so pitiable! And yet people just can't see through this so-called "reality," nor do they want to.

Now for gods, if they're going to make all those feelings human beings have in this world intense, there have to be some factors involved. For example, they created emotions and feelings for human beings; they gave them a pair of eyes that can't see the true picture of the cosmos, and the illusion of material things; and of course there are a lot of other factors. Only then could they make people attached to enjoying these feelings, feelings that gods give man alone, and intensify such feelings. So to have people experience such intense feelings, it was also necessary to make people desire that feeling one has when he gets what he wants. To put it plainly, the lives human beings lead are really just motivated by self-interest—it's self-interest that keeps a person going. Out of self-interest two people will fight; out of self-interest two nations will battle; and out of self-interest a World War can break out. It's because humans have this attachment, this desire, of self-interest. And exactly because these factors exist, it's easy for gods to control things.

Don't people talk about human rights, freedom of belief, and whatnot these days? Dafa disciples have seen—as cultivators all of you can see clearly—that nothing here in the human world is reliable, and when self-interest is involved those things are just scrapped. In the West aren't a lot of countries working for democracy, freedom of belief, and human rights? It seems like a sign of modernity's progress, but then when they're enticed by self-interest, how many governments speak out against

those vile gangsters in China who are persecuting Falun Gong students? What we've seen is, they don't dare to confront the issue, even though many areas that are always thought of as markers of "progress"—such as human rights, freedom of belief, and so on—are being abused. When self-interest is involved they turn so lifeless and weak, they ignore what they see, and they don't dare to speak out. All of that talk about democracy, freedom of belief, and... all those things people hold in such high esteem and advocate for so strongly instantly become meaningless when material gain is on the line.

As Dafa disciples, you should be clearer about this: we can't be attached to anything in this world. We cultivate while conforming as much as possible to ordinary society, and even when we're clarifying the truth now via things like human rights and freedom of belief, that's still to save sentient beings, that's all. Back when Communism came along, weren't people fanatical about it for a while, and didn't a lot of people think it was society making progress? It's not enough for you, a cultivator, to just be detached from the human things here—you need to also be sober about them.

I'm not saying you should oppose those things. That should be clear to a Dafa disciple. What I'm doing is conveying, telling you, a truth of the Fa. For mankind to reach this point today, to be able to rationally reduce people's suffering, there's nothing wrong with that on man's part. But what can people really accomplish? Actually, being irrational when self-interest is involved is also something under the control of gods. And that's why when you clarify the truth to the government or the business sector, you'll get the feeling that people definitely make their own practical interests the priority, business people will definitely be thinking about their own company's financial status, since for them those things are the most important. When you go and clarify the truth to them, they don't want to listen when the thing at hand affects their vital self-interest. I've seen that, too. But people are different, and like I just said, there are people who live by different principles. That's how it is. You can go and do that [form of truth clarification], but you need to be perfectly clear on things, and you need to know how mankind is.

Question: As your disciple, I'd like to ask, why was it arranged in history to have Hong Kong and Macau exist in Mainland China under the form of "one country, two systems"? What is the historical origin of these places?

Teacher: In terms of their historical origin, they are part of China's territory. On this point, you can't say they're another country's territory. As for "one country, two systems," since everyone knows that Party is no good, and they themselves even know everybody thinks that way, well, while they wanted to take the territories back and have them ruled by the Party, they also knew that Hong Kong and Macau wouldn't agree to it, nor would the world, so that resulted in, "one country, two systems." (Audience laughs) It's really a shameful thing. How come when other countries had territory returned they didn't keep two systems? Isn't it because people don't like that stuff of yours?

Question: Is the real purpose of having "one country, two systems" to give the Chinese people a chance to learn the true situation?

Teacher: Of course, nothing happens by accident, and nothing happens just for one reason. When gods arrange something they don't think like humans do. When they arrange something, the issues involved are huge and all-encompassing. When human beings look at the world, they do so from amidst one level of particles. For example, this world that human beings see is between two types of particles—molecules and planets—and they look at this world from amidst the particles that are made up of molecules. Gods are different. A god looks at, within the scope of his abilities, the outcomes of what will happen with all the particles in the cosmos as they relate to one thing. They look at things multi-dimensionally and from all perspectives, and that's why multiple goals are achieved by the things they arrange.

Also, even with how it is, human beings aren't even allowed to see everything in this world that's formed by this level of particles. The reason being, if they let humans see everything, there would be a lot that science couldn't explain, and then people would believe in gods even if you didn't let them. So in order to keep human beings from seeing this world with perfect clarity, they had to create for human beings a pair of eyes like this. Since human beings' eyes are made up of molecular particles, why is it that they still can't see some things that are made up of molecular particles and within this scope? That's because they set up a lot of obstacles for man. The real purpose of the two systems is to meet the design-needs of the world in this historical period. I've talked about these things before.

Question: I often use the literary form of poetry to write truth-clarification articles for Dafa websites, and sometimes, to express the inner meaning of validating the Fa, I didn't strictly follow the rules and forms of classical poetic composition. Was it wrong to do that? If it is done to accurately express inner meaning, it's not necessary to strictly adhere to the rules and forms of classical poetic composition or stick to conventions—is this understanding correct?

Teacher: You want to break their rules—is that what you're saying? Actually, that's precisely modern man's mentality after his morality has declined—that is, going against tradition and what's orthodox. I'm not talking about you here. I'm saying that in terms of the Fa that is where mankind is right now. The truth is, mankind is spiraling downward and growing ignorant. Chinese culture is something gods passed down to man, and every dynasty's culture, including its poetry—be it Tang poetry, Song verse, or Yuan drama and verse—they're all forms of culture that different cosmic bodies brought to human beings when they came to form karmic connections. So, if you want to compose those things it's best to follow their rules. If you say, "I don't like rhyming," well, if you don't like rhyming then there are prose poems nowadays, so you can write prose poems. Those don't have too much that needs to be followed, and they are in keeping with modern forms. But actually, I think those poems are too bland and don't have any deeper meaning. The poems composed with ancient forms are, on the other hand, something you can savor.

Question: I'd like to send you greetings on behalf of Chongqing Dafa disciples and to pass along their thoughts. They asked me to make sure to relay them to you.

Teacher: Thank you all. (Applause) Master is fully aware. Tell them that Master is fully aware.

Question: Some disciples are taking some wrong turns after being imprisoned in a labor camp, and other disciples are quite anxious and worried about their state. How should we help them?

Teacher: If they should be helped, help them. Lies are easy to expose. What "repentance"? Where's that "repentance" going to lead? Isn't all that just deception? Upon returning to society and thinking things over calmly, everything will become clear. With all those who were supposedly "transformed," didn't they become clear about things not long after they got out? How many of them have stayed foggy-headed this whole time? As for those who couldn't measure up this whole time, that's because they feel that they did too many bad things, they know they were wrong, and they're too ashamed to face [fellow Dafa] students, and now they're attached to that shame. That's the reason.

Question: Is it okay for our students to spend money to rent a place for truth-clarification work?

Teacher: Actually, when it comes to clarifying the truth, Dafa disciples have always used their own savings and salaries to do things. But you do need to take into consideration how you live: not only should you consider how you live, but also how your family lives, and consider others. If you can't handle your family life or your own life well, that's going to make it hard for you to clarify the truth. Or from another perspective, if your life isn't stable and you even have trouble feeding yourself, then you'll have to divert your attention to that, and wouldn't your truth-clarification work in fact be

disrupted? So you have to consider your circumstances. I can see your hearts. Just do what you can.

Question: Could Master talk a little more about the future of the cosmos and mankind?

Teacher: Talking about the future at this time has no real meaning for you. Mankind's future will be wonderful and the people who remain will be blessed. That's because Dafa was imparted here and so this place is kept, and the beings who didn't sin against Dafa in this period will be blessed. Because Dafa was imparted and spread here, it established for the future beings favorable conditions for them to live here. Maybe the grains of the future will be in the form of fruit-bearing trees, with each grain of rice being this big (*depicting with hands something like an American football*). Just a little humor. But, relatively speaking, the amount of labor involved will be a lot less; the water and air will be clean; those poisonous things, bugs, mosquitoes, flies, [etc.,] will all be gone; and the world will truly be wonderful. The old gods can't imagine the wonderfulness of the new cosmos since they can't see it, and they don't dare to, and aren't able to, imagine what it is like—it's built entirely on a different foundation. The beings of the past were selfish, but the cosmos of the future is not founded upon selfishness, and everything will be better.

Question: In the near future a lot of people will come over to obtain the Fa of their own initiative, so should we expand our practice sites?

Teacher: Of course that's what you should do, and you've been doing that. (*Audience laughs*) When there are too many people for one site to hold, just start a new practice site. Yes, that's how it should be done.

Question: Some students in Japan don't trust each other, which makes it hard to carry out a lot of our Fa-validation work. I feel sad, and really hope that we can improve together as a group soon.

Teacher: Indeed. Actually, regardless of the situation, when bad factors have a foothold, that's because our students have problems. Yesterday a student brought up the problem of fake writings, and I would ask this: you are a being forged by Dafa, so how could you be deceived by that fake stuff? And why don't you evaluate things with the Fa's standards? Then didn't the evil gain a foothold because of your attachments being too strong? Actually, some people are still not rational, and their righteous thoughts aren't strong enough.

Question: In Japan there are more than a thousand religions being spread, and Japanese people always describe Falun Gong as a religion.

Teacher: Here's what I think about this. From now on, when somebody says Falun Gong is a religion, just let it go. If they want to learn more you can tell them how Falun Gong is not a religion; and if they don't want to learn more, you don't need to talk about whether it's a religion. If somebody wants to call it a religion, so be it, since in society the term "religion" doesn't have any bad connotations. Dafa disciples don't take up the form of religion when cultivating, since you don't observe rituals and don't want those rituals to interfere with you. What I'm telling you is a basic principle in the Fa. However much ordinary people can understand it... in fact, I told you long ago that ordinary people would call us a religion. I discussed that before when I was teaching the Fa.

*Question: In the Japanese edition of Zhuan Falun should the character “的,” as in “目的,” also be changed to the character “地”?*¹³

Teacher: With Japanese it's a different story, since its meanings are different from those of the Han Chinese characters. I think it's better not to touch the Japanese version.

¹³ Translator's note: The question is in reference to changes Teacher recently suggested to the Chinese text. The Japanese script uses many characters that originated from Chinese.

Question: Isn't it true that the students who are part of the Falun Dafa Association shouldn't stifle everything that other students do? (Audience laughs)

Teacher: With the things that students do to validate the Fa and save all beings by clarifying the truth, they shouldn't stop them, and whoever does that is wrong. But some students tend to go to extremes with things, and that can easily have a negative effect. In that case it is necessary to stop them. Many of you here are the coordinators in different areas, and you should remember one thing: except for when overall coordination is necessary to get something done, let's loosen the reins and let students temper themselves, and let's give them a chance to create their own mighty-virtue. You have to give the students opportunities and let *them* do things. You must remember this. Even I, your master, am setting the reins down and letting our students walk their own paths. When a student has done something wrong you should point it out to him. And if he truly has had a bad effect, then you should talk to him with all due seriousness, and figure out how to correct it and make up for the bad effect. But don't say he is a demon. It's hard to avoid making mistakes in cultivation, and of the mistakes, some are going to be big and some small.

Then as for our students, you should take a serious look at yourself. You're a Dafa disciple, so you can't be irresponsible to yourself or to Dafa. You are, after all, a being forged by Dafa, and your mighty-virtue will shine brightly in the cosmos of the future. So how could we afford not to walk our paths well? So, let's not place too much blame on the coordinators. Say the coordinator became perfect, he finished his cultivation, but your gaze was always directed outward, instead of going inward cultivating yourself—then would you still be a cultivator? The person you are cultivating is *you*. If there really is something wrong with the coordinator, then calmly point it out with good intentions. You are all cultivators, and cultivators still have human attachments that they haven't yet removed, human attachments are really vulnerable to getting provoked, and when they are provoked they're apt to play a negative role. So you should be kind and resolve things in a kind way, you should be friendly and cordial, and explain things clearly, out of goodwill. And then things will work out. But, if a coordinator can't even listen to different opinions that are offered up with good intentions, that means he's got problems.

On the other hand, a very small number of students are like this: on the surface they're kind to others, but what they say carries a lot of their own factors, even factors that irk others. But on the surface what they say is plenty gentle. (*Audience laughs*) That's being slick and fooling people, and it's absolutely not the state that a Dafa disciple should have.

If the coordinators in a particular area aren't cultivating based on the Fa, and/or the Dafa disciples there aren't studying the Fa diligently, then the kinds of complicated things we're talking about will appear. But all Dafa disciples and coordinators should be clear on something: a person's human attachments that haven't yet been cultivated away will come out, but that doesn't mean he is no good; and a lot of his well-cultivated facets won't be displayed, since he's cultivated away those human attachments, after all. The fact is, when a cultivator is among ordinary people but no longer has any human attachments, he really has nothing that can manifest, and of course when he has truly cultivated to that point he will Consummate. So as long as somebody has human attachments they'll show themselves, but that doesn't mean he hasn't cultivated or that he hasn't cultivated well. It's just that he didn't do so well with some particular issue or in some area. You should all pay attention to this.

In other words, it's no big deal if human attachments come out as we cultivate ourselves. What's key is that everyone handles himself as a cultivator, and when problems come along, you look inside. If everyone can do that, the cultivation state of that area is sure to be great and conflicts are sure to be few.

Question: There are no leaders in cultivation, and Dafa has no organization. When the members or head of our Association interact with other groups in society and with government agencies, is it appropriate to use the titles of Chair or Member of the Association?

Teacher: I'd say it's appropriate—wasn't the association created so that you would conform to ordinary society? Then why not use that approach to clarify the truth in ordinary society? Of course it's okay, and the government allows you to register. But you can't have an attachment to showing off, for you are validating the Fa, not yourselves.

Dafa disciples are true cultivators. If today's society weren't how it is, I really wouldn't even want you to set up these [Dafa] Associations, and we'd just have practice sites at different locations along with some coordinators, and then some coordinators for the region, that's all. In fact, a coordinator is someone who gathers people together, and he too is an ordinary cultivator; he's somebody who serves others and gives more of himself.

Question: A group of cancer patients wants us to go teach them the practice. Can we do that? [And another question is,] we don't have the basic skills for singing and dancing, but if we really put our mind to learning and practicing them, can we put together a large-scale performance in a short time?

Teacher: As for this [second] thing, do what you can in keeping with your circumstances and abilities. But if you don't have the basics needed to do a large-scale performance, yet you insist on having one, then the audience is going to laugh at you. It's fine to entertain people, but if people are critical and making fun of you, then I think that'll be counterproductive. So what you do should be subject to circumstances.

As for cancer patients wanting to learn the practice, it depends on motivations. When the world's people want to obtain the Fa, cultivate, or say that Falun Dafa is great, that is human beings proactively validating the Fa and proactively choosing their own futures. But if you use Dafa as some kind of tool for healing, and do that among ordinary people, then that's actually being disrespectful to Dafa.

You can go to prisons to introduce the practice, and you can go to hospitals to teach it to patients. We do that to validate Dafa. Your thinking has to be the same as when you go elsewhere to teach the practice, and in essence you're doing it to save sentient beings and have people obtain the Fa and gain salvation. If you make Dafa into a tool for correcting people's mistakes or curing people's illnesses, or think of it as a way to change the ordeals ordinary people have [in store for them], then that's a problem. Dafa is being spread in human society for the sole purpose of saving people. You must be clear on this. Some people say, "Falun Gong is incredibly good at curing cancer. You should all come practice it," in which case it definitely won't work, since your thinking is off. Dafa is not here to heal people. It resolves problems for people for the purpose of saving them on a fundamental level. If that's the starting point then the result is going to be good, for sure. But if you go about it with an attachment to some ordinary thing, then the effect won't be good.

Cultivation is a solemn thing. Li Hongzhi absolutely did not come here to lead you to heal people, and even less so for some human thing, and absolutely not to lead you to start some religion in society. I came to teach you to cultivate and out of a sense of responsibility for saving your life.

Question: During Taiwan's presidential election, some students' human attachments got stirred up. Was it a test arranged by the old forces? What's the right way for us to handle this?

Teacher: Even if the sky were to fall, a cultivator's righteous thoughts would stay unshaken—that is cultivation, and that is remarkable. (Applause) A cultivator is not attached to anything in this world.

Dafa disciples' cultivation takes a different form today. In cultivation you do your best out in the world to conform to ordinary society, you have normal jobs in ordinary society, and you have your families, jobs, and all that—you are closely tied to society. With the Taiwan election, some students thought a certain person was pretty good and so they wanted to vote for him, while others thought a different person was pretty good and wanted to vote for that one. People have their own, different views, and there's nothing wrong with that. A person's own actions out in society don't represent Dafa. But you can't be attached to those things the way ordinary people are.

Whoever you vote for, I can't, as your Master, say that you're wrong, nor do I get involved in those things. That's because the path I ask you to take has you cultivate in ordinary society. Cultivators can only benefit a society. You cultivate in ordinary society but you don't steer human society in one direction or another.

So for each student, it's fine for you to vote as an individual for whomever you want. It's just that you can't be too attached. But through the persecution against Dafa disciples in Mainland China, Dafa disciples have seen through something, and so some are thinking, "Whoever is close to the evil that's persecuting us, I won't vote for him." (*Applause*) And as your Master I have no objection to that either. (*Audience laughs, applauds*) Those are the students' own thoughts, and as your Master I haven't told you who to vote for. Still less will I tell you to take any group action, and that's not allowed. (*Audience laughs*)

As far as students discussing certain things with each other, that's what they do, and do as individuals, with their fellow cultivators. And when you talk about who you'll vote for or who somebody else is going to vote for, those are all the actions of individuals and have nothing to do with Dafa itself or the Dafa Association. A coordinator in the Dafa Association can, just the same, support a certain party, and that's his personal action. I say that because he is cultivating and at the same time a member of society. Could you ask him to completely do away with all human things while cultivating? That can only happen when his cultivation is Consummated. So while he's cultivating in ordinary society, he will be interacting with society, and he'll vote for whomever he wants to. He will have his own views, and there's nothing wrong with that.

Whatever the outcome of the election, it shouldn't lead to clashes out in society—that'd be awfully dangerous. As a cultivator you should be stricter with yourself, and that's why I tell our students that you can't be affected by human attachments or be impulsive like ordinary people. The reason is, you carry energy and have abilities, what you do drives very large factors, and the impact you'd have on society would be huge. So you can't follow the lead of ordinary people. I did see some students get affected by ordinary people to the point that they were angry and emotionally charged, and their righteous thoughts weren't strong; at that point nobody could see your cultivator's image. You can't do that. During our April 25th appeal years back, we were peaceful and perfectly rational. We are good for society.

Question: Now that not many of the old forces' dark minions and evil beings are left, what's interfering with students when they don't do well?

Teacher: A lot of the old forces' dark minions have been eliminated, they're contracting around Mainland China, and from time to time they come out to do something bad. (*Audience laughs*) And what I want to purge are those bad gods who are outside the Three Realms. They are directing the evil beings, and some are even doing things themselves. But in any case, when it's at this point, if a god dares to directly take part in those things, then even if I don't purge him, those above will. Things are now changing fast.

Question: What does "Lasting or momentary—all caused by time" mean?

Teacher: “Lasting” refers to having gone through long, drawn-out years and everything that unfolded over that time. The “momentary” part just refers to a brief segment of time. Whether it be lasting or momentary, as gods see it, the time-concept’s length is the same. And perhaps a moment of time there will result in long, drawn-out years for the lives here. And to our eyes what is but a moment, that moment could be a long, lasting period in another time field. Meanwhile, what’s a long, lasting period in our world is but a brief moment to certain gigantic gods. It’s time that causes all of this, and it’s time that is playing tricks. That’s what it means.

Question: I had a chance to run for city council, and I got to make friends with many people from different walks of life, and that laid a good foundation for clarifying the truth in the future. Because I wasn’t familiar with the city council position, I had to spend some time learning about issues in the community, participating in community service work, and learning about how to be a council member. Sometimes I feel pretty conflicted about it, as I think I should spend the time producing television programs or on other forms of truth-clarification work.

Teacher: The Fa I teach is about cultivating in ordinary society. And when you cultivate in ordinary society, you’re going to have all kinds of interactions with society as a Dafa disciple. The different jobs you have inherently [mean you will] interact with society. There’s no conflict there.

Actually, a lot of our students have different jobs and they clarify the truth alongside their work. It’s just a matter of how to plan and use your time well, it’s a matter of how to do better. I’m not against your having certain select jobs. No matter how big a business you run or how high your position is, none of that’s at odds [with what we’re doing]. I want to affirm that people from any walk of life can cultivate, and I’m truly setting a precedent [by allowing this]. In history there were very few cases of rich people or people in high-ranking positions being saved. But I don’t discriminate based on that, I only look at people’s hearts. I’ll save everyone. (Applause) Lived experience has proven that that was right—not only is it doable, my Dafa disciples have succeeded at cultivation. In the past, because there was no Great Law, the truths that different gods validated and enlightened to were not the fundamental truth of the cosmos. Today the Great Law is being passed on, so anything can be done.

Question: We have a lot of work and activities for validating the Fa. I don’t have the time to ensure I get everything done, and every day I have little time for doing the exercises and studying Fa.

Teacher: Yes, that *is* a problem. If you’re really busy with certain concrete Dafa work, you can ease up a bit on the exercises and find time later on to make it up. That’s okay. The reason being, with these exercises, you can do them more when you have the time, and you can do them less when you don’t. Master has told you about this. When it comes to Fa-study, though, I think you still need to squeeze in time for study, even if it means for a little while only. But when you squeeze in time for study there’s a problem that’s apt to come up: you can’t calm your mind, and if you can’t calm your mind, you’re in fact studying in vain and wasting time. If you’re going to study, you need to set aside everything else that’s on your mind, keep your mind steady, quiet your mind, and truly study. Even if you just study a few paragraphs [this way], it’s better than reading the entire book with a restless mind. When you study the Fa, you have to absorb it.

Question: Is it true that all of the ordeals disciples now go through are caused by the old forces’ targeting the Fa-rectification?

Teacher: No, your ordeals are all part of your cultivation, and the old forces’ interference targets the cultivation of only a small number of you. I’m saying that I don’t acknowledge the old forces’ interfering with Dafa disciples, because the Dafa disciples are my disciples, and nobody else is worthy of handling them. And even less could we let them succeed in their plot to use Dafa disciples and impose things on the Dafa disciples to achieve their goals, ruining my disciples. The reason they’ve

been able to interfere is, they have seized on your attachments and shortcomings, and then there's your karma left over from your past. The persecution also stems from these factors. The Fa-rectification beyond the Three Realms doesn't have that direct of a connection with you, but you are here during the Fa-rectification period and you're here when Master is here, and you are Dafa Disciples in the Fa-rectification period.

Question: Some students think that if they just stay home and send righteous thoughts, and use phone calls to clarify the truth, they count as Fa-rectification disciples and don't need to come out. Is that okay?

Teacher: If they're not all that busy with Dafa things, then it's not quite right if they don't come out for group activities to validate the Fa and clarify the truth, or for other activities like group Fa-study. Group Fa-study is an environment I created for you and a form that I've left for you. I think you should still participate. That's because it has stood the test of experience, and cultivating that way allows our students to improve the fastest. When you cultivate on your own, you miss out on factors that help you improve. And haven't you, as Dafa disciples, said that you would do as your Master says? Haven't you said that you should walk straight on the path that a Dafa disciple should take?

I can see your challenges, so I don't want to say that you "must do" such and such. I rarely say that, because I know it's tough for you. Besides, in cultivation you've got to come to understand things on your own. I spell out the Fa's principles, but you need to walk the path yourself. If I told you that you "must do" such and such, but you had an omission with something, then the omission would in fact be Master's fault; Master wouldn't have let you come to your own understanding of that thing or let you handle it yourself, so that part of you wouldn't be cultivated. That's why I rarely put things that way. A Dafa disciple should recognize his responsibilities and what he should do as a Dafa disciple.

Question: I've participated in important activities to validate the Fa many times, and discovered that when we try to accomplish something big, there is often a lot of interference, karma elimination, etc.

Teacher: There's been disruption from day one, so disruptions come along sometimes, both big and small. The remnants of the old forces and those bad things just won't quit. Every time I teach the Fa, they can hear it. Just like you they hear it, and at the same time as you, but they just insist on doing those things. Their sins are so great that they can't be measured in terms of their lives anymore. In the future they will pay for their sins endlessly, but even so they won't be able to pay for all of it—that's how huge their sins are. And when it comes to the old forces' remnants in the Three Realms, and the variety of degenerate factors in the cosmos, those final old factors are sacrificing them and making them carry on all the way to the end. Those things' sins are so huge that their sins could incinerate them. It's the savagery of those bad factors that has made them that way.

Question: Is it better to have a simple or complicated mind? And for what reasons?

Teacher: In the eyes of gods, if a person's mind is simple and clean, gods consider him a good person. And if a person's mind is complicated, then gods consider him bad, because as gods see it, hasn't it become complicated because of attachments formed in the human world? Isn't being complicated a result of being attached to the human world? So this is a truth in cultivation.

Having a simple mind doesn't mean you have little wisdom, and having a complicated mind doesn't mean you have wisdom. And that's not at odds with the form of cultivation Dafa disciples do here in the setting of ordinary people or any of the things you're doing today to validate the Fa. A Dafa disciple's wisdom comes from righteous thoughts—divine thoughts—and that kind of wisdom is different from the concept of a complicated mind that has formed among ordinary people and in society. That stuff is all about self-interest, it's selfish, and it's a form of cunning developed by

scheming against other people. A Dafa disciple's starting point, on the other hand, is validating Dafa, and there's no seeking something for oneself. So it's fundamentally different. The latter is great wisdom, while the former should be called complicated thoughts. And their manifestations are different, to be sure.

Question: For a long time now, our area has had a lot of veteran students who haven't come to group Fa-study for quite some time, and they don't do the exercises with us outdoors, either. They think that they can, without coming to group Fa-study, study the Fa well at home just the same, and that at home they can likewise do a good job with the exercises. They think that going about things that way doesn't prevent us from improving as a whole.

Teacher: Actually, I'd say that if there really are people like that, then it's the result of their human attachments. If you don't believe it, dig into the roots of your mind and you're sure to find attachments. To put it lightly, you are lazy. Put more seriously, you're afraid. Of course, some veteran students are tied up with specific work, and that's different.

Question: If someone followed that disgraceful person in Hong Kong at one time, can he still participate in the media projects we're now doing?

Teacher: It's better not to ask Master a specific question like this. Some of our students have made mistakes, but as long as they have corrected them it's fine—who has never made a mistake? So from the student's perspective, when other students don't trust you, don't stubbornly go against them. It's not a bad idea to avoid the issue a little bit, as that way both sides have less psychological pressure on them.

If people don't let you do those things, you can just go out on the street to pass out flyers, which saves sentient beings just the same. Or you can go to the consulate or embassy to send righteous thoughts or do other things. You can do any of that, so why do you have to be attached to some one thing? The more attached you get, the worse the impression you'll give other students, right? So why insist on it? And won't the old forces use your being like that to cause commotion? So with anything you do, if it can stem from your considering *Dafa*, then I think things will be different and the situation will change. I'd suggest that all the students who are being regarded with suspicion go to the consulates or embassies and out on the street to pass out information, go to the places that need you most and directly, face-to-face, clarify the truth to people, and don't get involved in the inner workings of projects for now. Show everyone whether you're real, whether you're up to par.

As for those who really are a problem, you don't need to worry about them. Those people are among Dafa disciples but not in the Fa, and once the old forces are done with them their lives will be ended. Actually, I know that some of the ones with problems do know Dafa is good, but because they fear that the spy agencies will publicize the shameful things they did before which harmed people, their fear has led them to keep doing bad things while begging, all the while, Master's Law Bodies to make things easier for them. But how *could* they? Cultivation is so solemn, especially a Dafa disciple's cultivation—how great the mighty-virtue! Yet they're begging like that out of attachment, and on top of that they have a filthy fear. They won't get any approval, that's not possible. But the old forces' remnants and rotten demons can see those people's attachments, and so they impersonate Master and lead you along or tell you it's okay to do certain things. By doing that they're trying to persecute you to death.

Question: All Taiwan's Dafa disciples and young disciples in Taiwan's Minghui schools send their greetings to Master. (Teacher: Thank you.) (Everyone applauds) All young disciples in Taiwan's Minghui kindergartens send their greetings to Master. During the Fa-rectification period, how can we better use the approach of education to validate Dafa?

Teacher: Actually, what you are doing is validating Dafa. The students at the Minghui schools have become young disciples, and that's had an impact on society, it has impacted schools, and impacted educational circles. So to have things done in greater depth and with more breadth, that, in fact, is what I'm hoping you'll do. *(Teacher laughs) (Applause)* I said that's what I'm hoping for, but to put it more accurately, that's what all lives are hoping for. *(Teacher laughs) (Applause)*

Question: In one area, after some people had just arrived from China and claimed they were Dafa disciples, some fellow cultivators immediately helped them apply for asylum. Do we need to take some time to learn more about them before we help them to gain refugee status?

Teacher: When it comes to these issues, students can decide for themselves what to do based on the circumstances. If the person is a true Dafa disciple, then you can't refuse to help when he has hardship. Ask him a lot of questions from the Fa and it'll be clear, won't it?

Question: Some students go to extremes when they do things and have had a bad effect on Dafa.

Teacher: The beings that gods respect the least are those who can't find themselves and whose righteous thoughts are lacking whenever they do things. If somebody can't find himself, if he doesn't say what he means, if he goes to extremes when he does things, and if the real *him* isn't in control, then tell me, who would I be saving? Which one is you? Gods have the least respect for beings like that. Even though those people have joined the ranks of Dafa disciples, they're actually not part of Dafa. That's truly sad. They have no righteous thoughts.

Question: Some students who have supernormal abilities think that, when they send righteous thoughts, the lives in other dimensions should be saved, and that it's a bit uncompassionate to eradicate them...

Teacher: If Fa-rectification didn't exist, or if when this happened it was just the master of some discipline guiding his disciple, then you couldn't really say it was wrong for his disciple to have that understanding, though the master would think you were lacking in proper thoughts. With any master, if he had a disciple like that, that disciple would get sent home sooner or later, because if you don't do what your master tells you, what kind of a disciple are you? Today what's happening is different. Fa-rectification is unfolding and it goes well beyond a being's self-cultivation. When a being interferes with you and with Dafa, that being should be cleared away, and it's no longer a matter of whether you as an individual are merciful; rather, it's a matter of whether you are responsible to Dafa.

You're a Dafa disciple, so don't think that the goal of saving people is just for you yourself to cultivate to Consummation. It's not. A Dafa disciple's responsibility is to validate the Fa. Will you not even validate the Fa? When Dafa is being damaged, are you indifferent? The Dafa disciples in Mainland China were killed by persecution from those things—does that have nothing to do with you? You've gained everything from the Fa, while Dafa does not need anything from you in return. But since you're one of the Dafa disciples, if Dafa were gone, could you possibly exist? Isn't safeguarding Dafa safeguarding yourself? Actually, I think the problem this student has goes beyond mere confusion. I didn't finish reading what's on the question slip...

Question: ...invented a set of things that involves reciting Lunyu a certain number of times and adding specific mudras,¹⁴ saying it has a powerful effect. (Teacher: See, didn't I say his problem went beyond mere confusion?) (Audience laughs) And he quietly went around teaching other students.

Teacher: That's interference. He's being used by demons now, only it's not yet that serious. So as for this student, his level has dropped badly, and compared to the Dafa disciples who are validating the Fa

¹⁴ Translator's note: This term has been translated elsewhere as "hand gestures" or "hand positions."

in an upright way and with dignity, he comes across as so paltry, (*Teacher sighs*) and he's way behind. In reality he can't interfere with other students, since a lot of students can tell that he's not right, and only a small minority who have strong attachments are going to be affected.

Question: I feel that the old forces arranged for us some critical junctures and want to keep us down, but as long as we pass those tests and overcome those ordeals we will be able to let go of our fundamental attachments and thereby do better.

Teacher: Yes, if you weren't attached to anything the old forces would have no excuse and could do nothing to you.

Question: What is Taiwan's role in the Fa-rectification period, and what will it be after the Fa rectifies the human world?

Teacher: The Fa rectifying the human world is a future affair. As for Taiwan's role, I can only tell you that while [it and the Mainland] have the same ancestors and belong to the same ethnic group, the attitudes towards Dafa on the two sides of the Strait are different, and it's a sharp contrast.

Question: How, specifically, will Dafa disciples know it's the day when the Fa-rectification period ends?

Teacher: Don't be attached. When that day comes, the history of this old cosmos will end, and Dafa disciples will Consummate. That instant when you Consummate and become Unlocked, for a sentient being, that's just a matter of moving from one second to the next—and it's not even a second—from one instant to the next, and the dividing line between being human and divine is crossed. A Dafa disciple's cultivation goes from the microcosm to the surface, and that's why the part that has been fully cultivated in the microcosm will not do anything when the main body isn't controlling it, but it knows everything since it has finished cultivating, after all. There is a part of you that's in the highest realm you have cultivated to and in each single realm below it, all the way down, and you'll know the state of affairs in all of the realms you are in. So between one second and the next, one instantly goes from being a human to being a god. And at that instant you will know everything, and at that instant you will become an omnipotent, magnificent god.

Question: Is the current political situation in Taiwan the old forces' design, or was it caused by Dafa disciples' attachments?

Teacher: Looks like our students are really concerned with this. Dafa disciples didn't cause the situation; those things have nothing to do with our Dafa disciples. They were all caused by factors that the old forces left behind in the past. But judging by things at present, the old-force remnants seem like they can't carry out their wishes anymore.

Question: There is a student who went to Beijing to make an appeal after the evil began its persecution. But after that he would only read Zhuan Falun and not the newer writings. We've shared our thoughts with him many times, hoping he would snap out of that crooked understanding, but none of it was effective. May I ask what kind of "heavy hammer" should be used to wake him up? (Teacher laughs) (Audience laughs)

Teacher: Talk to him with good intentions and see what his attachments are. He has a mental obstacle due to an attachment, and he has fear, and they are what brought about that state. He believed the evil's lies and propaganda—what else? But he does know the Fa is good, so he's conflicted, and he can't let go [of some things]. If he really can't get up to par, then that's his own issue. But if there's still hope of saving him, then you should help him.

Question: Recently we've been using the form of artistic performances to clarify the truth to the

community, and the results have been great. Some groups have invited us to demonstrate the exercises and teach the practice, with one group consisting solely of cancer patients. I'd like to ask, how should we handle it? Also, we're planning to organize a large-scale performance. Can we charge admission? Can we raise money for other groups?

Teacher: You absolutely cannot raise money for other groups, and you shouldn't do things that have no significance for Dafa disciples. For Dafa disciples, validating the Fa, clarifying the truth, saving sentient beings, and negating the persecution is the first priority, and nothing should interfere. If you do things that have no connection to Dafa, what you get won't be worth the effort.

Some people might be thinking, "If I raise some money for them, those people might be good toward Falun Gong." That's not how it works. I've taught the Fa for so many years now, and I've never thought about using financial means, some sort of authority, or personal influence to get people to obtain the Fa. If he doesn't come for the Fa then it's no good.

Question: While the lawsuits are going on, can our students clarify the truth to the judges? Would that compromise the integrity of the judicial process?

Teacher: Talking about the persecution shouldn't be a problem, and it should be fine for students who aren't part of the lawsuit to clarify the truth. In the human world people have sealed themselves off with a slew of restrictions, but if you do things with wisdom, you won't be doing something bad, and there shouldn't be a problem.

Question: A coordinator who has clarified the truth at a particular tourist spot in Hong Kong has managed to rectify that place so well, it's really admirable. Some students think of her as a god. And some students have said that going there to clarify the truth for a week is better than cultivating in Taiwan for a whole year. (Audience laughs) (Teacher: Now that's extreme.) Because a lot of students go there out of admiration...

Teacher: Our students—remember this—some of our students have done well, but she is still cultivating. So if we do those things, won't it lead students to form new attachments? And won't it make the students a little too pleased with themselves? So I think you still need to be careful. Yes, when a student has cultivated well in some regard, we should learn from him. But the student is still cultivating and still has human attachments that haven't been removed yet, so you still need to use the Fa as your standard.

Question: ...recently the woman has insisted on changing the way to send righteous thoughts. She altered the order of the five-minute segments, changing the first five minutes from purging all the bad thoughts in her own mind to eradicating the dark minions. And she makes other students follow her formulas.

Teacher: See, here we go. (*Audience laughs*) It caused her to form attachments—see what happened now? You led her to do things her own way. That's why I tell you that you need to study the Fa a lot and use the Fa as your standard. Whenever a person cultivates well in some regard, that's because she has cultivated well in the Fa, not because she is better than the Fa. So if you follow somebody's example instead of learning from the Fa... [remember that] before the person has finished her cultivation she still has flaws, and when she's good in one regard it doesn't mean she's good in every regard. Now it's really happened, you've triggered the student's attachment. Be careful with this type of thing.

Question: Master, would you please talk about how we can spread to different people the Zhen-Shan-Ren quality of the cosmos using the media in a subtle and wise way? And what are beings in the Daoist paradises like?

Teacher: What are you talking about? (*Audience laughs*) "...spread to different people... using the media in a subtle and wise way?" Why does it sound to me like that's not something a Dafa disciple would say? Maybe this is a new student. There's no "subtle and wise" way. Dafa disciples are all doing things according to the Fa; they have compassion for all beings and are letting sentient beings know what's wonderful. They're doing this based on what fits their respective circumstances and based on their own desire to do so.

What are the Daoist paradises like? The Daoist system, as I've said before, the Daoist system didn't have paradises in the past. Daoists cultivate solo and in complete solitude, and even in the heavens they stay in caves. And the Daos in the heavens wander about, too, and only in a small number of cases do they have Daoist temples. In recent times, with the appearance of the Daoist religion some Buddho-Daoist disputes have come along. That's why the Daoist religion was established, and the Daoist religion, too, began to have Buddhas and Bodhisattvas. All of these things have been resolved.

Question: When a husband and wife are both Dafa disciples and they have conflicts and problems that can't be resolved, can they divorce? (*Audience laughs*) Does it have anything to do with cultivation?

Teacher: Actually I'd say you have omissions in your cultivation, even though some students might say that you're doing all right. Aren't you overly attached to those human things? If both of you could let go of self and cultivate well and not have such a strong sense of self, then could you not handle those things well, given that both the husband and wife are Dafa disciples?

As for divorce, I've told you to conform to ordinary society as much as possible; today, whether it's getting divorced or getting married, I won't say anything. I discuss things in terms of Fa's principles. But I'll tell you, those things won't be allowed in the future. They result from the current state of modern society. I can't force you to do things a certain way, but the lives of the future won't be allowed to do this, nor would they [if they could].

Also, let's talk a little about human beings. Nowadays people consider emotion really important, yet emotion is one of the most unreliable things. "When you're nice to me I'm happy, and when you're no longer nice to me the feeling is gone." Then how could you count on that thing? Could emotional ties sustain a marriage? With human beings there's not just moral obligation involved, but also, between man and wife, you are indebted to each other. So in terms of the woman, when she has put her whole life in your hands, the man should realize, "This woman has entrusted her whole life to me. I have to be responsible for her." The sense of indebtedness that a husband and wife have for each other is something people don't recognize or value today. Of course, the state of society now isn't like [what I just described], so I don't hold you to that. As Dafa disciples you should handle yourselves well and try your best to avoid such things [as divorce].

Of course, just now I only talked about men. I need to talk a little about women now. (*Audience laughs*) Well, I'll go easy. (*Audience laughs*) As a woman, you in turn need to be understanding of your man. Women: you all want your man, your husband, to be a strong, upright and dignified, manly guy, but in your actions you always keep him down, keeping him under such tight control that he's like a woman (*audience laughs*). So how could he be manly? When the whole society is in this state, think about it, the society's men have all become she-men, (*audience laughs*) and all the women have become he-women, (*audience laughs*)—it's the inversion of yin and yang. Of course, that's how society is, and I won't insist that you be a certain way. We do have some female students who are indeed really talented, and there are some people who are really amazing, (*Master laughs*) and sometimes they surpass men in terms of abilities. But all the same, a lot of times you really need to be considerate of your men. As a cultivator, you have to be a good person wherever you are, and you have to be considerate of others—so in the home why can't you be considerate and understanding of your own husband? Aren't we to

leave the future mankind with the best things? When both of you are cultivators you should each be considerate of one another, and with that how could you talk about divorce? Marriage should be something unbreakable. (Audience laughs) (Teacher sighs)

Question: I'd like to ask you to please talk about how to clarify the truth to businessmen.

Teacher: Human beings are attached to self-interest. For ordinary people, self-interest is above all else, and that's just how human beings are. When you tell them about the truth, they'll understand, "Oh, you're good people and you're being persecuted. But I still need to go make money." Because different countries keep investing money over there at this time when Falun Gong is being persecuted, it has given the evil the ability and funds to persecute Falun Gong, and it has made those countries who invested the money dependent on that market, so they don't dare to expose anything or take a stance against the persecution. That's just how human beings are, unless they take up cultivation, so that's as far as we can go to get the message across to them. As far as businessmen go, you can leave it at that.

Question: I'd like to ask Master, Shakyamuni validated and enlightened to "Precept, Concentration, Wisdom," so while we assimilate to the Fa we must also validate and enlighten to, within Dafa, our own principles that assimilate to the Fa, is that correct?

Teacher: Yes, but I haven't finished summarizing those things that you are to validate and enlighten to, so you don't know what they are yet—you won't know until you are Enlightened, for our cultivation method is different. Don't go and create something just to be different. If you go off and invent some new term tomorrow, and claim "This is what I'm cultivating," then you'll have gone astray.

Question: Dafa disciples from Australia, Japan, Malaysia, (Master: I think I will read these.) Australia, Japan, Malaysia, Indonesia, Singapore, Macau, Korea, Taiwan, New Zealand, the Dafa disciples illegally detained in Beijing's Women's Forced Labor Camp, Liuzhou in Guangxi province, Meizhou in Guangdong province, Shenzhen, Yangzhou in Jiangsu province, Sydney, Japan's Minghui schools, Ningbo in Zhejiang province, Zhuhai, Hangzhou, Qingdao in Shandong province, Haiyang, Shanghai, Yanbian, Wuhan, Shanxi, the city of Jilin in Jilin province, the city of Shuangcheng in Heilongjiang province, Weihai, Fanyu in Guangzhou province, Xi-an, Beijing, and the city of Jiangmen in Guangdong province send their highest regards to magnificent, esteemed Master.

Teacher: Thank you all. (Applause) I know. And that's especially so for those students in Mainland China, I know what they're feeling, I know their longing for Master, and in fact I feel the same way toward them. The evil will be eliminated; dark clouds cannot eclipse the sky.

Question: When I called Beijing to clarify the truth, a fellow cultivator answered the phone. I told them, "Dafa disciples around the world are thinking of you. Please firmly believe in Master and Dafa. It's hard to endure, but you can endure it. It's hard to do, but you can do it." The practitioner asked me to send his regards to Master when I see you. Everyone misses you.

Teacher: I thank you all. (Applause)

Question: I'd like to relay greetings to Master from public security officers in Guangdong province. Currently there are (Teacher: I'll skip the part that tells the number of them here) who see the persecution for what it is.

Teacher: The situation of clarifying the truth and saving beings is changing faster for Mainland China Dafa disciples than internationally, and that's because there are, after all, a great number of Dafa disciples there; almost 100 million Dafa disciples are exerting a gigantic influence negating the persecution. Clarifying the truth all around the world and saving the beings outside Mainland China has helped people everywhere to become aware of the truth and condemn the persecution, and it has

cleared away evil. It is the result of Fa-rectification and the concerted efforts of Dafa disciples all over the world. But for the persecution in Mainland China to stop before Fa-rectification arrives, the Dafa disciples in Mainland China would still have to play the main role. As for the current persecution, many members of the general public in China are annoyed with it, and it's not just the general public, at higher strata of society too and even in the upper echelon of the government, many people have stepped forward to talk directly about the facts of the persecution against Falun Gong. Soon the people will stand up and condemn this persecution.

Question: In recent writings you have mentioned greater responsibilities awaiting us in the future. Did that refer to our descending to the mortal world after Consummation to save our sentient beings?

Teacher: What you're doing right now is saving sentient beings. You can't go up and then come back. (Audience laughs) Who'd want to come back? You are here and think that this place is pretty good, but that's because your eyes can't see the reality of things here. Once you arrive up there and take a look back, you'll find it just filthy here in this human world, and you wouldn't want to come back even if you were asked to. And that's why I say those beings who dared to come here and obtain the Fa are all worth cherishing. But the persecution by the old forces has caused sentient beings to sin against Dafa, and the actions of human beings during this persecution have truly ruined a lot of people, and ruined a lot of lives.

Question: How should handicapped disciples handle sending righteous thoughts? I ask because my right hand is crippled.

Teacher: Then you can use your left hand. It doesn't matter, because it's even fine not to use any mudra when you send righteous thoughts. I asked you to use mudras to help you have a stronger sense that you are sending righteous thoughts, to give you a greater sense of command, that's all.

Question: In Taiwan, how can we encourage fellow cultivators to change from being passive to proactive validating Dafa, and to treasure the final lot of time in Fa-rectification?

Teacher: Now about this, actually, I'm the least worried about the students in Taiwan. Because of the government's attitude toward Dafa there, that doesn't worry me much. And because with the Fa available, the students there have done very well. Sometimes I feel like what they're doing is similar to what took place back when I was in China. (Applause) As for a very small number of people not doing well in certain regions, it's a manifestation of the process of a student's gaining a better understanding and the process of new students maturing, and all of that will gradually get better. The disruptions they encounter in their personal cultivation aren't the same as persecution in Mainland China, but there will of course often be tests for the individuals. So as cultivators you have to understand it correctly. You can't be afraid of ordeals and tests. Would you be cultivating if you spent all your days in total comfort and happiness?

Question: When we study the Fa with Chinese students, we read a paragraph in Chinese and then a paragraph in Japanese. Some Chinese students think that studying the Fa this way is too slow and it's not as effective as reading as one [language] group.

Teacher: I think either way is fine, it's okay to have the Japanese-speaking students reading together and the Chinese-speaking students reading together. Whatever is easier for you. There's no absolute rule. Just do whatever helps people improve.

Question: I'm pretty young. When I see attachments in some fellow cultivators who are older than me, I don't dare to bring them up. Is this fear—an attachment?

Teacher: Don't be afraid. When you see something that's wrong you can speak up about it. Even very,

very young disciples can talk about what they see.

Question: I know a student who made a huge mistake several years ago and really had a negative impact on Dafa. Now he's in a really tough situation. Should I help him?

Teacher: If the person did bad things and stopped practicing, then you can't call him a student. Right now you're all busy clarifying the truth, so you can judge for yourself whether it's worth it to spend a lot of time helping him. Whether the person can still be saved, and what the trade-offs are of doing something like that given what you have right now, those are things you should decide based on circumstances.

Question: Taiwan is where Chinese-language newspapers are read most outside of Mainland China. Master, would you please give us some guidance on the future of publishing a daily newspaper in Taiwan.

Teacher: I'll still say the same thing: make the decision yourselves based on our students' circumstances and abilities. Don't ask Master to affirm something. Once Master says something, you'll say, "Master said it," and disregard whether it's feasible, whether there are challenges, and whether conditions are ripe, and you'll disregard everything and insist on doing it. That's why I say that you have to plan things subject to your circumstances.

Question: How should we understand "I brush off the enshrouding dust, and all their realities are seen"?

Teacher: "Brush off the enshrouding dust"... from the dawn of time in the cosmos up through the present, a measureless amount of time has passed. There are always cosmic bodies disintegrating, just like metabolism. They disintegrate and then re-form, and form and then disintegrate again. Because of this, mankind's science actually believes that a big explosion is what brought about the universe. The cosmos's dust has been falling downward, and bad elements are continually going downward. From top to bottom, no level is as pure as it was back then. And the Three Realms, in particular, has gotten worse and worse; it has been enshrouded with dust for so long, and the dust is getting ever thicker. When the moon was sent up before, it wasn't as big as it is today; now the thickness of its outer surface has increased by dozens of kilometers. So as for, "I brush off the enshrouding dust, and all their realities are seen," sentient beings have been covered by some external factors, and many bad elements have made even the beings themselves impure, and mankind, specifically, has been controlled by outside evil during the persecution of Dafa. So after these things are cleansed we will take another look and see how those beings are. That's what it means. (Applause)

Question: Overall planning and coordinating are both present with any issue. Why is it that you encourage coordination but not overall planning?

Teacher: You just need to get together and discuss how to do things. Fa-rectification has its own progression. Actually, what you're doing are just the three things; the premise has already been set. With the three things being the focal point, you figure out how to do them well and at the same time cultivate yourselves well and save sentient beings—the hardest part is saving sentient beings. Doing things well is actually a matter of coordination. When I say coordination, I'm talking about cooperating and working well together. Validating the Fa is also cultivation, and if you all look within you will be able to cooperate well. Dafa is cultivation, and there's nothing else. Dafa disciples are doing things to clarify the truth to, for one, save all beings, and secondly, to restrain the persecution, to expose the persecution, and oppose it. We have no other objectives. So as for the activities that Dafa disciples organize and truth-clarification via the form of media, you get together to plan things out, and those are things our students do as individuals.

Question: Are the factors outside the cosmos the same thing as lifeless, still water?

Teacher: The lifeless water that I talked about is only a form at a certain level of the cosmos. The cosmos is so complex that it can't be described with man's language. At a certain point there's not even water, it's no longer water. The cosmos is incredibly immense, and in each enormous realm there is a fundamental reason behind the creation of that cosmos, but none of them is the most fundamental reason. But to the beings in a given realm, when they see all of that they think it is the fundamental reason. That is a very common phenomenon.

Question: Can coordinators in the Dafa Association place themselves above the students? The students aren't able to raise criticism, and the main coordinator is forming factions and cliques.

Teacher: I think that if a coordinator does in fact have that problem, then he really needs to pay attention to it. Why do the students think of you, a coordinator, like that? Maybe it is the case that we have a lot of problems? You should really think it over now. Coordinators, well actually, when I say coordinators, or the people with positions of responsibility, it's just a name. What are they "responsible" for? Could you be responsible for Dafa? Could you really handle that? Actually you're just liaisons, people who serve others, and you have no power or authority. Coordinate everyone well, and that's the best function you can serve helping Master at the human surface level.

It doesn't seem appropriate to say that the coordinators are rounding up cohorts to form a clique. Aren't all the coordinators actually taking care of and overseeing all the students? Maybe sometimes he seems closer to those around him, and it's apt to give other students that impression. If certain students have issues with the coordinator and make known the coordinator's shortcomings among some students, then the problem doesn't just involve the coordinator. You're cultivating, so why aren't you looking inside? You're stirring up antagonism among students toward the coordinator, you're leading a group of people to go against the coordinator, and that is being irresponsible to both yourself and Dafa. I look at both sides.

So as for the coordinator, you do need to do well; and as for the students, you can't always focus on the coordinator. You are a Dafa disciple, and each person is cultivating himself, but what are you doing? Are you only helping the coordinator to cultivate? Don't you cultivate yourself? Isn't that the problem? But as for the coordinator, do you truly have a serious problem? If you can't help Master lead the students in your area well, then don't you have problems yourself? Do you know what I think? I can't leave behind any of the Dafa disciples. Every person is family to me, so how can you treat different members of my family differently? I'll definitely support you, the coordinators, when it comes to Dafa work, and guiding the local students well is really a great contribution. There's a saying ordinary people have: "Don't utilize a questionable person; if you utilize someone don't question him." That's what ordinary people say. Dafa is forging you, but as our Dafa disciples you should remove all your attachments, including the attachment to being a coordinator or a leader. Everyone is a cultivator. It's only that you are someone who gives more for others. So coordinators, that's what I require of you as your Master.

Doing Dafa work is also cultivating, and none of the work methods in ordinary society have anything to do with how you go about being a coordinator in Dafa. In other words, this form or way of work didn't exist before, where someone both has responsibility and is an ordinary cultivator. You are exploring your own paths, and each Dafa coordinator is tempering himself. At the beginning maybe he didn't do too well, but gradually he should mature. And during that process he'll certainly have shortcomings and make mistakes, and that is the process of being tempered. That's how I look at it as your Master. I can't replace him with somebody else before he has been tempered to maturity and start tempering the new person from scratch, because in that process there would be a lot of mistakes and

students would have a lot of complaints, and that could even impair Dafa's overall state and disrupt Dafa disciples' validating of Fa as one body.

When a coordinator has a problem, students should point it out to him, and even put it to him in serious terms. As for the student, you should put Dafa first, instead of always putting your own opinions first and pointing out how others are wrong. If a particular coordinator in the Dafa Association really is holding students back from doing things, then he has a serious problem, as it amounts to interfering with each Dafa disciple's walking of his own path validating the Fa. If the person truly is like that, then we need to think about whether the person is suitable; it won't work if he goes on like that. But if it's otherwise, or if some students have in fact botched things, and they aren't willing to listen to the coordinator's advice and turn it around and claim he's interfering with the students' validating of Fa, then that's no good. In that scenario why can't the Dafa disciples look at things from the standpoint of Dafa? I want each person to be tempered to maturity.

Looking at it from another angle, your conflicts are in fact tests that you need to pass in the process of improving. You are all improving yourselves, and each person should look inward at himself. On the coordinator's part, when those problems come up, we can't say you're not responsible—you do have to bear responsibility for it. When you haven't done well leading such a large group of students the responsibility is major, and you should realize this. As your Master, I can't leave behind a single disciple, and I'll tell you that as a coordinator, you can't leave behind a single one of my disciples. (Applause) When a student is on good terms with you, you do things with him, and when someone doesn't listen to you, you exclude him? You can't be like that, and as your Master I don't want that kind of coordinator. You need to coordinate in a way that allows people to work together, and you need to continually improve based on Fa and form an upright environment, so that Dafa disciples can do well the things of validating Fa, like clarifying the truth, saving sentient beings, and restraining the persecution.

Question: In the past four years, some Falun Gong students from Mainland China have spent a lot of money to come to Korea to work. Their immigration status is illegal, and their monthly income is seven to ten thousand yuan. They aren't able to recognize the responsibility a Dafa disciple has during the Fa-rectification period, and have come here just to make money and send money home. They even say it was arranged by Master. I'd like to ask how we can convince these students to return to China to validate the Fa?

Teacher: When a Dafa disciple sees that the situation in China is grim, that still more Dafa disciples are being persecuted, and that many of the world's people are being poisoned, if a Dafa disciple doesn't do the things a Dafa disciple does, then is he still a Dafa disciple? It's okay to leave China to do Dafa things, but if somebody doesn't do Dafa things, how could he still be worthy of being a Dafa disciple? Whether they're in Mainland China or abroad, they should still be Dafa disciples. Once they become the same as ordinary people they are ordinary people. So in terms of these students, you have to explain to them clearly that if they want to remain there they need to do what a Dafa disciple should do.

Question: Recently, the differences of opinion and misunderstandings among fellow cultivators have been pretty big. I'd like to ask Master, is this because the further we go in the latter stages of cultivation, the bigger the differences among fellow cultivators' levels? Or is it the old forces interfering?

Teacher: It's true that the differences among students' levels are getting bigger, but the old forces' interfering has never stopped, either. So whenever there are personal factors in a student's opinion, it's going to be exploited. This phenomenon doesn't occur that much anymore. Actually, I've talked about this kind of thing many times. The cultivating students are a collective entity, and all kinds of not-yet-

removed thoughts will manifest. If you don't want to look inward and cultivate yourselves, then a complicated situation will take shape. So when these problems come up in some area, it's for sure there is a problem with that area's Fa-study. All of those involved are [partially] responsible and haven't cultivated themselves well, or at least in terms of that one issue.

Question: How are we different from a religion?

Teacher: Dafa is formless! The path I'm taking you down today is the purest. We've cast aside every thing with form, and look only at the heart. Cultivation is the cornerstone of a being's elevation, whereas anything that's about external form is going to stir up attachments. Look at how many religious people there are today who don't uphold Buddhas, Daos, or Gods but instead religion's forms. What they believe in is not gods, but the form of religion and the cause of building up religions—there's a world of difference. Believing in gods and believing in religions—they're poles apart. Religions evoke people's attachments to the forms themselves, and they've severely affected people's righteous faith in gods. There are factors in the forms that affect a cultivator's improvement.

Question: Sometimes when I meet with ordeals I don't know if it's a result of my own karma or the old forces' arrangements.

Teacher: Regardless of whether it's the old forces' arrangements or karma, we should first of all examine ourselves. I ask you to cleanse yourselves first even when you send righteous thoughts. Look at yourself first, and if you discover that you have a problem, take care of it. With that the old forces won't be able to do anything; when they can't find anything to hold against you they will back off. Of course, at the current time even if the old forces want to back off that doesn't cut it—clear them away entirely. After you cleanse yourself when you sit to send righteous thoughts, clear them away. *(Applause)*

Question: After reading “Waist Drum Troupe” in Hongyin II, I came to understand that the waist drum formation has the effect of eliminating evil and rectifying the Fa.

Teacher: Yes, the sounds of your drumming carry Zhen-Shan-Ren in them, and in those sounds Dafa disciples' abilities manifest.

Question: The young disciples in Taiwan have formed a Western-style drum troupe. I think they should form a waist drum troupe. (Audience laughs)

Teacher: Don't let forms limit you. Everything Dafa disciples do validating the Fa has power. Actually, the waist drum troupe was just an idea the New York students came up with. We often participate in ordinary community parades, and we wanted to show the world's people the ordinary side of a Dafa disciple's life. Every time they were in a parade they had Tang Dynasty costumes, celestial maidens, and so on, so they wondered, “Can we come up with something else?” And thus the idea of a waist drum troupe came about. We can use a variety of forms, so if you have an idea and think it's doable, that's okay, too.

Question: No matter the circumstances, we will all be steadfast in Dafa, and will always follow Master, each step of the way, to complete our mission of validating the Fa.

Teacher: Yes, as Dafa disciples, all of you here might have that thought, and that's why there have been huge changes in the situation of validating the Fa in this world, that's why the evil has shrunk today, and that's why we can save sentient beings. *(Applause)*

Question: I think some students in Australia aren't following the Fa but following people and just going along with the crowd, and they're disrupting the Fa-rectification and our effort to save the world's people. And there are some students who like to monopolize things and when they're not able to

accomplish something they won't openly tell everyone. They don't discuss things with everyone and don't do things transparently. Other people think they're doing grand and amazing things, when in fact they didn't accomplish anything substantial, and they won't tell everyone that they have wasted precious time. They squeeze out those students who actually do things.

Teacher: I know about Australia's situation. Some students' human attachments are still quite strong. Master is looking to see when you can all step out of self.

Question: If an ordinary people's organization doesn't let us participate in a parade under Dafa's name, can we use another name or should we just not participate at all?

Teacher: If that's the case of course we can't participate. Are Dafa disciples joining them for fun? Dafa disciples came to save sentient beings, so [we join parades] to show Dafa to the world's people and let them know that Dafa is here. If they won't let us do that, then of course we won't participate. But not participating isn't a solution—why won't they let us [use Dafa's name]? You should go talk to them, and you can clarify the truth. If they have an underlying political motive, then we can also resolve it via legal means; no matter how long it takes, it needs to be resolved on a fundamental level.

Question: With regard to the media run by Dafa disciples, in most Asian regions they haven't developed as fast as in North America. How can we do these kinds of work better?

Teacher: Just do things according to the resources you have available and your current setting and situation. Master doesn't force you to do anything and can't direct you that specifically. With validating the Fa, *you* are walking your own paths, and I can't sit here and say that you have to achieve certain things, for each situation is different. Do things based on your situation locally.

Question: Over the past two years only a small number of students have been coming to the practice site to do the exercises. Is it true that the students overseas can all do the exercises at home?

Teacher: Of course not. Actually, I know that the biggest reason is that our students have taken on a lot of concrete work to clarify the truth, and because they're so busy they have less time to come out and do the exercises. If that's the case it is normal. But if it's not, then it's abnormal. Find out more from those students who aren't coming out.

Question: Japanese disciples have been interfered with during their recent activities. What should we do?

Teacher: Japan... well, wherever a problem comes along, that's where you should go to clarify the truth. The Japanese spirit is to not give up until something is achieved. Dafa is good for people on all accounts, and wherever we go to clarify the truth, we are actually spreading the seeds of Goodness (*Shan*), clearing away the bad factors there, and bringing blessings to the lives there. People have a side that's aware. With a lot of things, when everyone cooperates with each other they'll go better. I hope that you can focus less attention and energy on who has done well and who hasn't, who's good and who's bad, or how this or that person is—focus all of your attention and spend all of your energy on validating the Fa. (*Applause*) When all of you can cooperate with each other and do well in the things to validate the Fa, that's when you establish your mighty-virtue. When you are commenting on who's good and who's bad, gods won't even look you straight on.

Of course, some people do have problems and should be criticized. We should resolve the problem out of a sense of responsibility for the Fa and do so with goodwill, making the Fa the first priority, and should absolutely avoid using an ordinary human's approach.

Question: *I'm a disciple from Korea. Some fellow cultivators want to know whether it's appropriate for some of the fellow cultivators who run a media outlet to be getting paid salaries.*

Teacher: Here's what I told people at the start: I said that Dafa disciples did a good job setting up media outlets, and that you need to reach the society, get into a positive cycle, become financially independent, become just like regular media outlets where you're able to pay salaries and to meet their living needs so that they can work for it full-time—which would of course be great—and become mainstream media outlets. But until you reach that point and have funds for salaries, paying salaries with money contributed by our students is absolutely not allowed. While others are putting out for Dafa, could you be getting something for it? As a Dafa disciple you should just pitch in what you can—be it money, effort, or whatnot. If you can truly operate [like other media outlets] in society, and become profitable and pay salaries, then even if it's not a lot, everybody can get a share, and when there's more money you can share more. If you then have more profits and can reach the level of the going salary, then Master will be happy for you. So, the condition is that before you reach that point you can't pay salaries using contributions from our students.

Question: The newspaper project has taken up more than fifty people. How can we plan [our resources] better? This has affected other projects.

Teacher: You need to coordinate these things well. The newspaper is in its early stages, so it does need help from a lot of people, but try not to waste human resources. Fifty-some people is too much, because you have to consider the fact that each person needs to walk his own path and do other things. At the beginning stage of running a newspaper things might be pretty hard, and it takes some people, but don't have too many involved. You should coordinate these things well, because clarifying the truth in other settings is important, too.

Clarifying the truth directly and clarifying the truth via the media complement each other. You can't rely on just one way of clarifying the truth. As you've seen, right now there are a variety of ways, you have come up with a lot of approaches: the Internet, television, radio, distributing VCD's, telephone calls, letters, faxes, distributing literature, directly clarifying the truth in person, and the students in China do postering, and of course there are projects being done that jar the evil in different ways. You're using multiple forms together.

Question: The assistants and coordinators of various places in Korea have changed too frequently, and there's no principle being followed in appointing or removing someone. A lot of disciples who are proactively doing Fa-rectification cultivation and who are walking at the forefront were removed and replaced. Some people have already been appointed and removed twice. Some of those who were recently appointed only obtained the Fa a few months ago, and they're busy handling human affairs all day long. Master, would you please tell me if there is a general standard for the Dafa Association's appointments and removals? Is it appropriate for the Association Chair to just make the decision as he pleases?

Teacher: Now about this, I think I'll give a suggestion to our coordinators in Korea: so that our students may cultivate well, and in order for all students to mature in their cultivation, don't make all those changes, as it actually dampens students' enthusiasm. Another thing is, if you're constantly switching people like that, you are replacing students before they have matured through the tempering [effect] of Dafa work, and then the next one who's assigned is again replaced before he matures. Dafa work is different from any kind of human work. You are finding your way through uncharted waters. Figure out how Dafa disciples' assistants and coordinators in different regions should do their work and temper themselves to maturity, and help them to mature. No mundane bureaucrat's or leader's ways suit Dafa cultivation, so we have to find our own way and allow everyone to be tempered.

Of course, if the coordinators are really thinking in the interest of the students and doing so based on the Fa, and trying to help that person remove his attachment to being a leader, I won't oppose it. But if

that's not the case then you shouldn't do it the way you are. On the coordinator's part, if you're thinking, "I'll appoint whoever listens to me, and if someone doesn't we'll have him removed," then that's being irresponsible to Dafa, and that approach isn't fit for Dafa work. A coordinator should often exchange thoughts with students, see himself as one of the students, and have a "let's do things well together" attitude. When students come to know you well the Dafa work will get done faster and better.

This isn't criticism. I'm just suggesting that you discuss things with others. So as for our students, you should help our coordinators out more. And as for our coordinators, you should really increase the communication with our students—more students and a wider range of students. Make sure you don't pose as some kind of leader. That's not criticism. I'm just teaching you a little know-how. (*Applause*)

So as for Korea's Dafa disciples, a lot of times you've actually done a great job, and a lot of Dafa disciples there have cultivated well. Whenever I see you do well, and, in particular, whenever you cooperate with each other as a whole and have a great impact, the multitude of gods praise you. And you've played an important role clarifying the truth and opposing the persecution. Capitalize on your strengths and put to use the righteous thoughts of Dafa disciples, and do even better. Your doing well in and of itself scares the evil. Master hopes that the coordinators will lead all of the students well, and hopes that the Dafa disciples will mature more fully.

Question: I want to wholly and completely assimilate to Dafa, solidly and diligently advance with purity, put forth my best effort with the three things, and not let down Master, who has mercifully and laboriously saved us.

Teacher: If all of you have this understanding, we'll manage to do our tasks well. You mentioned how Master has mercifully and laboriously saved you, but if you ask me, I'd say you are the amazing ones, having come to where you are today. (*Applause*)

Just yesterday I talked about something: Do you know what kind of students I was faced with at the beginning? Whether it was in Mainland China or other regions, there were a lot of students who, the first time they entered the lecture hall, I'd look out at the audience and see them with all kinds of worldviews that they'd formed among ordinary people, and hardly any of them truly had their own thoughts or could look at things with clear minds. Many people were wavering, and even when they said that Dafa was great it wasn't from the heart. Add onto that all those notions they had, and some people had learned all kinds of *qigong*—so many it became addictive. Could those people cultivate into gods? As you can imagine, they were miles away. But making it to where you are today, for you to accomplish that much today, that's truly magnificent.

Of course, as your Master, what kind of people do I have the highest regard for? Actually, gods see it the same way: someone whose thinking is clear—and I'm not referring to people who are cunning or clever in a trivial way, that's not what I mean, [I'm talking about] someone who has his own righteous thoughts, has his own thinking, who thinks with his mind, and isn't influenced by any foreign messages. His head isn't foggy, and he's not [like some people], where when others say something is good, they say it's good, and if others say something is bad, they say it's bad, as if they have no identity. But today, what I see is that you're all rational and calm, and you do things on an even keel. The truth is, you're no longer one of the ordinary human beings, and you couldn't even go back anymore, you really can't. (*Applause*) The difference between you and ordinary people has grown downright large.

Question: Do the old forces know about the law of mutual-generation and mutual-inhibition?

Teacher: Of course they do. Aren't the old forces an expression of godhood?

Question: Master, you talked about how a lot of gods wanted to reincarnate as humans but that there

weren't enough human skins, so a lot of plants and animals are them. Since animals can't obtain the Fa, is it true that they can only assimilate to the Fa?

Teacher: Yes, that's true, but the premise is that their attitude toward Dafa has to be positive. Back when I was spreading the Fa, to ensure that in the future cosmos this Fa would never fail or wither, I had to walk a straight path, and so I set the rule that animals could not obtain the Fa. Long ago it was also the case that animals weren't allowed to obtain the Fa. And then over the ages, gradually everything began to deviate, and animals were allowed to cultivate, and gradually more and more animals cultivated. So back when I was spreading the Fa and I laid down that animals were not to cultivate in Dafa, whoa, my goodness, all the many realms raised a ruckus. But still, rules are rules. If an animal wants to obtain the Fa, you can reincarnate as a human and I will give you the chance. In any case, today you've arrived at this world, and in Fa-rectification, regardless of whether you're an animal, plant, or any kind of thing, I just look at your attitude toward Dafa. For those who are positive toward Dafa, I can resolve everything. The most common scenario is that I have it return to wherever it came from after it assimilates. I can resolve the issue. Animals aren't allowed to directly cultivate in Dafa, as that would be disrespectful to Dafa.

Question: In this final stage of Fa-rectification, we have a fellow cultivator whose family member (also a fellow cultivator) is going through karma elimination so severely that he requires IV's. As a result, they can't smoothly do work to validate the Fa, and they are affecting each other. I'd like to ask revered Master, does this stem from their own problem or interference?

Teacher: For cultivators, nothing is by chance. Usually it's related to the cultivator's process of improving. If it's a new student or somebody who is not diligent, then that situation will come along when he doesn't pass a test well. But if severe interference like that happens while Dafa disciples are validating the Fa, then it must be dark minions or rotten demons persecuting us. Send righteous thoughts to eliminate them. New students or students who aren't diligent enough, you should watch and examine yourselves more with respect to this.

Question: Recently, a coalition for freedom of speech and human rights hosted a symposium in Tokyo on the current state of human rights in China and the global effort to bring Jiang to justice. Someone from the Japanese Falun Gong Association gave a speech at the conference, and other speakers included those from the global rescue effort and the Global Coalition to Bring Jiang to Justice. Some fellow cultivators feel that this course of action wasn't quite proper.

Teacher: You can't look at it that way. We should recognize the fact that ordinary people came to support us, and so hadn't we better attend? That'd be like the world's people wanting to validate Fa but us not affirming it. We're restraining the persecution and exposing it, and when ordinary people are involved that doesn't mean we're getting involved in politics. When I was spreading the Fa, I didn't look at the organization, and I didn't look at forms, I only looked at people's hearts. It doesn't matter what organization it is, as long as it's not the criminal underworld or one of those horribly base or corrupt ones, if it approaches us to support Dafa, we should give people a chance to validate the Fa—didn't we come here to save all beings? Even if it's individuals from those really bad groups I just mentioned who have the heart to come validate Dafa, then you should still give them a chance to, right?

But there's one thing to keep in mind: Dafa disciples absolutely can't go and participate in some [political] thing ordinary people put together—insofar as it has nothing to do with our Falun Gong, you can't participate in it. But if people are organizing something to support Falun Gong, then it wouldn't be right if we didn't go.

Question: In Zhuan Falun the dot on the Taiji is either blue, red, or black, but what's printed on some materials is white. Is that wrong?

Teacher: Actually, you know, the colors in the cosmos's dimensions—red, orange, yellow, green, blue, indigo, and violet—they change. The Taiji is a symbol that reflects the Daoist view of the cosmos, and so we can only say it is a symbol that represents the Daoist system. For example, the black-red and indigo-red types that I've talked about have the form of the Daoist system. With regard to the Taiji's opening, I investigated it further, and it should be transparent, white, that is—the openings of both types of Taiji are white. Actually, it's only an emblem in its manifest form.

Question: My child calls himself a Dafa disciple, and he likes the Fa, tells others about the Fa, and clarifies the truth. But he won't take it upon himself to study the Fa or do the exercises. If I require him to, is that inappropriate?

Teacher: If the child is very young you can't force him. When a child is very young he follows what adults do. When he's older and can study the Fa by reading the books on his own, then he will be cultivating on his own.

Question: I feel that there are still some fellow cultivators in Singapore who often think about Dafa with human notions. (Teacher: Yes) How can we resolve this problem?

Teacher: Yes, with anything Dafa disciples do, they should do it based on the Fa and think about things in terms of the Fa. There are indeed some students whose human attachments are too strong, and there are some that have done bad things behind people's backs. I'm watching all that.

Question: When I cleanse myself before thinking of the word "Mie" to eliminate the evil, can I think of the word "Chu"?¹⁵

Teacher: Just do as I tell you to. No matter what you come up with, what I ask you to do is definitely the most powerful. (*Applause*) Some students' righteous thoughts are always lacking, and whenever they get big-headed they come up with something different. That's when you'll be used by demons, and you will go astray and have problems. Those who have gone wrong didn't go wrong overnight. They slowly began like that.

Question: All of Hong Kong's students send their regards to Master. How should Dafa disciples handle activities organized by ordinary people that have political or other agendas?

Teacher: What ordinary people do has nothing to do with us. But when ordinary people support us by opposing the persecution of Falun Gong, or when they oppose China's suppression of human rights, you can't say that it has nothing to do with Falun Gong. In Hong Kong, at this time, when ordinary people invite us to be a part of things that are related to us, and if it's peaceful and rational, then we can participate. I'm only saying that *Hong Kong* can participate. If it has nothing to do with us and isn't related at all, then we can't participate. You need to be clear about this.

Last time when they were opposing Article 23, for example, when there was that grand and dynamic event, didn't they do it for Falun Gong? (*Teacher laughs*) And after that took place, democracy activists, people from various community groups, people in political circles, and many people from mainstream society began carefully looking into Falun Gong. And that's why I think Hong Kong's general public has a clear understanding of Falun Gong now. Of course, as the saying goes, "an announcement posted everywhere still can't make the illiterate aware," so there are still some that are left out for sure, there are still people who don't know the truth for sure, and that's why you need to keep doing things to clarify the truth.

Question: How can Hong Kong play a better role using media to validate the Fa?

¹⁵ Translator's note: This is a similar word that means "get rid of," "eliminate," or "remove."

Teacher: The newspaper needs to gradually get into a positive cycle in society and become a mainstream media outlet. The media outlet run by Dafa disciples will definitely become mainstream media. (*Applause*) Not only will it become mainstream media, but in the future it will be the world's biggest media outlet. (*Applause*) In fact, the framework for the newspaper you run is already the largest. Take a media outlet in any country, and it only covers the countries in that region. No matter how big the country is, it's still only a national media outlet, even though the newspapers can be distributed in other countries. And none of them have that much influence.

In the past, some Chinese-language newspapers did have a wide distribution, but a lot of them were bought off later on, and now they've lost their sense of justice and don't dare to report the truth. If someone wants to see truthful reports he has to read the media that you run.

Li Hongzhi

April 12, 2004 in New York

Master's Comment on a Student's Article

All Dafa disciples, whether they are in Mainland China or other parts of the world, should, with the approaches they take to counter the persecution, keep close in mind the safety of Mainland China's Dafa disciples. All actions that jeopardize Dafa disciples' safety should be stopped.

Li Hongzhi

May 31, 2004

Revised on October 8, 2005

Teaching the Fa at the 2004 Chicago Conference

Good afternoon! (*People reply, "Good afternoon, Master!"*)

I've said before that when the overall Fa-rectification moves forward and eliminates the evil, and when you help people become more and more clear about us as you clarify the facts, that's when the evil beings become fewer and fewer. Although the old forces no longer exist, the things they arranged in the Three Realms are still having an effect. So in other words, even though the evil beings left now are few, and today the world's people as a whole are rapidly awakening, the evil still won't quit just like that. So during this time, before the evil beings are ultimately and completely eliminated, they still play a role and they are still that evil—it's just that their power has diminished now and there are fewer places where they can do evil.

At present, in addition to a Dafa disciple's own, personal cultivation, you need to do a large amount of things to clarify the facts. So I think that for Dafa disciples clarifying the facts has become a unique way of cultivation for you cultivators today. This has never, ever happened before. And it can be called Dafa disciples' magnificent feat of validating the Fa and saving sentient beings during the Fa-rectification. You know, in the past when people cultivated they only sought their own Consummation. But the things Dafa disciples have in front of them are major. You know, I've said many times that none of the people in today's world have a simple background. If none of them have a simple background, then the people that you save, the lives that you save, the sentient beings that you save are not ordinary beings, and it's not something an ordinary cultivator could do. Only Dafa disciples of today's Fa-rectification period are able to do that as they validate the Fa, only they are worthy of doing that, and only they are allowed to do that. So what I'm saying is, the historic responsibility you shoulder is significant, and you are laying the foundation for the future.

You know, the work being done by the Fa-rectification on everything in the cosmos is in its final stage. But in this Three Realms very very final, higher-level beings still exist, and their existence is having a separating effect, and so the evil [beings] are still able to do evil in the world. Even though the Three Realms is minute compared to the enormous cosmos, it corresponds to it, similar to how the focal point of the cosmos would. Although this Earth is minute, and although who we are dealing with are beings at the lowest level of the cosmos—human beings who are similar to gods and have the outer appearances of gods—and even the way you cultivate is one where you begin from the lowest method of cultivation in the cosmos, you have enormous missions.

As Dafa disciples have clarified the facts you have saved many beings who were supposed to be saved, but it's not enough. In fact, so far, what you've accomplished is still limited, and in terms of numbers the proportion is still quite small. The Dafa disciples in Mainland China, in particular, have the greatest responsibility. The main body of Dafa disciples is in China, so the Dafa disciples there should do even

better; through lessons learned they should become more rational and more clearheaded, and do things more righteously; they should allow more sentient beings to be saved; and they should have the effect of the main body of Dafa disciples. Everything the Dafa disciples in other regions do revolves around the main body of Dafa in Mainland China, and is restraining the evil's persecution, lessening the pressure for the Dafa disciples in Mainland China, and helping the Dafa disciples in Mainland China to clarify the facts. Overall, looking at the situation of Dafa disciples validating the Fa as a whole, in the Fa-rectification period Dafa disciples have basically played the role of Dafa disciples.

Of course, there are still a small number of people that are exceptions, and there have always been people who aren't diligent, because, after all, there are three different situations with Dafa disciples. The first one is where they made an agreement early on with Master to come here, and the second one is where they formed a karmic connection in history—the people who formed a karmic connection with me in different historical periods. And the third group are those who came in when I imparted the Fa this time and had the door wide open; they had a good base, and seemed pretty good and like they could make it. But in actuality, how they have acted hasn't been that satisfactory. Even today there are people whose conduct in their personal lives is not at all that of a cultivator; as for people like that, no matter how many things you do, you can't Consummate. While [Dafa disciples] clarify the facts, [some people] squander the money Dafa disciples have scrimped and saved for making materials. I have always taught you to think of others first in everything you do, but does that even cross your mind when you use Dafa disciples' money or possessions? The evil takes advantage of the slightest gap and glares menacingly at every single word and action of yours. Whatever you're attached to, that's what the evil beings will strengthen, and when your mind is off they will make you irrational. Everyone is putting out for Dafa, and yet some people shamelessly ask for compensation from other students. Are you cultivating? Who are you negotiating terms with? Why do you come across as nothing like a cultivator? And how are you going to establish a cultivator's mighty-virtue? Do you think Master is leading you in some ordinary people's political thing? There are also people who haven't been clearheaded or calm, they aren't mindful of security matters, and even less so are they mindful of other people's safety. Back when this [third] group of students joined the ranks of Dafa disciples, it was known that, when they experienced trials, when they experienced tribulations, and as their enormous karma was reduced and eliminated, their tests would be severe; but it wasn't known at that time whether they would be able to make it. Of course, that group of irrational people is small.

Looking at the current situation, I think most of them are basically okay, but there are still ones who aren't, who look at the Fa in a human way, look at the persecution of Dafa disciples in a human way, and look at the three things that Dafa disciples should do in a human way. And especially when it comes to informing people about the facts, there are still many people who aren't making it a priority. Here I'm mainly talking about the students in Mainland China. Some people's righteous thoughts are still inadequate and they aren't able to make a priority of informing people about the facts. And during the persecution some people have even had a very bad impact; sometimes they're with it but after a while they get foggy-headed again. Human beings... no matter where you come from, and no matter what kind of a base you have, once you come to this human place you have entered a world of delusion, and it is indeed hard for someone to step out of this phony state of a human society and this phony culture created by the old forces. But at the same time each being is not entirely in delusion, as he still has a side of him that's aware and still has the fundamental base of his being that's founded on his own, inborn, original nature. All these things can have a positive effect and should have a very good effect. In other words, you should have righteous thoughts. In terms of how people have done in reality, I see that some people have performed very poorly. But you know, what has Master come here for? In terms of the Fa-rectification my purpose is none other than to save all beings, and that includes the world's people, the people on earth. (*Applause*) So [I] have *got to* save those who can be saved. How I

look at things is different from how you or the world's people do. When a human being sees someone make a mistake he finds it almost unforgivable. But I don't look at things that way. I look at an entire being overall, and even when there's just one thread of hope, I'll give him hope. (*Applause*)

Some everyday people say, "Doesn't your master have great abilities? Why doesn't he do such and such?" Things are not like what they think. People's True Thoughts determine who of them is to be weeded out, and yes, they can be destroyed in the turn of a hand. But what have I come here for? Why have I endured so much for all beings? [If I did things that way,] wouldn't I have done all of that in vain? A being on earth corresponds to the cosmos and corresponds to major things, so this is a focal point, and when a person sins it is not a matter of one person sinning—think about it, it could very well involve a gigantic cosmic system. If that's the case, then when one being is destroyed perhaps a gigantic cosmic system is destroyed. And in some cases it goes beyond this, because if a being on earth has committed sins, then [what about] those who have used him, who arranged it, who have manipulated him, who instigated it, whose factors were playing a role... what's involved is not just one cosmic body, or two cosmic bodies, but gigantic cosmic bodies, which are all responsible for it. This is the cosmos's law! And this is a fundamental standard by which the cosmos's Fa-rectification positions all beings. When someone has done bad things at this human place, if you just go after the human being, the human being can't bear the full responsibility, and no matter to what extent you destroy him he can't bear the full responsibility, as it's not a simple matter of a human being having sinned—it results from having the factors of high-level beings involved.

But on the other hand, if the person's righteous thoughts truly come forth and he becomes clearheaded, then when he wants to do something, the high-level beings will look at that side of a person as well. If a person truly wants to do good things, then nobody has the right to make him commit sins, and whoever does that will be cast down. When a being's main body can have a positive effect, then even if in history that being had become bad, his sins can be reduced, because the Fa-rectification criterion for the entire cosmos is to look at a being's stance towards the Fa-rectification. The overall state of the human beings on the earth is controlled by higher realms, so human beings' attitudes are, [in turn,] affecting those higher realms and even higher levels.

Many students have the ability to see some scenes and situations, but actually, let me tell you that all of those are specific manifestations of certain beings at different levels in the enormous cosmos—they are all manifestations of those different lives' and different gods' individual beings. But what's most important are the manifestations of their enormous Main Body Kings, who usually know much of the true situation and whose manifestations are different from those of their specific beings. That's why what some students see are not the manifestations of the Main Bodies. So for our Dafa disciples, clarifying the facts in actuality far transcends your personal cultivation. Your personal cultivation only makes for the fulfillment of one being, yet the role that you serve in saving sentient beings makes for the fulfillment of a great multitude of Main-Body beings, boundless numbers of beings, and even greater cosmic bodies—that's how big what you are shouldering is!

Of course, we don't acknowledge any of the things that the old forces arranged—I as your master don't acknowledge them, and Dafa disciples of course don't acknowledge them either. (*Applause*) But after all, they did do what they wanted to do, so there's all the more reason for Dafa disciples to do even better and cultivate themselves well in the course of saving all beings. When you encounter ordeals during your cultivation, you have got to cultivate yourself and look at yourself—that doesn't mean acknowledging the ordeals arranged by the old forces and trying to do well amidst the ordeals they've arranged, that's not the case. We negate even the very emergence of the old forces and everything that they've arranged; we don't even acknowledge their existence. We're fundamentally negating all of their things, and all of, and only, the things you do while negating and getting rid of them is mighty-virtue.

It's not that you're cultivating amidst the ordeals they created. Rather, you are to walk your own path well while not acknowledging them, not even acknowledging the elimination of their ordeals' manifestations. (*Applause*) So looking at it from this angle, what we need to do is completely negate the old forces. Dafa disciples and I don't even acknowledge the manifestations of their last-ditch efforts.

There's a law in the cosmos that all of you know about, and that is, all beings have to bear responsibility for all the good consequences and bad consequences they've brought about throughout history. In eliminating all of the persecution arranged by the old forces, how much Dafa disciples put in is how much they'll get out. Even an average, ordinary being will, after bearing responsibility for the good things and the bad things, be rendered in the future everything he accumulated. All of the persecution and pain that Dafa disciples have been subjected to during this persecution will result in greater glory being bestowed upon Dafa disciples in history's future. That kind of glory is something that has never existed for any of the beings in the cosmos since the beginning of time, because Dafa disciples are disciples forged by Dafa during the Fa-rectification period and they are part of the Fa-rectification. This affair itself has raised Dafa disciples to a very high position. What's more, they are Dafa disciples who are directly saved by Master.

This affair itself brings a great deal of honor, so Dafa disciples need to be worthy of such an honor. But now that Master said that, don't go and act like you've again realized something, and then some of you might immediately stop doing everything else and focus solely on, and do nothing but, Dafa things. In that case you might then be used by the old forces, because what they are doing is taking advantage of your gaps. Today, what I'm telling Dafa disciples to do is to cultivate among ordinary people in a way that conforms to ordinary people as much as possible. You can't go to extremes. Just go about things steadily like that and fully play the role of a Dafa disciple as you validate the Fa. You have many, many challenges; in addition to doing well in things to validate Dafa, in this world you also need to maintain relationships with other people, with your family, and in society. It *is* hard. It's hard, but that is the path that a Dafa disciple must take.

I said long ago that I'm doing this in two steps. If I were to complete this in one step, then the tribulation would have been a global one. There would be billions of Dafa disciples obtaining the Fa, but there would also be many playing a negative role; it would be at least in the hundreds of millions, and that would have made this tribulation worldwide. If this were done that way then the whole world would be caught up in it and no one could escape it. Every single person, every single being, would have to position himself in that one round—those who can cultivate, those who can step forward, those who oppose it, those who have different views... they would all be positioning themselves. Then if you had billions of people who came all at once to cultivate in Dafa, if this approach to cultivation weren't used, then when you'd have billions of people leaving the secular world to devote themselves to cultivation, that'd be a disaster for human society, and it would be irresponsible to mankind and to the Fa at this level. Although I separated it into two steps and those things didn't happen, won't there be masses of people cultivating Dafa in the future? Well this approach to cultivation may just be the path left for the future masses of cultivators.

In terms of Dafa disciples' responsibilities, there are still many things that need to be done in greater depth, especially clarifying the facts. Doing a better job of informing people about the facts more deeply is tied to the people of the future obtaining the Fa, tied to all beings being rescued, tied to negating the old forces, tied to eliminating the evil and this persecution, and tied to your own Consummation. In fact, some students haven't really done too well all along; many Mainland students are still making all kinds of excuses for not stepping forward; and there are some who have been "transformed," they are ashamed of it, but then they're embarrassed and can't lift up their head and step

forward, and they are discouraged. And then there are a number of people who are like this: they too haven't stepped forward all along, but have been hiding at home and reading [Dafa] books, and have even been making excuses for doing that, when the truth is, it's their fear at work. I hope that the other Dafa disciples in Mainland China will help these people and ask them to step forward and do what a Dafa disciple should do. This thing hasn't ended yet, so for any being it still presents an opportunity and a chance.

The way gods see it, saving sentient beings is absolutely not something done in a manner like in human society, where after someone makes some mistakes human means are used to correct him. Gods are merciful and have the greatest capacity to forgive, and they are truly responsible to beings, instead of focusing on a person's actions at a given time. That's because gods awaken a being at a fundamental level, and enliven a being's Buddha-nature at a fundamental level. So looking at things from this perspective, you still need to step up your clarifying the facts some, and still need to do it in greater depth, do it better, and do it more solidly; you absolutely can't just go through the motions. Only when you do it earnestly can you save that many people. So no matter what excuses a small number of people and some people with ulterior motives in Mainland China use to stop the [Dafa] students from informing people of the facts, they are interfering, and it's the evil using human beings to interfere with you. People who do that either have a crooked understanding or have been used by the evil, or it's a case where some people with ulterior motives are playing a negative role. Clarifying the facts is something you *must* do, and you must do it to the end. It's not something we do according to the old forces' arrangements; we completely negate everything of the old forces.

There's another thing I want to talk about. As you know, as Dafa disciples continually cultivate themselves while they validate the Fa, many bad things that were formed among everyday people have been gradually removed during your cultivation process, but some things have only been reduced, while many things have truly been removed. So the things that have been reduced aren't completely removed. There's a reason you can't get rid of them completely yet, and it's to allow you folks, before you Consummate, to live in ordinary society, to save sentient beings in ordinary society, and to do the things that a Dafa disciple should do today. But since these attachments will often show up in your cultivation and your life, they show up in your words and actions in different settings, and can even show up in every single thought of yours during your daily life. When you're affected by a human attachment, then at that moment, or for that short while, or on that matter, your behavior is the same as an ordinary person's. If you often fail to follow the requirements for a Dafa disciple, a cultivator, then aren't you an ordinary person?

It's fine to have those human things—when you are able to restrain them in your actions, strengthen your resolve, firm up your righteous thoughts, and handle yourself well, then *that's* cultivation. Without those things it wouldn't count as cultivation. It's exactly because you have those little things that you're able to cultivate yourself and strengthen your resolve in the process, and when you are able to cultivate yourself in this complicated environment and amidst this persecution, you demonstrate even more the greatness of a Dafa disciple. That's how these things work. But if you're not careful then a lot of times they will make you come across as very attached.

In fact, as Dafa disciples validate the Fa, a lot of times they argue among themselves in order to do well informing people about the truth and in other Dafa disciples' things. You've seen how some students have acted, their human attachments are quite strong, and some students are easily affected by their human attachments. I've noticed a situation for a long time now, but I haven't discussed it with you because the things you do to inform people about the facts and the other things you do to validate the Fa are all very important, so I didn't want them to be watered down by this, and that's why I haven't discussed it in all this time. Have you noticed that a lot of our students can't take criticism from others?

As soon as they are criticized they get mad and aren't able to take it. These things stick out pretty badly now. Think about it carefully. You can't even take criticism from me, your master. Today you all know that Master is truly doing things for your sake and has been speaking about the Fa to you with compassion. If I were to change my demeanor and talk to you bluntly, immediately you wouldn't be able to take it, really. Some people say, "No matter how Master puts it to me I'll be able to take it." That's what *you* think. Your cultivation has to be solid and sound, so you must truly meet the standard.

You know, why is it that many things, many attachments, can't be removed just like that? Why is it so hard? I've always told you that particles make up particles level by level from the microcosm all the way to surface matter. If you took a look in the extreme microcosm at the material formed by what your mind is attached to, [you'd see that] they are mountains, huge mountains, made of hard, granite-like rock, and once they are formed there's simply no way for a human being to move them. You know, in the cases of many cultivators in the past it was their subordinate soul that was cultivating, their masters couldn't do anything at all about those things, and that's why in their cultivation there was just no way they could keep this body. It's because they couldn't get rid of those big mountains, they couldn't take down those big mountains. They could only try to restrain them—restrain them while they were in concentration (*ding*) or in a state of no-thoughts—not let them have an effect during their current lifetime, and not let those thoughts arise during their cultivation. That was all they could do. They tried their best to prevent the side of them that can be Enlightened through cultivation from being affected, [they tried to] avoid getting so bad that they'd stir up those attachments, as those bad effects could make their cultivation fail and make them drop down—they tried to prevent things from getting that bad. That's why at a certain time when they were able to reach Consummation they would hurriedly discard this body. They couldn't delay for even a second.

When a cultivator doesn't want to get rid of his attachments, quite often his excuse is, "When other people criticize me, I don't want to hear it, but if Master says something to me I'll want to hear it." But if Master said something to you, would that big mountain of yours just be gone by itself? Would that hard rock just dissolve without cultivation? If I did that for you then it wouldn't count as you cultivating, so I can't do that, and you yourself have to cultivate it away. There are many things that you can't do but that Master can. And so how does Master do them? It's not like as soon as we come into contact I'll remove them. When your righteous thoughts are firm and when you can repel those things, I remove them for you bit by bit; however much you can do, that's how much I remove for you and diminish for you. (*Applause*) But since you're a cultivator, you have to truly hold yourself to the requirements for a cultivator. Even though sometimes you still can't quite get there yet, you've got to at least have those righteous thoughts, and you've got to cultivate yourselves.

Right now a lot of students don't recognize [these problems] at all. With Master not having addressed this type of issue for a while, a lot of people are really indulging these things. I talked about these things in *Zhuan Falun* long ago, and they are things a cultivator needs to take care of right at the beginning. "Not hitting back when attacked, and not talking back when insulted" is not just something you say, rather, you should be completely unaffected, and it's something you come to understand from the Fa. I've told you to study the Fa a lot, to study the Fa, study the Fa, study the Fa... When you don't give weight to Fa-study, those things are bound to be indulged. You don't want to hear displeasing things, you only want to hear pleasing things, and [you say or act like] "I can't stand it when other people irritate me." Think about it, everyone, isn't it ordinary people who, living in the ordinary world, care about enjoying those pleasing things and who enjoy hearing pleasing words? You're a cultivator, so do you want those ordinary things? Let me tell you, since you're cultivators and you're among ordinary people, you just have to listen to those displeasing words, and you have to be able to listen to those displeasing words. (*Applause*) Otherwise, when you haven't even resolved this most basic cultivation issue, how could you call yourself a Dafa disciple?

You're a cultivator, so why is it that sometimes you have lengthy arguments where you refuse to give ground? Why do you always say it's because of other people's attitudes? Why is it that whenever someone else says something you're affected? Aren't you supposed to remain unaffected even when someone verbally assaults you? Many of the factors that contribute to a conflict are caused by that thing at work. Whenever someone hits on that thing you become rash and worked up, your heart even starts to pound, and at that moment you don't think of being responsible to the Fa but just get angry and can't get over it. Some people always insist, "My, how come that person always has such an attitude? Why is he like that with everyone?" And there are some people who say, "Well nobody thinks too highly of him." But if you ask me, your master, you're all wrong. When none of you are attached anymore to wanting to hear pleasing things, when none of you are affected when you're insulted, see if he'll still be like that. Exactly because you people have those attachments, there exist factors that hit on your attachments; and exactly because those attachments of yours are stirred up, you get irritated; when all of you have those attachments, the situation where everyone is irritated by the person who hit on their attachments comes about. If you can all keep a calm and steady state of mind while being assaulted by strong words, and you're not at all affected, then see if those factors still exist.

Didn't I tell you that nothing that happens to a cultivator is by accident? Haven't I told you many times that a cultivator should stay unaffected? Today Master just has a flesh body appearance in the human world, but Master has many, many abilities, and I have countless Law Bodies, and all of them are resolving the things that should be resolved for Dafa disciples, they're resolving Fa-rectification related matters during the Fa-rectification, and doing many, many things. But none of that manifests here. What I've been telling you, though, are upright principles, Fa-truths of the cosmos, and Fa that creates Great Enlightened Beings. You're a Dafa disciple, so what should you seek and what should you cultivate? Have you even forgotten these most basic, simplest things?

Yes, you are clarifying the facts, are busy doing a lot of things, and there are many things to do; that has demonstrated the extraordinary side of Dafa disciples. But don't forget to cultivate away the most basic things! It's not like "at the critical moment I'll be good enough"—that's not necessarily true. A conflict always arrives when you don't expect it, so at a critical moment you might not be good enough, because it's not like what you think, nor is it something you can just say. Just like when you cultivate Buddhahood, you might say, "When I really get up there I guarantee you I'll be good enough, and I won't be attached to anything." But how are you going to be good enough when those factors of yours are still there? You won't be, and it's because this is how a being is made. A stone is a stone no matter where you place it, and a piece of gold is a piece of gold no matter where you place it.

You all know that during your cultivation, even when you don't specifically think about something, bad thoughts come up on their own. And why is that? Isn't it because that thing is there? When any conflict arises or anything happens, I've told you that not only should the two parties in the conflict look for reasons on their part, even any third party should think about himself—why are you the one who observed it? When you are a direct party in the conflict, that's even more the case, but why won't you cultivate yourself?

Today I brought this up because I felt it was time for me to address it, so I thought I'd use this opportunity. Now that I've talked about that, you need to be mindful of it and should take it seriously. Make your actions as Dafa disciples validating the Fa more sacred, and don't act like ordinary people. When an ordinary person does Dafa things he only accumulates blessings, but the things Dafa disciples do to validate the Fa are meritorious contributions, so you should Consummate yourself well.

I'll talk about another issue. You know, many things of Dafa disciples will be left for the future; they won't necessarily be left for human beings, perhaps they'll be left somewhere in the cosmos. Since you are validating the Fa, you are exploring whether you can do certain things in certain ways, and are

blazing a path for the future. Even though these things manifest here on the earth, at this human place, if you magnify them [you'll see that] in different realms they manifest in other ways. Each Dafa disciple has to make and complete his own path, and your paths in cultivation are all different; in other words, each person's cultivation path is different. All of the future states of the various kinds of beings that are at different levels of the cosmos might manifest in you to a certain extent, so it all depends on whether the paths you yourselves walk in validating the Fa are straight, good, and will work. Factors this huge are involved.

Some of you have supernormal abilities while cultivating; some people can see things, and some people can use certain supernormal abilities. As I just said, everyone is walking on a different path that a Dafa disciple should walk, and the paths you make and complete will have an impact on the future of the cosmos. So there must be a reason for letting a certain Dafa disciple have supernormal abilities while he cultivates; it must be for the purpose of laying the foundation of something for the beings of the future. That's how enormous Dafa disciples' responsibilities are, that is, you have such important tasks on your shoulders! There are many things that I haven't told you about or don't want to tell you about fully, lest you develop all kinds of attachments.

If these people who have supernormal abilities while they cultivate don't walk their paths well, if they're interfered with today, they develop a crooked understanding tomorrow, and something gets them all in a frenzy and they can't tell up from down the day after tomorrow, then I'll tell you that you haven't walked well the path that's been arranged for you. Such a path has been arranged for you because there are such factors in the cosmos, which have been given to you, and you are entrusted to walk that path. Do you understand what I mean? (*Applause*) However, a small number of students who have supernormal abilities have failed to live up to their great missions and have not done well. They're smug about the little tiny abilities they have, and their problem even goes beyond showing off, they've even gone on a long detour, some of them have even developed crooked understandings, and still they haven't realized it! You have failed to live up to the great trust placed in you by the cosmos, and that's no minor thing. So, being a Dafa disciple you need to be mindful of every facet of things. When Dafa disciples look back at the path they have taken, [they'll see that] in different settings each person was walking his own path, and that there was a reason behind even the type of job you had in the human world, the lifestyle you had, etc.

The Fa I'm teaching here today applies to all students, and that includes those in Mainland China and those outside of Mainland China. These are problems that have arisen with the whole body. Dafa disciples have actually done very well while they validate the Fa during this time, and there are many specific things that I don't want to talk about, because I'll wait and let you see for yourselves those wonderful, amazing, and sacred things. At this time, as long as you can steadily do well with the three things that Dafa disciples are supposed to do, you will be able to make it through—you'll definitely be able to make it through. (*Applause*)

I'll say this again: I don't want to leave a single person behind. That's why Master's thinking is usually different from yours. Sometimes you think that certain people are iffy, certain people are unsavable, certain people are this or that... but my thinking is different from yours. You know, today I have opened the door for saving people so wide; the way things are in terms of jobs the sentient beings in human society have is such that people are doing all kinds of work, and I want to save each person. As long as someone has learned the Fa, I want to save him, I don't want to abandon those people. (*Applause*) When you Dafa disciples develop even stronger righteous thoughts among you, that will be what's most magnificent. Starting from each person, let's truly make our environment a very righteous one, and then all the unrighteous factors will dissolve, and all the students who haven't conducted themselves well will see where they fall short, and it will make them do better.

With human beings... when a being can obtain the Fa today in history, it's no ordinary thing—he's so fortunate! But as soon as he loses the Fa, do you know what he faces? It's really horrific, because when he fails to fulfill the major responsibilities and the huge missions that were bestowed upon him, then, accordingly, that's like the inverse of a being's Consummation, and he will truly have to enter the gate of no-life. You folks can't just go and abandon a person without trying hard enough. No matter what kind of mistakes someone has made, or what kind of a person he is, I still want to give him a chance. Of course, in human society there are, after all, a number of people who aren't good enough anymore, so just let them be. Today I'm mainly saying that our Dafa disciples need to do better, and we should cherish those who have obtained the Fa.

Those who haven't done well should think carefully about these things, and be sure not to take Master's mercy lightly. You don't have to believe me; you can go about things your own way. But I have repeatedly said that the fact that such a major thing has come about in human society, that such a massive number of people have done all that they have in society, and the fact that the Fa that I, Li Hongzhi, have taught is something that people throughout the ages always wanted to know about and wanted to obtain but couldn't, (*applause*) none of these things are by chance. Think it over calmly. Those who haven't done well, make sure you don't destroy your eternal life because of your irrationality and human attachments.

That's all I'm going to say today. Thank you. (*Long, enthusiastic applause*)

Li Hongzhi

May 23, 2004

To the Fa Conference in Montreal, Canada

Greetings! Through Dafa disciples' constant efforts over the last several years, and through your clarifying the truth, the world's people have become more and more clearheaded. You have saved more and more beings, and along with this have been establishing Dafa disciples' futures. This is commendable and worth congratulating.

In our Fa conferences you are continually summarizing [what you've experienced and learned]. While validating the Fa and putting into action how Dafa disciples should cultivate, you still have some shortcomings. Fully utilize the good things you've learned and strengthen your righteous thoughts, and doing so will allow you to do even better with Dafa disciples' things.

This Fa conference is a grand gathering of Dafa disciples, and it is a reflection of Dafa disciples establishing their mighty-virtue. Don't let up with your efforts, and let's do even better in this final time. I wish you complete success.

Li Hongzhi

June 20, 2004

Master's Message to the European Fa Conference Held in Vienna

To the European Fa Conference held in Vienna:

Greetings!

We should make our Fa Conferences grand gatherings in which we summarize what we've experienced and learned, find where we fall short, draw on what we have achieved, and establish the righteous thoughts of Dafa disciples. Cherish all of what you've done, and on the path ahead may you do even better.

Master is watching you all, and always looks forward to good news from you.

Lastly, I wish the Fa Conference complete success!

Li Hongzhi

June 20, 2004

On Reading Weathering the Storm¹⁶

Born into a sphere of suffering

Man struggles just to survive

One day, behold, the Great Law gained

Cease not your steps on the path of return

Li Hongzhi

July 19, 2004

¹⁶ Translator's Note: A Chinese novel, recently published online, telling the tumultuous story of a Falun Gong practitioner's life under persecution in China.

Teaching the Fa at the 2004 Washington DC Fa Conference

Good morning! (*Audience responds: Good morning, Master!*)

Time is flying by, and in the blink of an eye another year has passed. In the time that's passed since I attended the DC Fa Conference last year, Dafa disciples have changed a great deal, and so has the overall state of Fa-rectification. And Dafa disciples have done really well with the things that Dafa disciples should do as they validate the Fa. When you look at how they've been going, it might be getting clearer and clearer to you that a bright future lies ahead. (*Applause*)

In the not-too-distant future, the persecution and this form of cultivation that Dafa disciples have will draw to an end. (*Applause*) This first-of-its-kind form of cultivation where Dafa disciples are part of Fa-rectification while the cosmos undergoes Fa-rectification, along with the mighty-virtue exhibited by the Dafa disciples, and the magnificent feats that astonish the entire cosmos, they'll all come to an end very soon. (*Applause*)

So looking at the current situation, since you have been clearing out the evil with righteous thoughts and righteous actions while validating the Fa, at this point the number of evil lives is miniscule and they are merely trying to hide. However, in order to keep up this environment of so-called "tests" by evil, the dark minions that are in the Three Realms and that the old forces arranged in the past, as well as some gods who are playing negative roles—it is *they* who are directly doing those bad things. In other words, the factors left by the system of the old forces are still having negative effects. Then those lives won't be able to pay for the interference they've caused Fa-rectification or the hand they've had in harming Fa-rectification, and so all of them will be weeded out during the Fa-rectification, for sure. So they're part of the bad lives you clear away when you send righteous thoughts. Actually, there aren't many of those lives left. At this point only about five percent of the original dark minions are left, and very few of the gods who have played a negative role in Fa-rectification still remain. But they are still playing a wicked role within the mechanisms arranged in the past by the old forces. So in validating the Fa, no matter what the situation is, none of you should let down your guard, and when it comes to what a Dafa disciple should do, you should keep giving your best. Especially when it's toward the end, for some students there's really not much time left, and that's doubly-so for those who haven't done well—you should seize the day and do well.

Every time I talk about the state of Fa-rectification, I always need to add this: This is how Dafa disciples cultivate, and nobody should go to extremes. Carry on with what you would normally do. Whatever you would do, you should still just go about it as usual. That's because your every thought and whim, and each and every action, are affecting major things. No matter what big things are happening, pretend nothing is going on and just go about, as usual, doing what a Dafa disciple should do. This is the path you're taking today, and this is the [legacy of] mighty virtue you are leaving. The path you, the Dafa disciples, take, is how you have to cultivate as dictated by our cultivation way, and it absolutely cannot change with shifts in the ordinary world.

Looking at the things you've been doing in cultivating and validating the Fa as Dafa disciples, you still have lots of shortcomings, and you should abandon all the things you're attached to. When I bring up attachments, you won't understand it in an extreme way like you would have before. This path that you're taking and the way you cultivate are not attachments. Your own notions and the crooked thoughts that you're still holding on to among human beings as you validate the Fa, those are what you should abandon. As for this cultivation way of yours that's here in ordinary society—the fact that you work and lead a normal life among the masses while doing cultivation—that's not something I've ever told you to abandon, for it is something determined by your cultivation way.

Over the past few years of persecution you have displayed the mighty-virtue of Dafa disciples, but

along the way, lots and lots of shortcomings have come to light. Yet in the process of validating the Fa, the vast majority of Dafa disciples have removed those shortcomings while cultivating and validating the Fa, and that's remarkable. Ordinary people aren't able to let go of human things. But cultivation, you know, that's different from being ordinary. The ordinary man lives just to pursue things that ordinary people want. Dafa disciples aren't attached to those things. You have clear cultivation goals, and you know what you are doing. While you validate the Fa, plenty of the things you do seem identical to what ordinary people do, and that's why a few people say we seem to be getting political, or that we're organizing some sort of social movement. Well, that's how human beings are. During this period of time, there's definitely not going to be millions of gods doing divine things in the human world, and Dafa disciples definitely won't be using their godly sides to do large-scale divine things, with full-blown divine means, in front of the masses of people in the ordinary world. Dafa disciples are utilizing ordinary people's means to validate the Fa. They haven't gotten involved in ordinary people's "politics." There's nothing wrong with utilizing some forms from ordinary people that are useful to validate the Fa.

Having made it to this point today, Dafa disciples should be even more clearheaded now. Dafa disciples aren't some ordinary-people politicians—you have lots of ordinary-people abilities, but you're not trying to gain anything of ordinary people. A Dafa disciple's cultivation is for the purpose of achieving Consummation in the course of validating the Fa. But as Dafa disciples, you are also saving all beings, you're allowing more lives to be saved and rescued during the Fa-rectification.

In the past I often said that none of the people in today's human society have simple [backgrounds]. Over the course of history, gods of different periods created people of different periods, and the appearances of different races are actually the images of different gods. What they created was mankind's physique in the Three Realms, which is known as "surface-level human skin." When we got to today, and especially when I went public with the Fa, a multitude of gods came down and incarnated as humans. What's in many ordinary people's bodies are no longer the souls (*yuanshen*) from when gods created man, because at that time man's soul was created out of matter from within the Three Realms, whereas now many people's souls came from high levels. And why did they come? As I've told you before, nothing in this world, in fact, is by chance. Every being and every object came for Dafa, was formed for Dafa and created for Dafa, and that includes all people. All of what has transpired in the Three Realms's history was created for Dafa. Whether it be all the gods in history who came down to save people, all the heroic figures who emerged in each nation, or all the different cultures that arose in history, they all came about for Dafa's final manifestation among mankind today. And for that purpose the culture for understanding Dafa was established among human beings, and the characteristics of different cultures were created, as were the ways of different cultures. Put another way, the process since the inception of the Three Realms and mankind has been one of establishing human beings' ways of thinking, establishing human beings' behavior, establishing principles for human beings, and establishing what allows people to ultimately understand this Fa, to cultivate by this Fa, to understand that they should cultivate, and to become Dafa disciples, and allow the masses of beings to be saved during the Fa-rectification. All of this was being shaped throughout the course of history for this final moment of the cosmos. In fact, when the many, many Great Enlightened Beings in history, such as Shakyamuni, Laozi, and Jesus, were saving people, imparting the Way, doing good works, and suffering on man's behalf, I can tell you, their true purpose was to establish a culture for the Fa-rectification.

The long history of the cosmos made complete preparations for this Fa-rectification, and the Three Realms was made and created for, and has grown and progressed for, the Fa-rectification. So all of the lives in that historical process have existed and come about for the Fa-rectification. In other words, during the long, drawn-out course of history, no matter how many lives have emerged or how many

there still are in the world today, they all came for, and were all born and created for, this Fa. And this even includes those lives who were arranged by the old forces and have a negative effect. Back then the old forces arranged for them to have a negative effect so that they could Consummate. That's because the old forces thought, based on their notions, that those who play a negative role make it possible for those who play a positive role to Consummate. If this were just about cultivation in a normal time period, then you couldn't say, at least in a certain realm, that their logic was off. But when Fa-rectification of enormous firmaments is taking place, then it interferes with Fa-rectification and it's wrong, and it has caused severe disruption. All of what has played out has been the evil trying to steer Fa-rectification and the future. And that's what makes the sin of the old forces against Fa-rectification the greatest of sins.

But despite that, all lives came for this Fa, so they should assimilate to and harmonize with the Fa positively, and they can't impose things on the Fa or on the future. There *are* many lives who were supposed to have a negative effect in this process as the old forces arranged it. But they haven't, which means they can still be saved. When you clarify the truth, and when Dafa disciples are doing the things they're supposed to be doing, let me tell you, a big part of that is you saving them.

As you've seen, your Master hasn't said anything to ordinary people of late, and I don't do anything in person to save ordinary people anymore, and even when it comes to the things Dafa disciples do I seldom get involved. Maybe you're clear on why that is: I want to leave for you the opportunity to establish mighty-virtue. If I led you in doing something today, then that thing wouldn't have been done by you, and so you would have lost the chance to establish mighty-virtue. Meanwhile, as a Dafa disciple and a magnificent future Enlightened Being, when saving beings you should fully show your magnificence, your compassion, and your grandeur. That's why I want to give you plenty of chances to save the world's people, to save all beings, and let you do those things that you are supposed to do. Actually, in the future you will see that whether it was Jesus, Shakyamuni, or other Great Enlightened Beings in history, there's no difference between what they did and what you're doing today. It's only a difference in form. So you have to be clear about this, and you have to do well with what you're supposed to do.

It's Dafa—such an immense Law—and Fa-rectification—such a major event. That alone lifts you to a lofty place. And what's more, everything that you do in Fa-rectification is for sure the most magnificent, because even history was created for it. So you should try your best to do well the things that a Dafa disciple should do, and every single thing is of utmost importance. I've asked you to do the three things well. You must do the three things well. You should do those things well all the way up to your Consummation. Your mighty-virtue and everything of your future come from those things.

As for some shortcomings that still exist, you should in fact be able to see them with greater clarity. A lot of times I notice that when you're discussing certain things you still have the problem of your human side being attached, and you argue about things that you can't get over, which then affects the discussion you're having of the main Fa-validating things. I've seen that those are attachments which formed among ordinary people, and are notions that you can't let go, and it's things that were formed among ordinary people which flare up as soon as they're hit upon. But you can't be like that. Whatever it is you do for Dafa, you shouldn't do it with your own notions. I say this quite often, but some people routinely don't bother to think about it or don't give it enough attention.

There are still plenty of things that you haven't handled well, but in fact, at this point I don't want to talk about them anymore, because whenever I spell something out, the part that *you* cultivate disappears. Having gone through the [persecution] ordeal, Dafa disciples should be more clearheaded and rational, and they should be even clearer on how to cultivate and how to act. With a lot of problems, if you calmly think things through, you can recognize them on your own. And once you've

realized what they are, you should correct them and not let them happen again.

I didn't want to say much today. This time I planned to talk about some things with a few specific students, but a lot of students didn't get to see Master at some Fa conferences and were a bit disappointed. I think that with the Fa here, you should be all set cultivating. And that also holds for the students in Mainland China. In an environment that trying, and without getting to see Master in person, they've still cultivated very well and have done an excellent job. When you see me, you're just seeing this side of me that manifests as an ordinary human being. *(Teacher laughs)* Whether you can see me or not, I hope that it won't affect you in terms of doing well the things that Dafa disciples should do, and you should do even better. In fact, when you really aren't able to see me and still manage to do better, then that's even more remarkable.

Actually, I like to see you, too. You know, in this social world of ordinary people, the people you come into contact with, you know, they're all ordinary. All those ordinary human thoughts and behaviors that people have are hard for me to take. I enjoy being with you, because you are quite far from the realm of ordinary people now. But for the sake of your Consummation, it's best I don't see you too often. *(Teacher laughs)* That's why I haven't met with you often. In short, I want to leave you with the opportunity to establish mighty-virtue.

Do well with all the things you should do. All the most magnificent, most wonderful glory and honor of the future await you.

I'll end here for today. *(Applause)*

Li Hongzhi

July 24, 2004

Let Go of Human Attachments and Save the World's People

Dafa disciples as a whole have passed the stage of personal cultivation. At present, because the enormous current of Fa-rectification is charging forward, the stage of Dafa disciples' validating the Fa is approaching completion and history is about to enter a new phase. From now on, the Dafa disciples in China as much as anyone, both new students and veterans alike, should let go of their long-standing human attachments and start to seize the day and comprehensively save the world's people. Once the current time period is over, the first large-scale process of weeding out sentient beings will begin. For a Fa-rectification period Dafa disciple, personal liberation is not the goal of cultivation: when you came, saving sentient beings was your great aspiration, and that is the responsibility and mission history has bestowed upon you in Fa-rectification. Thus great numbers of beings are to be saved by you. Dafa disciples, don't forsake the magnificent responsibility that has been bestowed upon you in Fa-rectification, and even less should you disappoint those beings, as you are now their only hope for entering the future. For this reason, all Dafa disciples, students both new and veteran, should get to work and begin comprehensively clarifying the truth. This is especially so for the Dafa disciples in Mainland China: each must come out and clarify the truth, bringing it to every field and valley, mountain and hill, not omitting a single area where there are people. And as for people who want to learn the practice after you clarify the truth, you should arrange for them to study the Fa and learn the exercises as soon as possible. They are the next group of disciples who will cultivate.

When you clarify the truth, you need to make Fa-study a priority. And stop reading and passing around those fake scriptures made by rotten demons who disrupt the Fa and that are spread by evil taking advantage of students who have studied the Fa poorly and harbor strong human attachments. Keep up your righteous thoughts and righteous actions, keep a clear head, and rationally and comprehensively save the world's people.

Li Hongzhi

September 1, 2004

In Fa-Rectification Your Thoughts Have to be Righteous, Not Human

My Dafa disciples who have strong human thoughts: the path I'm leading you down heads toward godhood, yet some students just tenaciously cling to human notions. Before, in personal cultivation you always saw Dafa's benefits as benefits for human society; during the tribulation, you've taken the persecution of Dafa disciples by evil beings in this cosmos using bad people to be human acts; and when hardly any of the evil remains in Fa-rectification as Dafa disciples validate the Fa with righteous thoughts and clean out the evil, and as the world's people begin to see things clearly, you are putting your hope for an end to the persecution in ordinary people.

What's happening is that the cosmos is going through Fa-rectification. [What is taking place in] the human world is merely how low-level beings act when gigantic cosmic bodies are being impacted by the Fa-rectification. What could human beings possibly do to gods? If there were no outside factors, would humans dare to do anything to gods? How human society unfolds is nothing but the outcome of high-level beings controlling things. When you're compared with those Dafa disciples who have strong righteous thoughts and have done well, [I have to ask,] can you really not raise your ultimate understanding of Dafa beyond this human plane? What are you really cultivating for, then? To achieve something for human society? To achieve something for China? To achieve something for the side of Dafa disciples that's in the human world? Or to merely have the world bring justice to Dafa disciples in the human world? Did I impart the Fa to you to accomplish something for human society? What I am doing is leading you toward godhood in cultivation, leading your understanding, little by little, out of humanness and beyond that of man, and the goal is to lead you to Consummation and the ascension of your being.

Snap out of it! If even this, the most wicked ordeal ever, can't wake you up, then when the Fa rectifies the human world you will only be able to watch—watch with shock and regret, with angst and lamentful despair for having done so poorly—the magnificent sight of the Consummation of those Dafa disciples who truly cultivated. It's a case of reaping what you sow. I don't want to leave behind even one single Dafa disciple, but you have got to improve yourselves through real Fa-study and cultivation! With validating the Fa, you should save the world's people and do well the three things Dafa disciples are supposed to do. Be diligent! Cast aside your human attachments. Godhood isn't far away.

Li Hongzhi

September 19, 2004

Master's Comment on a Student's Article

This article is excellent. Its understanding of why Dafa disciples validate the Fa is lucid, the righteous thoughts behind it are strong, and it is logical and clear. I hope the Dafa disciples in Mainland China will all read it. Dafa disciples are validating the Great Law, and they should not be attached to the outcome of the vile Party's meeting. This is because everything in human society exists for Dafa and for Dafa disciples' cultivation. Whether something be upright or wicked, all the same it can only act in accordance with the needs of Dafa.

Li Hongzhi

September 19, 2004

Revised on October 8, 2005

Greetings

I appreciate the Mid-Autumn Festival greetings and thoughts from the Dafa disciples in Mainland China and of different nationalities around the world. In response, Master would like to share a few words. Dafa disciples are walking a divine path. Don't be affected by shifts in the ordinary world, seize the day to clarify the truth, save the world's people, clean out the rotten demons, and keep your thoughts and actions righteous. The Dafa disciples in Mainland China, more than anyone, should step up their efforts and do well the things they are supposed to do, staying always diligent.

May all of you strengthen your righteous thoughts this Mid-Autumn Festival!

Li Hongzhi

15th day, 8th month, Lunar Year of Jia Shen

My Version of a “Stick Wake-up”

In Fa-rectification all of the cosmos’s final, remaining things will be born anew as they are disintegrated and re-created, and the moment when the Fa rectifies the human world draws ever nearer. Over the past five years, as Dafa disciples have validated the Fa they have established the mighty virtue of gods, in the human dimension they have saved great numbers of sentient beings and people through their righteous thoughts and righteous actions, and they have destroyed great quantities of rotten demons and old-force factors. And judging by the way things look in the human world, they have lessened the evil’s persecution, as well as freed sentient beings and the people of the world from the control of the evil beings in other dimensions and from the factors that interfere with Dafa. People are starting to take clear note of and think about the persecution of Dafa disciples and the world’s people. And this has started to make the wicked people in this world who’ve had a hand in persecuting Dafa disciples tremble with fear, and now they keep their evil nature nearly at bay; some evildoers have even stopped persecuting Dafa disciples. All of this has made for a much improved situation. This is what Dafa disciples have accomplished with righteous thoughts and righteous actions before the Fa rectifies the human world. Dafa disciples are now seen by the gods in a new light, having become beings forged by Dafa amidst the Fa-rectification—the Disciples of Dafa. The path that Dafa disciples have walked in validating the Fa—where as they cultivate themselves they also save sentient beings, accommodate the needs of the cosmos’s Fa-rectification, and disintegrate and clear away the dark minions and rotten demons that are negatively impacting the Fa-rectification and doing evil against Dafa disciples, as well as all the elements of interference and persecution arranged by the old forces—such is the *complete* path of cultivation, Consummation, and becoming a magnificent god that Disciples of Dafa walk.

By contrast, when it comes to those who hide in their homes and “study the Fa,” no matter the excuse, it’s actually due to the attachments they can’t let go of. Those people even form little cliques, complain together and make off-base comments to one another, adopt a negative attitude about Dafa disciples’ validating the Fa and everything that Dafa disciples are doing, constantly nitpick about other students’ faults and shortcomings in cultivation, and even spread rumors both in China and beyond. What they do pleases the evil and helps the evil in the persecution. Some people say, “I only read *Zhuan Falun*, I don’t read the new scriptures.” Are you still my disciple? Let me make this clear to you: the period before July 20, 1999, was one of personal cultivation and comprehending the Fa, and in the process of comprehending it one could arrive at Consummation, but that is not the end of a Dafa disciple’s cultivation; in the ensuing five years, the situation has been reversed, who can truly make it and who cannot needs to be seen, those who are not truly cultivating are weeded out, and the five years have been a time when those Dafa disciples who truly cultivate establish their mighty virtue and save beings. Why is it that a being needs to be saved by Dafa and me personally? Or, to put it plainly, [think about] what kind of a being is worthy of salvation by the Great Law of the cosmos? For a being who is saved, could it just be about personal Consummation? So what kind of being deserves to be a Disciple of Dafa? Would you say those people who hide in their homes and “study the Fa” do? Or those who only want to gain from Dafa but don’t want to give for Dafa? Furthermore, what about those who, while Dafa disciples are being persecuted, don’t want to speak up for Dafa and yet still “read the book” at home and try to get things from Dafa—what kind of people are they? You be the judge.

Master sees that danger is already approaching you. I don’t acknowledge the old forces’ arrangements, and that includes this persecution, but I knew that the old factors who would be impacted by Fa-rectification would do this, and that it was just a matter of time and of which ones. In other words, it would have been best if the persecution hadn’t happened, and if it hadn’t happened, I would have had you take [different] paths in that scenario. Now that the persecution has happened, I’ve made use of it so as to have Dafa disciples nullify the persecution while validating the Fa, thus establishing the mighty

virtue of Dafa disciples. Do you think a Dafa disciple's cultivation path is supposed to accommodate your fear, your pursuit of comfort and ease, and all your desires? Do you think that the religious cultivation methods and beliefs of long ago are the only forms of cultivation? If the Three Realms and everything throughout the history of man was planned for the Fa-rectification of the cosmos, then the sole purpose of history was to enable Dafa to create, throughout the course of history, sentient beings and mankind, along with the human mind and culture, so that when Dafa would be spread widely people's thinking would allow them to comprehend the Fa and understand what the Fa is, what cultivation is, what it means to save sentient beings, and so on, as well as understand the variety of cultivation forms. If that's the case, then weren't all the cultivation ways and beliefs in history establishing a culture in this world for the later Fa-rectification of the cosmos? What course is needed for a human being to become divine? The gods on high all say that I have given human beings a ladder to heaven.

And there are some people who think that Master, like the people of the world, can't do anything about the persecution. Did you know that the world's big monster is, other than the fact that the old forces are ensuring it lives until the so-called "tests" come to an end so that they can use it, acting under my command? Haven't some people said that when I tell it to jump, it jumps, when I tell it to go mad, it goes mad, and when I tell it to go wild, it goes wild? Don't you all know that whenever I say or write something, it leads just about its whole hoodlum gang that persecutes Dafa disciples to "study" it right away, day or night? Right now, it looks like it has been cast out amidst political rivalry—isn't that because the wicked rotten demons that controlled it stopped functioning? That's the only reason people could do, and dared to do, that to it. How could you deny that, the impact of Fa-rectification aside, it's the result of Dafa disciples' thinking and acting righteously, exposing the persecution, and nullifying the old forces' arrangements as they validate the Fa, take action against the persecution, and save beings?

Some people have family members who have been imprisoned in the persecution and are being persecuted, and yet instead of hurrying up and working along with everyone else to resist the persecution, stop the persecution, and lessen the persecution of your family members, you're talking about things like "studying the Fa at home" and you're still full of complaints about everything that [Dafa] students are doing. Did you know that when the persecution of your family members who have been imprisoned is lessened or stopped, it's the result of Dafa disciples exposing and shocking the evil beings while braving evil and danger to take action against the persecution? When they get out, how will you bear to face them? What have you done for them? A cultivating human being is not a cultivating god, and everyone makes mistakes in the cultivation process; the key is how you deal with them. Some people are able to recognize them and some aren't, and then there are people who don't want to recognize them because of their attachment of fear and some other factors. Cultivation is not about taking part in ordinary people's political struggles, and even less is it about fighting for power or gain. The notions, bad habits, and tendencies that you've formed in ordinary society and in political circles and the like are looked down on even among ordinary people, so even more so should they be disposed of in cultivation.

Cultivation is the process that enables a human being to ascend to heaven and become a god, so how could it not be hard? The Buddhist religion used to talk about "stick wake-ups," so let me give my version of a stick wake-up to those who don't measure up and have put themselves on the brink of danger.

Li Hongzhi

October 11, 2004

Teaching the Fa at the 2004 International Fa Conference in New York

You've been working hard. (*Applause*)

As a cultivator, and especially as a Fa-rectification period Dafa disciple, you shoulder enormous responsibility, and you have a great mission that history has bestowed upon you. But you have done great, and I, your master, can say this in front of all the beings in the cosmos. Put another way, you have won their admiration. Even though the things you do in this world look a lot like the day-to-day things that ordinary people do, the fact is that the Dafa disciples' basis and the purpose of what you do are completely different. Because the human world is simply in delusion, being caught up in what is real and tangible to them, it's hard for ordinary people to tell the real from the fake. So whether ordinary people understand it or not, Dafa disciples are merely making use of ordinary people's forms to save all beings. And for you cultivators, precisely because of the delusion that is here in human society, being in this environment allows you to cultivate, and those who succeed in cultivation are outstanding.

Most students have done very well overall validating the Fa. Of course, there are some who haven't, but they came here specifically to do bad things; the old forces had it arranged from the outset that they would do those things. So no matter how they act around Dafa disciples during normal times, only at the critical times do you see their true side. No matter how well they talk about things or how well they act in front of everyone, it's only at the critical times that how they really are shows through.

You have come through difficult times that were full of trials and hardships. Looking at the situation now, it's nothing like how it was before. When it first started after July 20, 1999, the evil's fury was so intense, and the way they lined up their evil forces it seemed as if they would really put the Dafa disciples in grave danger. But now you have seen, haven't you, that history was not created for those evil beings, but for forging Dafa disciples and for saving sentient beings during the final time. (*Applause*) Starting ages ago, mankind went through many, many civilizations in different periods. Human beings have been infused with many, many things from all kinds of historical cultures ranging from ancient times to today. As ordinary people see it, everything that has happened with human beings' recent history and cultures, and everything that happened ages ago with the lives on earth, makes up mankind's history and the process of the proliferation of life. As scientists see it, it is the process of life's evolution. Well the truth is, it's neither. The entire Three Realms, including all beings in human society, were constructed, formed, came about, were born, and were created so that sentient beings could be rescued and saved amidst the Fa-rectification at the cosmos's final time. In other words, the Three Realms were constructed for this purpose, for the purpose of saving the beings in the cosmos.

During ages even longer ago, in this dimension where mankind is, in this environment where mankind is, and in the material plane that is composed of molecules, mankind simply did not exist. Through exploration modern people have discovered that extraterrestrial life exists. Yes, in the past it was such beings that were spread out over this plane composed of molecules, and man didn't even exist. Why did gods create man later on? Because the cosmos was to be reconstructed, sentient beings had to be rescued, and the Three Realms needed an environment like this—one that would become the focal point of the cosmos's reconstruction, and one where when the Great Law would be taught in this special environment the beings in all realms could hear the Fa. It was for the great purpose of saving all beings in the cosmos that the Three Realms, and especially mankind in the Three Realms, were created. So everything that has taken place in each of the periods in history, including recent human history, has been for the purpose of creating a culture for man, for today's mankind, so that it may understand the Fa. This was by no means intended for mankind just to live, and even less was it for mankind to

develop or to make some kind of good life for itself in human society. Man may long for good things and may work toward them, but the emergence of the Three Realms and mankind absolutely was not meant for that.

That being the case, think about it: those things that happened over the course of history, even the really major events, didn't they have a reason behind them? Weren't they laying a certain foundation for today's mankind? Suppose Shakyamuni, Jesus, Saint Mary, Laozi, etc. never existed, then would people know what right faith is, what a God is, what a Buddha is, what a Dao is, how to cultivate oneself, and what cultivation means? And what would heavenly paradise mean to them? If people had no idea what those things were, then it would be incredibly hard for me to teach the Great Law today. If I had to explain those concepts to people from scratch, then it wouldn't be teaching a Great Law. The different states beings of each different ethnic group have gone through in each period in history, and their worldviews in terms of telling the righteous from the wicked, right from wrong, and good from evil, all of these things were purposefully created by gods for humans over the long, drawn out years, thus enabling people to have a basic understanding of what is right and wrong, good and evil. Then when Dafa would be spread and the salvation of sentient beings would begin, people would understand all of these things and be able to tell whether this Fa was good and whether it was upright.

Over the course of history people have come to know gods. What's a "god"? Although it's only a very shallow sense, people do know that gods are glorious and holy. And even though different lives know and conceptualize "gods" differently, they all believe that gods are good to people and can save them. All of the heroic figures who emerged in the various dynasties and periods of Chinese history, all those outstanding cultural figures that made history, they were all in fact establishing ways for mankind to think, establishing the structure and ways of thinking that characterize people today. It has been a magnificent undertaking in which the composition of the human species's thought was created. It has taken place over ages and ages, where the human race had to experience different things and cultures firsthand before it could understand the meaning of them. So that's why when something happens a person can know what it means, and through that event, he can know what it represents on a deeper level. For example, what is "good," what does goodness entail, what are its connotations, and what is the scope of the term? Or likewise, what is "evil" like, and what does it mean for something to be "right" or "wrong"? Through their real-life experiences, people came to understand all of these things, and they could truly grasp what they mean. Only then could people have a deep understanding of all of this. These aren't simple, basic things that you can have people understand overnight.

When gods first created human beings, there was nothing in people's minds, it was a complete blank, they couldn't distinguish between right and wrong, and goodness and evil existed side by side. The extremes [in their behavior] were huge: when they were happy, they were kind, and when they were unhappy, they were vicious. But modern man is a different story. Why is it that when today's people arrived at modern times they suddenly became so much wiser? That had to do with another factor aside from the process of creating people that I just talked about, and it is that high-level beings have incarnated as human beings. As for the human race itself, its process over the course of history was actually one of establishing human behavior and thought, or put another way, it was one of creating the real people of today. So what was the point of all these things? To make it possible for man to understand the Fa when Dafa is spread widely today. What I'm saying is, this matter was planned ages and ages ago; its establishment began that early.

And there's something I want to tell you about, which is, who really does cultivation and who really has right faith. In the past, a lot of people would talk about this or that way of cultivating, about such-and-such practice, or about such-and-such faith. But I'm going to tell you that in history,

regardless of how many gods or how many enlightened beings came here, their true mission was to establish the culture of cultivation and right faith that Dafa needed to have established. *(Applause)* Nobody saved people, and nobody has made it to a heavenly kingdom, the reason being, the cultivation methods of old came about in order to lay a foundation for this Dafa that can truly save people today. With the gods who came down in the past, there were indeed some people who as a result of those gods' actions gained salvation. Yet that wasn't the person's real self who was saved, but rather his assistant soul. And even those gods who came down, the bodies that they inhabited in those days... a human being, he's still part of the cycle of rebirth in the human world, and even those who inhabited those bodies didn't get saved. So in other words, in history many have proclaimed that they were "saving people," but nobody saved people. When Shakyamuni imparted his Fa ages ago, his disciples asked him, "Master, is it possible for us to cultivate into a Tathagata without breaking our ties to the secular world?" Or in other words, could they cultivate into gods or Buddhas without leaving behind ordinary people's surroundings and the social environment of this world? Shakyamuni thought about it and said, "For that, you have to wait until the Holy King Who Turns the Wheel descends to the world." *(Applause)* More than two-thousand years have passed, and all the disciples of true religions have been waiting. Waiting for what? For gods above to make a grand display? For gods to come here, so that you don't need to cultivate or care about cultivating well, and it won't matter if anyone is good or bad, and everybody will just go up to Heaven together?

Of course, regardless of who I am, people know that I am transmitting the Fa and saving people. But the Master who is with you here today teaching the Fa has an ordinary person's physical body. As for how people think of me, a lot of ordinary people have their opinions. That's fine—it doesn't matter if they believe in me or not. I haven't said that I am a god or a Buddha. Ordinary people can take me to be just an average, common man, that's fine. All of what I do takes the form of human activity; I'm using the means of common, plain human beings as I save Fa-rectification period Dafa disciples. No high-level life will, when he saves people in this social environment, in this kind of illusory dimension, use only grand, divine displays to miraculously save people in the human world. *(Applause)* But it's different if what he does is on a small scale, or only involves a few people, or if it was something done in the past to create culture. That's how things are for mankind. Of course, though, nothing is absolute. Maybe when the Fa rectifies the human world I will use divine means, since at that time things might need to be done that way. But if around the start of the Fa's rectification of the cosmos things here in society were handled with divine means on a large scale, that would have led to some attachments on the part of cultivators.

Some people are thinking, "Gods have a lot of abilities. Why don't they save poor people and punish bad ones? Why don't they come and perform miracles?" The formation of the Three Realms established human society's way of existence and purpose. This is a society filled with delusion, and it's meant to be a society where the sentient beings can't see all of the truth. Whoever wants to cultivate here has to do so amidst delusion, and be a good person, do good things using ordinary human means, and let go of attachments. Only then can they escape from here, and only then can it be called cultivation. If a person does something here using completely divine means, that isn't cultivation. In history many cultivators of the Dao did carry out divine acts in the human world, and that was creating historical culture. Why has that become rare in recent times? It's because the closer it got to the time when Dafa was to be spread, the less it was allowed for such things to occur. In recent times, after Fa-rectification began and Fa-rectification period Dafa disciples were about to start cultivating, the requirement grew higher. In particular, when this special group of the cosmos's beings began to validate the Fa and move towards Consummation, the environment here became even more important, so the rule got even more strict and people are rarely allowed to see the true situation. This batch of beings is to cultivate to high levels, so the requirements for them are correspondingly high. This group

of beings shoulders great historic responsibilities and they have to come out of a very trying environment. (*Applause*) So that is why Dafa disciples are remarkable.

In other words, the cultivation situation that today's Dafa disciples are in is different from any cultivation method or situation in history. I have always said that the old forces' participation is a form of persecution and a form of interference. If what gods in the past saved were people's assistant souls and not their actual main bodies, then think about it everyone, would that method of saving people work for Dafa disciples' cultivation today? The main bodies of Dafa disciples, as well as those of the world's people, are at the surface. Then is what they did fitting? Would it work? It wouldn't at all. So that's why I say that they are causing interference. This method and form of cultivation that I've told everyone to take today is to cultivate while conforming to ordinary human society and to validate Dafa using ordinary human means to the greatest extent possible (*applause*), and that's unprecedented. Those gods, they don't know anything about how to deal with such a cultivation method, and what they've done is completely out of line, so they are definitely a form of interference with Dafa disciples' cultivation. This is not to say they lack abilities, it's just to say that this is how the old cosmos created such beings, and that's the extent of the wisdom from the old cosmos. During this Fa-rectification, the cosmos has perfected the past imperfections and changed the things that the cosmos of the past failed to change. Because of that, Dafa disciples can be saved and can reach Consummation through cultivation. If the cultivation approach of the past were followed today, not a single Dafa disciple could cultivate to Consummation.

Only when a person follows the method that Dafa uses today to accomplish things, cultivate, and truly save people can he Consume. (*Applause*) And it's not just Consummation—the person is truly saved, the person's master soul is saved. (*Applause*) As for those so-called gods who interfere with Fa-rectification, they only know a part of it but not the whole, they only know about the past but not today or the future, and only know the surface form but not the inner content. When they try to do things they aren't capable of doing them, and they have brought serious interference to Fa-rectification itself and Dafa disciples' cultivation. That's why I say everything that I'm doing today is completely different from what took place in history. Looking at the persecution of Dafa disciples and that of Christians in history, on the surface both were being persecuted. But for these cultivators, beings on their way to godhood, what actually takes place is different. They strictly had to endure because in the past the cosmos didn't have the ability to resolve those deeply rooted historical issues, causing even high-level beings to persecute gods as well as human beings who were on their way to godhood. All of that was shameful, both for the history of the cosmos and on the part of the gods. Today what I'm doing is not just different from the path that they took in the past; it is the difference between the future and the past. This is the way that the cultivation method Dafa has bestowed upon people is; Dafa disciples and I are laying a foundation for the future. The cultivation methods of the future will be like this forever! (*Applause*) Only *this* can be called truly saving people, and only this *can truly* save people.

None of this could be changed at will. Everyone knows that right now is the Fa-rectification period—the cosmos is being renewed, rebuilt, and recreated. Only under this circumstance can the imperfections be mended, and the only time that imperfections can be mended is when the colossal firmament is being rebuilt. So this is an opportunity. No being is allowed to interfere with or damage this opportunity. Whoever interferes is committing a sin, and whoever interferes has to bear the responsibility.

What I said just now basically summarizes the difference between the cultivation method of today's Dafa disciples and the cultivation of people in the past. If a person wants to be saved, he must transcend the fact that he is in and experiencing firsthand a tough environment where there is adversity, self interest, emotions and desires. Everything will involve a cultivator's self-interest, and anything can

affect you as a person, your thoughts and emotions, your *xinxing*,¹⁷ and the things that you are attached to inside. If you manage to take a certain path and make certain choices, then you are extraordinary. Otherwise, you are an ordinary person. If you are able to step out of the reasoning and attachments of ordinary people, then you are a god. (*Applause*) That's totally different from the cultivation methods of the past.

People in the past went to temples and monasteries or into the mountains to cultivate while avoiding the world's people. Those people didn't physically endure too many *xinxing* tests or have their attachments directly tugged upon, and didn't have the most direct test of material things. So for the person's main body it is as if he didn't cultivate. Even though the person gave up a normal life during his lifetime, for that person it was nothing more than taking up a different lifestyle. If his assistant soul really cultivated to success and an assistant soul that came out of his body became a god, then it meant blessings for him. That person would receive blessings in his next life. By "blessings," that meant he would have worldly blessings, nothing more than that. Looking at it from the perspective of a being seeking something through cultivation, who would cultivate to get those things? Speaking on a fundamental level, nothing in the Three Realms was created for that, and no sentient being came for that. Then in other words, the cultivation of today's Dafa disciples is the most magnificent, and it is blazing a trail for the future. That's why walking your path well is of utmost importance. (*Applause*)

I've said all along that Dafa disciples can't go to extremes. You must walk your path well. If you let your imagination run wild, and you have a crooked understanding about something today and have a sudden inspiration and do something else tomorrow, or you keep doing stupid things while driven by your attachment to showing off, all of those things are direct reflections of your master soul and of you as a being. How could such a person Consummate? Your actions are displays of your main body that is cultivating, and that is the same main body that's to be saved. Could such a being be placed among the gods? No, it couldn't. So you must do things well and cultivate rationally, clear-headedly, and with righteous thoughts. And you are allowed to cultivate while conforming to ordinary people's way of life to the greatest extent. As long as Master says something is okay, you can just go ahead and follow ordinary people's way of doing it, because you are meant to walk your path in that way, and human beings are meant to be saved in that way. In the future, if a god wants to come and save people, he too will have to do it that way. That's because in the future cosmos, when it comes to saving people, the target will be people's main bodies. So don't worry about how the cultivation methods of the past and the types of faith then were, and don't worry about how influential they were—you are the only ones who have truly cultivated. (*Applause*) The cosmos is undergoing Fa-rectification, and the gods that they believe in are repositioning themselves, so where would they go to get saved? How would they get to a heavenly kingdom? The heavenly kingdoms are all being reconstructed. Which heavenly kingdom would they go to? *You* are the most magnificent beings and are moving toward heavenly kingdoms while truly saving sentient beings in an upfront, open, and amazing way! (*Applause*)

What I said just now was meant for our Dafa disciples. Those of you who aren't cultivators or who are new students might not quite understand what I just said and find it hard to believe. Don't worry, I am not here to hurt anyone, and there is nothing here that's bad for people. If you didn't understand it, you can come to understand it gradually, and it's fine to come to understand these cultivators incrementally.

There's one final thing I want to emphasize. A small number of students aren't clearheaded and have very strong attachments! They can hear a little bit and see a little bit, and they even feel that they have certain abilities or think that they're some important figure. So they've begun to act in an

¹⁷ "mind-quality" (lit.), "character," or "thought"

irrational and crazy-seeming way, and say things that make no sense. How can you still cultivate? No matter who you are, if I can't save you today, you will be a ghost in hell! Why are you being so irrational? Why do you spread things among students that interfere with their cultivation and validating the Fa? Is it simply an issue of you breeding demons in your own mind? You are interfering with Dafa. Is that a small sin? If today I, Li Hongzhi, decide not to recognize you as a Dafa disciple, not to recognize you as a student of mine, do you think you could remain here? The Three Realms was created for this purpose. Even though this firmament in the cosmos is immense, all beings are focusing their attention here, and all beings here have to be recognized. So I urge those students who are still being irrational: come to your senses and be responsible to your own lives. Your own attachments have led wicked beings from outside to command, interfere with, and control you, making you so irrational.

Master's words just now were fairly harsh. You might have noticed that recently, sometimes my words to such students have been pretty harsh. That's because I have seen the terrifying consequences that await them. No matter how you take those words, no matter how the people who don't understand me or Dafa disciples see things, I, Li Hongzhi, came for all beings. I'm saving all beings, and I don't want to see a single being destroy himself, because I came exactly for you! (*Applause*) I am worried, I am worried about you. Time is becoming more and more pressing. You have seen that, and the overall situation has changed a lot. If the persecution suddenly ends, then no opportunity is left, and everything will have been decided.

It's been a long time since I attended one of your Fa conferences, so I want to stay with you a little longer. (*Enthusiastic applause*)

I've heard that some students came from Russia and there are others that came from some other Eastern European countries. It was hard for them to make it here, as they face a lot of challenges, both financial and otherwise. There are also some new students who have never seen me in person and have always wanted to see Master. And a lot of veteran students likewise haven't seen Master for a long time. It seems that you all have a lot of things to say, and you would be disappointed if I left now. (*Master laughs*) (*Applause*) In that case, let's still use our old method—if you have something to say, write it down on a piece of paper and pass it up, and I'll answer questions for all of you. (*Applause*)

You all really have worked hard. The weather is getting colder. During the summer when you clarified the truth and validated Dafa in front of the consulates, on the streets, or in other settings, even though it was hot, it was still bearable. When the weather gets cold, the climate poses a certain degree of challenge for you. Even so, you haven't let the harsh conditions stop you. Quite the opposite, you are still working hard and haven't let up. That's truly amazing, and the beings of the future and the world's people in the future will thank you, because the people that will remain here in the future will owe that fact to you. (*Applause*) The world's people are in delusion. Dafa disciples are the ones going through so-called tests, while all sentient beings are lost in a state of delusion. But in the future, everyone will know who the Dafa disciples were. They will all know the greatness of Dafa disciples, and those who remain will feel gratitude toward Dafa disciples.

Disciple asks: If circumstances allow, can I go back to Mainland China to work?

Teacher: If the persecution ends and the Fa's rectification of the human world hasn't arrived yet, then if you want to go back to Mainland China to work, you can go ahead. Are you asking if you can go back now? Right now it's best not to go back because the persecution is still going on. I know that a few individual students might have received phone calls or messages from certain officials in Mainland China or people with certain positions. They told you to go back and guaranteed certain things, promising that you wouldn't be persecuted and some other things. Think about it everyone, were those officials the ones that set the policy of persecution? Then isn't the simple fact that they can

guarantee something suspicious? So who is directing them behind the scenes? (*Applause*) How is it that they can make a guarantee? Who is giving them that guarantee? Isn't that suspicious? What is meant by "forming a unified front for battle,"¹⁸ anyway? When their low tactics no longer work, they start "forming a unified front for battle." They're up to their old tricks again, and you need to be on guard. We don't pose a risk to any political power. We simply want them to stop the persecution. (*Applause*) They persecute people and at the same time try to bring those people over to their side. They have used all the dirty tricks in the book. (*Audience laughs*)

Disciple: Dafa disciples in the city of Chongqing send greetings to Master. (Teacher: Thank you!) (Applause) Master, we promise we will do well at every moment the things that we should do.

Teacher: Wonderful! (*Applause*)

Disciple: Dafa disciples at Beijing's Tsinghua University send greetings to Master.

Teacher: Thank you all! (*Applause*)

Disciple: Dafa disciples who are illegally detained at a women's labor camp(s) in Beijing send greetings to Master.

Teacher: Thank you! (*Applause*)

Disciple: Dafa disciples who are being illegally detained in a prison(s) in Beijing send greetings to Master.

Teacher: Thank you! (*Applause*) No matter what kind of environment you are in, you must keep your righteous thoughts firm, because you are Dafa disciples and you are special beings.

Disciple: The European Fa conference will be held in London next year, and we eagerly hope that Master will grace us with his presence. (Audience smiles and applauds) Master, please tell us why "seven Buddhas" has been changed to "six Buddhas."

Teacher: I'll talk about it from a couple of angles. One is that no small number of Buddhas have come down to the human world over the course of history. It's more than six, and in fact more than seven. Of course, there have been other gods as well. Just talking about Buddhas, quite a few have come down to save people, yet when it comes to the Buddhas like Shakyamuni who had special missions, there were six of them before Shakyamuni. When I've talked about them, I have counted Buddha Shakyamuni as one of them, so there were seven. But Buddhism has always talked about six, because Shakyamuni's disciples thought of those Buddhas as his disciples, so they haven't counted Buddha Shakyamuni and ended up with six. When I have talked about them I have counted Buddha Shakyamuni in, so that made seven. But that said, when imparting the Fa you of course need to do it according to people's ability to accept things. So, to do our best to save the followers of Buddhism, we went with what they say and changed the number to six. (*Applause*)

Disciple: Greetings to esteemed Master! I'd like to send greetings to Master on behalf of students in Romania.

Teacher: Thank you! (*Applause*)

Disciple: Most of the students in Romania are new. They have dealt with all kinds of challenges, but they are all very diligent. I respectfully ask Master to talk about how students in Romania can do a better job of participating in validating the Fa, as well as how Romania can play a better role in validating the Fa.

¹⁸ This is an often-used strategy of the CCP, whereby it rallies a group together in order to defeat what it perceives as an opponent; when political winds shift, often it turns against the group it once rallied together.

Teacher: I said earlier that relative to the number of people in the world, the number of Dafa disciples right now is very small, but you have a great mission that history has bestowed upon you. So as for the Dafa disciples in any region, you are basically the hope for the beings in that region to be saved—their only hope, in fact. The beings there need to hear the Good News, and they need to hear you clarify the facts to them so that they can understand what Dafa is. That is why Dafa disciples' responsibilities are weighty. Then you might ask, how can you do better? I think that for you, Dafa disciples, if each of you uses simply your mouth to tell the people in each region the facts, then we won't get to all of them. The energy Dafa disciples carry as they cultivate and stick to righteous thoughts and actions, as well as the mighty virtue from their cultivation, have an additional effect.

On the other hand, everything that Dafa disciples have done and everything that Dafa disciples have said when clarifying the facts causes the facts to circulate in ordinary human society and creates an environment that fosters communication among the people. Then with that environment, the discussions people have are another way for those beings to get saved, an indirect way. Another thing is that many beings have been poisoned by the evil beings, and in their minds there is a lot of propaganda from the CCP's slanderous media. In that case, it's better if you can clear it away through clarifying the facts, because the negative thoughts that human beings have about Dafa can be taken advantage of and used by those evil beings that persecute Dafa disciples. So Dafa disciples can remove them while sending forth righteous thoughts and through their righteous thoughts and righteous actions. As a matter of fact, if your thoughts are very righteous, when you walk down the street and go about your life in the city where you live, all of your surroundings will be cleansed. Your mere existence has the effect of saving sentient beings. But, despite your great abilities, you will still face adversity for the benefit of your personal cultivation, since everyone has a journey that he must make in cultivation. At the same time, the old forces have created many forms of interference to your validating the Fa. Under normal circumstances it is very hard to clear away that interference if the righteous thoughts aren't strong enough.

As for how to do things well, that means doing well in the three things that Dafa disciples should do—that is doing things best. (*Applause*) But the amounts of effort being put forth are different. Some people don't put forth too much effort while other students are more diligent and put forth more. Of course, Master sees that in society each individual has a family and a job, not to mention different social obligations due to your ties to society, so you have very little time left over. Master knows about all of this and is understanding. As a matter of fact, Dafa's method of cultivation takes that issue into consideration and won't disrupt things in that area.

Disciple: Disciples in Taiwan send greetings to Master. (Applause) Master, please tell us the current direction for the Asia-Pacific Pure Awakening website.

Teacher: Dafa disciples' websites should be run well, because they are a vehicle for clarifying the truth and are playing a role in saving sentient beings. So they should be run well. As for what to do specifically, that's up to you. (*Teacher smiles*) Why is it that Master doesn't talk about things too specifically? Master only makes sure that no problems develop in the overall scheme of things. But as for the problems, arguments, and differences in understanding among students, those are things that reflect the state of your cultivation. So when it comes to how to walk your path and how to handle each thing, those are things that you yourselves must address as a part of establishing your own mighty virtue. If I tell you how to handle each thing, then it becomes something I did, and no god will acknowledge that you did it. (*Teacher smiles*) (*Applause*) So I have to leave those things to you. I can't deprive you of your opportunity to cultivate.

Disciple: Dafa disciples in the city of Guangzhou send greetings to esteemed Teacher.

Teacher: Thank you! (*Applause*)

Disciple: Esteemed Teacher, could you please tell us if it's okay for Dafa disciples in Mainland China to send [overseas] money that they have saved through living frugally, to be used for truth-clarification projects in New York City?

Teacher: It is okay in principle—if you are very well off financially, then it's not a problem. But here we're talking about money saved through living frugally, so it means the person isn't that well off. In that case, it's best to keep the money for clarifying the truth in Mainland China, because the environment outside of the Mainland is still much better than inside. (*Applause*)

Disciple: Master, please tell us if the truth-clarification activities in Manhattan will continue until the Fa-rectification ends. (Audience laughs)

Teacher: No, they won't. I talked about this before when students who are clarifying the truth in Manhattan held a meeting. You will do this for only a period of time. Manhattan is pretty unique: it's practically the financial center of the world, and a lot of major corporations all over the world have offices or branches here. In other words, it is a point of convergence for the financial world and is closely connected to the whole world. And the people who gather in Manhattan are, owing to its uniqueness, themselves unique. Many well-educated people are concentrated here, as well as people with a certain amount of power and financial means in society. In other words, the roles that they play in society are no ordinary thing.

Even though relatively speaking there are a lot of students in the New York region, including the area around New Jersey, after what has taken place over the last few years it still looks like a great many people in Manhattan are indifferent. After such a long period of doing things to clarify the truth, a lot of people still haven't come into contact with Dafa disciples. The CCP has put a lot of evil here to persecute Falun Gong, and that has resulted in some people here in this environment always having impediments to understanding Dafa.

And in addition, there is another problem I've discovered. There are Chinese employees in Manhattan's many big corporations, and even in some of the small corporations and establishments, and the majority of those Chinese people have been deceived by the falsehoods spread by the CCP's slanderous propaganda machine, and those things in their heads have not been cleared away all this time. So they have become people who spread venom in American society. It's not that those people are evil by nature. But indeed, while Dafa disciples are clarifying the truth in one place they are over there spreading the slanderous things from the CCP in some other place. It wouldn't hurt for you to write the following on flyers, display boards, or have the media report it: "The Chinese people in your company have been misled and they are helping the CCP spread its venom (*applause*), so you should examine the facts for yourselves." (*Applause*)

Disciple: How can I do a better job of validating the Fa if I don't have any of the skills ordinary people do?

Teacher: It's fine not to have ordinary skills. Many students pass out flyers and newspapers on the street and clarify the truth to ordinary people face to face. Those are all things that you can do. Many students gather in front of the consulates and embassies year-round, and that too is really admirable. There are a lot of things that you can do.

Disciple: Hello, esteemed Teacher. Many characters in Zhuan Falun and other Dafa books have been changed recently. What is the deeper meaning behind that?

Teacher: I'm not going to talk about the meaning behind it. I'll just talk about it at the surface. Let's take the [Chinese] character "practice" from the [two-character term] "cultivation practice" as an

example. If the persecution of Dafa disciples had not happened, I would have given you the path that you should have taken. But after the persecution started, those sham *qigong* practices and all kinds of messed up things started participating in the persecution, and even went on TV to attack Dafa. Of course, the reason they did those things was that so many people were learning Dafa—their own people included—that they couldn't make money anymore. So they became jealous and hateful. That's why some students raised the question, "Master, in the character 'practice,' when we use it to describe other *qigong* practices, could we change that one part of the character from the one meaning 'fire' to the one meaning 'silk'? They don't practice true cultivation in the first place."

That's just an example. In all kinds of other places there were many factors caused by deviations arising from the deviant culture. Chinese is a special written language, and it is similar to the written language in the heavens. And oral Chinese is similar to the language spoken in the heavens, because it is a form of culture that gods directly created for mankind. Also, since what was established in China was a semi-divine culture, the form and sound of Chinese characters are interconnected with the cosmos. It's different from the written languages in the West and the written languages of other ethnicities. That's because from a certain perspective, the written languages of other cultures are actually sets of symbols that gods created for human beings so that they could await the Fa in those regions after forming predestined connections. That way the people awaiting the Fa in those places could lead normal lives and temporarily have a set of symbols to communicate with each other. But if the sound and form of Chinese characters are interconnected with the cosmos, then think about it, what kind of interference could they have on mankind, on Fa-validation by Dafa disciples who have obtained the Fa and cultivated on this plane, and even on Fa-rectification? Put another way, the old forces used those factors to exploit things in Fa-rectification. Let's take the word "目的" (*mu di* or "destination") as an example. In ancient times when the word "destination" or other words used to describe reaching a certain place were written, the character "地" was always the same "di" as in the Chinese character "土地" (*tu di* or "earth"). In modern times, with the apparent rationale of standardizing grammar and making it easier for people to master grammar, that "地" (*di*, as in "earth") has been written as "的" (*di*, a grammatical article). So even after you have supposedly reached the "destination," you still haven't gotten to the "place." (*Audience laughs, applauds*)

There are problems with many factors. In modern times the old forces have damaged Chinese culture and left a big mess for me to deal with as I impart the Fa. There are just so many damaging factors in a myriad of areas, so a lot of things needed to be put right. But there was no time to do that, so the corrections simply addressed a few things. The good thing is, the Fa's inner meanings aren't affected. The book *Zhuan Falun* manifests differently in each dimension, and the *Zhuan Falun* in the heavens looks completely different from the one on earth, so it hasn't been affected.

Disciple: I haven't been able to cultivate while conforming to ordinary people to the greatest extent possible. Will that leave me with a lot of regrets in the future?

Teacher: So you haven't managed to cultivate while conforming to ordinary people to the greatest extent possible, well, "to the greatest extent possible" means meeting the requirements completely. So if it ended today, whichever level you belonged to would be fixed. It hasn't ended today so, since it hasn't ended, when it comes to the standards that you have or haven't met, and the things that you have or haven't cultivated well in, those are still just parts of the ongoing process, so no one can conclude that this is just what you are. If you have come to recognize your shortcoming, and I believe that you must have since you submitted the question slip, then correct it and do better. (*Applause*)

Disciple: Esteemed Teacher, the word "程度" (cheng du or "degree") from previous editions of

Zhuan Falun has been changed to “成度” (cheng du or “degree of accomplishment”). But one of my fellow practitioners said that the Minghui website hasn’t published that change, so, should it be changed back to the original?

Teacher: There have been several rounds of character changes; there were just so many things to change. Once one matter is dealt with, a lot of things happen, so as of now the changing of characters ends and no additional changes will be made. To find out about the changes that have been made, you can refer to the edition of *Zhuan Falun* that will soon be published and then make your changes based on that edition. This happened because Minghui was only sometimes notified of the character changes, so that’s the situation.

Disciple: Is the structure of the cosmos that you have talked about referring to the new cosmos’s structure?

Teacher: The structure that I talked to you about before was all about the old cosmos’s structure. The state that is evident during the Fa-rectification is also the state displayed by beings of the old cosmos. The new cosmos can’t be talked about. Not only can’t it be talked about, but the secrets of heaven cannot be revealed. *(Teacher smiles) (Audience laughs, applauds)* Many of the secrets of heaven in the old cosmos can no longer be called secrets of heaven, because those things will be altered, they will undergo changes. But the old cosmos does have many many good beings and factors, including structures that are good, so those will be kept. So, a great many beings and the vast majority of the structure of the old cosmos have been kept.

Disciple: With the time for saving sentient beings being so pressing, why do my selfish thoughts persist as they do? I am worried about myself.

Teacher: I think that being able to see your own shortcomings is *cultivation*. That’s actually very normal. When you can recognize it, that’s the first step to improving. If you can manage to pay attention to those things on a day-to-day basis and do them well little by little, then you are improving. Don’t get anxious, as doing so will lead to attachments. When you see problems, make changes, and when you see shortcomings, overcome them. There are a lot of things that you might not be able to do, and I’ve taken that into consideration in every respect, and I foresaw it when I disseminated the Fa. In other words, what I want to save is mainly the master soul, the person himself. How much ability does a person have? If a person can recognize his own mistakes and overcome them, then he is cultivating, but what happens if the elements that make up a person’s being become deviant? Or, more specifically, what happens when a person’s way of thinking is deviant? Case in point: for so many years the CCP has intentionally educated people in a way that reinforces its own things. Many people have seen that the Party is not good, but they’re only able to say that the Party isn’t good from within the culture fostered by the Party’s education. They haven’t truly recognized it and can’t see it for what it is outside of the culture of the Party that has been instilled in them. That’s a deviant way of thinking. What can be done in that case? That’s why I say that there are certain things that you can do, and you’re not a cultivator if you don’t do the things within your power. But whatever you can’t do, Dafa will certainly do those things for you, and Master definitely has ways to do them. *(Applause)*

In other words, you must cultivate the part that you are supposed to cultivate. As for the things that you can’t cultivate, and can’t detect or recognize—or take care of even if you could recognize them—Master will take care of them. Of course, it doesn’t mean that when you see attachments that you can’t get rid of you can use the excuse of “I can’t do anything about that” and thereby shrug off your responsibility. *(Audience laughs)* That won’t do. What I’m talking about is, when it comes to the structures of your being and your way of thinking—things that you can’t detect at all and can’t take care of—Master will definitely take care of those things.

Disciple: Master, is the time when the persecution ends the time that the Fa will rectify the human world?

Teacher: That is quite possible. (*Applause*) It's better if I don't talk about those things, though. As soon as I talk about that, everyone's mind will become unsettled. I'll leave the wonder and magnificence of that for you to see for yourselves.

Disciple: Master, could you talk about the origins of the evil political party that persecutes Dafa disciples? (Audience laughs)

Teacher: As far as how that thing came into existence on a fundamental level, I think it's better that I don't talk about it at a Fa conference. As far as how it came into existence in the human world, that is something that everyone already knows without my saying anything. Actually, whether you want to talk about a crooked political party or an evil political party or any other kind of political party, as cultivators we have absolutely nothing to do with that. No matter how evil a party might be, it's something of the human world, and no matter how good it might be, it is still something of the human world. Being a cultivator means stepping out of the human world, and when it comes to cultivating in the human world, cultivators don't get involved with all those worldly conflicts and issues. Things that are evil, well, there are reasons for their existence, and with things that are good there are reasons for their existence too. It is determined by the state of human society, and Dafa disciples don't concern themselves with those things at all. But everyone saw clearly that back when that arch devil started persecuting us, it was yelling that its political party "must defeat Falun Gong" and "I refuse to believe the *** Party can't defeat Falun Gong." I know that it did those things out of jealousy and resentment, but I also know that there were elements of its political party behind its words. Put another way, we exposed them only after they persecuted us. We don't recognize this persecution. In the process of clarifying the truth, we will tell the world's people why Falun Gong is being persecuted, what Falun Gong is, and what that political party is. Whoever it is that has persecuted Dafa disciples should be exposed and the malignant influence that has spread among the minds of the world's people should be cleared away.

After listening to students clarify the truth, some people still say, "Falun Gong is pretty good, but I think the *** Party has its reasons." And there are a lot of people who think that what the CCP says can't be wrong, and so they refuse to listen to the truth. Those people haven't seen that it is evil to the core. Some people say, "Falun Gong is pretty good, but the Party hasn't done anything wrong. It's that arch devil's fault." In that case, we should tell the world's people why it persecutes Falun Gong and what kind of motive it had when it began persecuting Falun Gong; we should help people see who the evil cult really is and what the Party is all about. The Dafa disciples that are being persecuted should expose its disreputable past.

Worldly affairs are not the concern of Dafa disciples, who are cultivators, but I, Li Hongzhi, know about all such affairs. (*Applause*) I've been explaining these things all along over the last several years of persecution, and yet the persecution continues. The new leadership of the CCP has been in power for two years so far, and the persecution continues. Is it just a matter of isolated individuals committing evil acts? Then why shouldn't we tell the world about the fundamental evilness of that political party? If you didn't persecute us, we wouldn't want to have anything to do with you, and we wouldn't want to say anything about you. The lives of so many Dafa disciples have been taken, and the persecution continues. How evil! Also, the Party has used the one-sided media to broadcast slanderous propaganda to every corner of the earth, and it's even worse than that of the Cultural Revolution. It is targeting a group of such good and kind people. Even if I forbear it and tolerate it, none of the gods will stand for it! (*Applause*)

Disciple: Because of my attachment of emotion, I have made mistakes. I feel remorse over the path I have taken. How should I make up for it?

Teacher: *(Teacher sighs)* These are in fact the things that pain Master the most. For a cultivator, it's just so shameful. It's shameful even for an ordinary person, but you are a cultivator, so how could you even raise this for open discussion? It is just so shameful. Did you know that in old-time cultivation, as soon as a cultivator broke the rule pertaining to this, he wouldn't be able to cultivate again for the rest of his life. That's how serious it is.

So, what can be done? Dafa is merciful, and Master looks at your being in its entirety, and you will still have chances before the Fa's rectification of the human world arrives. But you can't make those mistakes again. You just can't. And during this period of time especially, the evil will capitalize on your emotion to aggravate its persecution of you and will cause your desires and attachments to be particularly strong, to the point where you can't handle yourselves well and will take an evil path. Master has seen that. If you can walk your path well and cultivate well, that sin will belong to the evil. But if you still don't walk your path well, that sin will be your own. Of course, the evil that is interfering with you will be eliminated, and after that anything you do will be yours.

During the Fa-rectification period, when the Fa is rectifying the entire cosmos, do you know how Master is doing it? As for all the beings in the entire cosmos, including the world's people, and beings that are lower than this world—even ones that are down very very low, including beings in the underworld and hell—I have been doing things according to one principle: no matter what sins or mistakes a being committed in its past, I disregard all of that; I can get rid of all those things for you and make everything good. Nobody has ever treated sentient beings like this before. If a certain place in the cosmos was no longer up to par, it was destroyed through explosion and then recreated. If a certain place was no longer up to par, it was just like the metabolism of the human body, where if a cell is no longer up to par it dies off and a new one is created. Treating all beings with such mercy is something that has never ever happened for as long as the cosmos has existed. *(Applause)* I've been doing this all along, and I have achieved this. But there is one thing. If a sin was committed against Dafa during the Fa-rectification period, interfering with the Fa-rectification, then that sin cannot be forgiven. There is just this one stipulation. If even this stipulation weren't there, the Fa of the cosmos would no longer exist. Beings of the future wouldn't have the Fa to follow and abide by, and it would be the same thing as the cosmos not having a Fa, making it a messed up, chaotic world. That cannot happen! That would be the same as harming the cosmos, so having a negative effect in Fa-rectification means having committed such a sin. For a being, it could be caused by just one misplaced thought, but the consequences are devastating.

Disciple: Greetings to esteemed Master. I'm a Korean disciple from Heilongjiang province. Please allow me to greet Master on behalf of all Dafa disciples from Heilongjiang and the different truth-clarifying teams in Korea.

Teacher: Thank you. *(Applause)* The Dafa disciples in Korea have done quite well. There are also many Dafa disciples of Korean ethnicity in Mainland China and they have been persecuted very severely. I know about all of this.

Disciple: Our truth-clarifying team focuses on clarifying the truth to the Beijing area, putting 80% of our effort there, and using the other 20% on other things, including efforts to rescue students. When we strengthen efforts to clarify the truth to the Beijing area, will the evil that's concentrated in Manhattan be reduced?

Teacher: The right way to put it is this: when Dafa disciples from different places are all doing very well, the evil can't deal with them all and it is cleared away in all places. The evil that came to

Manhattan is in the process of being completely eliminated. Right now, the evil in the Three Realms has been eliminated in large quantities. You can see that the current situation is changing, and even the weather is changing. The Dafa disciples that have sat in front of the New York Consulate know that it was the coldest place, and our Dafa disciples have really endured a lot over these years. Looking at the current situation, the Dafa disciples from different places are fully utilizing their skills and talents to do things to validate Dafa, so it is causing this evil to become less and less. It's really difficult for it to concentrate itself and do anything.

Disciple: How can I and everyone else work together so that we can look at matters broadly and put Dafa first?

Teacher: This is a question that all Dafa disciples should think about. As far as what to do, only by studying the Fa well and acting according to what Master tells you can you walk this path righteously.

Disciple: It isn't easy for us disciples from Mainland China to get to the U.S. to attend Fa conferences, and it is rare for us to see Master in person. We would like to sincerely ask Master to address the disciples from Mainland China who went to Korea to help Master in Fa-rectification. Please tell us how we can do well what we should do and fulfill the vows we made before history.

Teacher: Dafa disciples are all the same, and you should do well no matter where you are. Whether you are abroad or are in an environment where you are directly persecuted by the evil, you should display Dafa disciples' righteous thoughts and righteous actions, as that strikes fear into the evil. The evil is raucous on the surface, but inside it is afraid. You are Dafa disciples, and you can't have fear inside. If a cultivator can truly let go of [the fear of] death, then that death will forever be far removed from you. But this isn't something you can will to happen—it's a point that you cultivate to in the Fa, one at which you become that kind of being. When the persecution in Mainland China started, if all of the Dafa disciples had managed to act fairly righteously like now, the persecution would have never gotten off the ground, and those evil things would have been destroyed instantly. The human world is no place for them to make a display of evilness.

Now you folks have gradually become more clearheaded, calmer, and more rational, and you know what to do, and one might say that a lot of your human attachments have been cultivated away. Well, actually, with some students it's not that their human attachments have been cultivated away but that the students have been too scared to do anything out of line, and if the environment eases up a little bit they will dare to do those things again. That's no good. If a person can't cultivate in the Fa, then he isn't able to truly understand the Fa. Only when a person has truly grasped the Fa can he walk the path righteously and can his being be assured a good outcome. Otherwise that kind of being remains in the most perilous situation, because the evil can take advantage of his gaps at any time. If he were an ordinary person, no matter how bad he was, the evil wouldn't pay any attention to him. Because he wants to cultivate, though, the evil will try to stop him from cultivating. And when you don't cultivate solidly you become a target for the evil's persecution.

Disciple: A few students are very enthusiastic about clarifying the truth, but they have never been able to go beyond the petty confines of attachment to self. They haven't done well in overall cooperation and coordination, and more seriously, they have affected some other students. If they still can't do well with fellow practitioners' help, I'd like to ask Master, what kind of consequences will those students face in the future?

Teacher: In my opinion, right now you can't say how students are or draw conclusions about them, because there are all kinds of different manifestations in the process of cultivation, and all ordinary people's attachments will show. As long as a practitioner doesn't remove them they will

definitely show. As for the part that has cultivated well, it is nowhere to be seen, because the part of him that has cultivated well can't be shown. And the part that hasn't been cultivated well will be seen by others whenever it surfaces. What's key is how he deals with it and whether he can recognize his shortcomings when others point that part out or when his attachments come out in conflicts—that's what is critical. Once you recognize something you need to overcome it, and only that is cultivation. When all is said and done, I'd say that it's a question of diligence.

If a person doesn't cultivate well and affects another Dafa disciple or a lot of other Dafa disciples, and causes their cultivation to fail, that is the severe sin of interfering with Dafa disciples' cultivation, one that cannot be absolved even after a being descends down to the eighteenth level of hell. Some students aren't able to remove their longstanding attachments, leading to their being interfered with by the evil. All of you are thinking that these people are done for and can't make it. Right now you can't look at it like that. Some students have in fact gotten rid of many other attachments, and a lot of attachments are gone and won't show themselves, but those attachments that they haven't cultivated away still show up. Master will definitely have those come out and be affected in conflicts, and will for sure have everyone see that, and the goal will be to have them get rid of those. When you see one, you need to point it out to them. If you don't point it out that is because you have an attachment of fearing to offend others. In that case, they will be made to have clashes and conflicts with you so that both you and him will recognize those attachments. And the goal is to cultivate away those human attachments. But when you look at the students who have attachments that show, you can't think that they're no good. So misunderstandings and mistakes among Dafa disciples are unavoidable. The key is that you can't have real conflicts and clashes among yourselves or start to mistrust one another.

Recently, I have often stressed the issue of cooperating and coordinating well with each other. Whether or not those bad attachments of yours have been removed, you have to cooperate well with each other just the same. Why is it that at times you see arguments coming up a lot, and sometimes the arguments go on and on? Why is it that in validating the Fa, disciples' opinions are time and again not unified? This is something that's been quite prominent recently in Mainland China. What's the real problem? It's very simple—it is a question of whether you are validating the Fa or validating yourself. If you are validating the Fa, no matter what another person says about you, you won't be affected inside. If someone counters your opinion and you get riled up and don't like it, if when other people raise an opinion opposite yours based on some problem you have or disagree with your opinion and you don't like it, and you stand up to oppose it and argue on your own behalf, and when this leads to your going off topic and not listening to others, [in all such cases] you are—even if you are defending and explaining yourself with the best of intentions—still just validating yourself. (*Applause*) That is because you didn't put Dafa first, and at that time the thing that you couldn't let go of most was self.

But people's thoughts are complex, and sometimes it's hard to tell. Some people truly are thinking of the Fa, really do feel that such-and-such way is right, and are not attached to themselves. They're just holding their ground like that. Some may say, "You're so insistent, aren't you validating yourself?" So at those times you have to be calm and collected. In fact, when everyone is thinking of the Fa the problem of not cooperating is non-existent. We should be good people wherever we are—aren't we supposed to think of others first when we do things? Why is it that Dafa disciples don't think of others first when dealing with each other? You're thinking, "We're all cultivators and everyone is cultivating, so when we're with other disciples there is no need to think about how we talk to each other." Isn't that what you're thinking? Well, that's not right. Do not forget this point: you are human beings that are in the process of cultivating, you are not gods cultivating, so you must be considerate of others.

Disciple: Students in Korea are using all sorts of ways to step up the effort to clarify the truth to different kinds of people, and they are gradually getting people's attention and support. The truth-clarification has yielded better and better results, and at the same time, all over the country great numbers of new students are pouring in. But recently, one after another, a few students have had accidents and died tragically. One died when the bus he was riding in flipped over, one drowned, and another died in an accident at work. One of those students was very active in clarifying the truth. The occurrence of several such incidents caused some of the newer students to waver.

Teacher: I just talked about the old forces' interference to Fa-rectification and Dafa disciples. So why do the old forces do things like that, then? What is their goal? They think, "All of you have come here to cultivate and you think that Dafa is good. Is your understanding of Dafa's goodness truly based on the Fa truths? Or rather, do you just go along when other people say it's good? Or is it that you say the Fa is good when you feel like you've benefited from it?" Cultivation and Dafa are solemn, and they can turn human beings into gods. The old forces can't stand that, so they want to test you. They want to see if you will still say Dafa is good and stay and cultivate when they have people pass away who have reached the end of their life spans. The old forces have done that, so when a student faces life-threatening danger, you can't say that he is not good or that he has some serious problems. That is actually the old forces creating a disturbance by taking advantage of human attachments. One thing is that it's easy for some students to waver, and if those kinds of students had all cultivated very well and solidly, those problems wouldn't have taken place. If certain students can't manage to get rid of long-standing attachments inside themselves, they can be persecuted and interfered with. [They might think,] "I've been doing the exercises, and my illnesses have been cured. I feel so good. My life has become easier." Their understanding always remains at that level and they can't understand the Fa on the basis of the Fa, and that makes it easy for problems to come up. Of course, these things don't always stem from that type of problem. The old forces have been doing this for a long time, and these kinds of things also happened before in the cultivation of students in Mainland China. So that's why in cultivation it is imperative to look at things with righteous thoughts and clearly recognize that cultivation is the most serious of matters.

Of course, certain things have happened. Students in different regions have pretty much become clearheaded, they are able to understand things on the basis of the Fa, and they can thus handle those things correctly. There used to be some students who would often say, "So-and-so at our practice site has done so well! We'll do whatever he does." Let me tell all of you that you absolutely must not do that and absolutely must not think that way. Cultivators can't take other human beings as their role models. They must take the Fa as the teacher! (*Applause*) As soon as you start doing things [like I described] and thinking in that way, two problems will surface. One is that you will likely push that student to a place where there is no way out for him. And it's likely the old forces will lead him to have problems and even make him leave us early in order to test other students. [They'll think,] "You're all looking to him. With things like this, are you still going to study, and are you still going to cultivate?" Under circumstances like this, there are really some students who think, "If even he couldn't make it, will I be able to?" They waver. Isn't that the old forces taking advantage of gaps? [In that situation] even I, your master, can't say anything! The old forces say, "Take a look. See how that test ended up? What we did was right, wasn't it?" So when the righteous thoughts are not strong, people's minds waver. You absolutely must be on guard against that! You should take the Fa as the teacher. You can't look at how well a certain individual has cultivated and as a result learn from that person instead of the Fa.

Weren't there students like that when the persecution in Mainland China first began? Many students were looking to the assistants and doing whatever the assistants did. When the assistants gave in, they followed suit and gave in too. Of course, students are students of Dafa after all, so when they

calmed down later on, they realized that they had been wrong. They started to study the Fa anew, and realized that that understanding of theirs had been wrong and that what they did was wrong. But, looking at that one part of it, didn't it bring shame to them? They did do that thing at one point, so for a cultivator, isn't that a black mark? So, causing people's minds to waver will bring trouble to the cultivation environment. You absolutely must be attentive to that.

All kinds of things might happen during cultivation. Some people saw that such-and-such people had their illnesses cured after they started practicing. They thought, "Wow, even such serious illnesses have been cured." Or, "Wow, that person's cancer was cured after he started practicing." "I'll practice too." But why did that person end up coming? He came because of the cancer and for the purpose of getting healthy. He didn't come here to truly cultivate. But I realize that everyone has to start somewhere in understanding the Fa. One person might start to understand the Fa at one point and another at a different point. But once someone enters the practice he must take studying the Fa as first and foremost—only then is it cultivation. In that case, when you can truly understand the Fa during cultivation, you will be able to get rid of any attachment. You will think, "I've obtained the Fa, and I am not afraid of anything. If I die, so be it. Even if I die, I have obtained the Fa. What's going to happen to me after I die? I won't end up in hell. I've obtained the Fa, after all." A person like that will not encounter anything that endangers his life and he won't have any health problems (*Applause*). That is because the state of mind he demonstrates is that of a true cultivator. He has truly understood [what cultivation is] and has truly elevated himself, and he has let go of all attachments. At least in this one regard he has transcended humanness, he has gone beyond the realm of humanness. Only ordinary human beings have health problems. Once he lets go of his attachment to being healed his health problems will be gone.

Certain people haven't managed for a long time to let go of their attachments to getting healed. Under normal circumstances when a person suffers from a terminal illness he has actually reached the end of his lifespan. He's suffering from a terminal illness and his life is supposed to end, but now he has studied Dafa. Even though he comes in order to get cured, he is still allowed to keep studying the Fa to understand the Fa. He also sees examples [of the Fa] playing out in people's lives, but he still can't understand the Fa on the basis of the Fa. He doesn't read the books, so he can't understand things on the basis of the Fa. He only follows others in doing the exercises. He is still thinking, "I've become a student of Falun Gong. I keep doing the exercises. Why haven't I been cured?" Cultivation is a serious matter. That test of one's mind is a black or white issue. The more attached you are, the worse you will feel. When you go to the hospital for an examination you will be made to see that your illness has gotten worse. Yet you still don't enlighten to it. Since you still don't enlighten to it, it becomes more and more serious, and in the end you truly can't make it. That happens because you are not a genuine student, you don't study the Fa, and you can't let go of your attachment to your illness. You are just an ordinary person who wants to get his illness cured. The purpose of my disseminating Dafa is to save people at the fundamental level of their being, not to help ordinary people get cured. If you can truly cultivate, when you can truly let go of your attachment to living or your fear of death—and not just act that way for others to see while constantly thinking about it inside—then no matter what kind of illness you have, it will be cured. In cultivation, the difference between humanness and godhood is just the difference of one thought. This difference of one thought sounds easy, but it can be achieved only with a deep and solid foundation in cultivation. If you can really devote a lot of effort to studying the Fa, you will be able to achieve that.

Of course, whenever that situation comes up, usually the person is given one chance after another in Dafa over a long period of time, because he has obtained the Fa, after all. He is continually given chances and doesn't die, and he is given chance after chance. But if that person still doesn't get it after being given chances for so long, even if he has cultivated for years and has followed others in

doing Dafa work, if he still can't let go on a fundamental level of his attachment to getting healed, then on a fundamental level he is still not a student, and he will depart when he reaches the end of his lifespan. Ordinary people can do Dafa work too, and what they get are blessings. When cultivators do Dafa work, they don't seek ordinary blessings or a good life; the thing that is most important [to them] is raising their level. Cultivators don't seek the things of this world. Isn't being attached to your illness a pursuit of something in the human world? Some people say, "Once my illness heals I'll be able to do so many good things for Dafa! Why haven't I been cured yet?" Your getting well, your cultivating, and your becoming a Dafa disciple would all be conditional. You would cultivate and acknowledge [yourself as a Dafa disciple] only when your illness was cured. Cultivation is done unconditionally though, and things are gained naturally, with no pursuit.

Nothing is absolute, of course. What I was talking about were Fa truths. People's situations are different, and I was just giving an example. If everyone has a good understanding things will go smoothly. But when a person can't let go of his attachments it becomes really hard.

Disciple: I'm a Dafa disciple from Ireland, and I would like to send greetings to esteemed Teacher. For a long time now I haven't been doing well in spreading the Fa or in personal cultivation. Is there still time for me to make up for it?

Teacher: Then you should go ahead and do that. Since it's not over yet, yes, there is still time left. *(Everyone smiles and applauds)* Even if you haven't done well, no matter what, Master still doesn't want to leave any of you behind. *(Applause)*

I've said before that the Fa-rectification of the cosmos is one stage and the Fa's rectification of the human world is another stage. What that means is, Master is doing this in two steps. So I haven't taught you the Fa of the Three Realms, I have only taught you the Fa of the cosmos. I haven't talked about the structures of the different living things in the Three Realms, the origin of life, the structure of life, the history of the world, or the theories in this world from religion to science, such as where those things came from, what their purposes are, the reasons behind the different conflicts that take place in the human world—well, everything in history. And as for the state of the structure of the Three Realms and the different heavenly bodies in the Three Realms, I haven't talked to you about those things because they're so insignificant in the cosmos. The Three Realms doesn't deserve to be taught in Dafa, as they are too low. When I teach you the Great Law it encompasses the Three Realms. In the future you will know everything, and there won't be any need for me to tell you about things of the Three Realms. In the future I will handle things that have to do with human beings, and at that point I'll talk about the Fa of the Three Realms. When in the future it's time to do things in the Three Realms, that will be when the Fa rectifies the human world.

Because things are being done in two steps, a certain phenomenon has happened in the cosmos. What kind of phenomenon? It's that the Three Realms has been closed off all this time—the beings inside the Three Realms can't get out and the beings outside of the Three Realms can't get in. I was the one who closed things off from the beginning. The elements created early on by the old forces were and are still there and haven't been cleaned away completely, and before things are done at the surface of the human world, that portion of the old forces' elements is still having a negative effect. So, because the Fa-rectification and the Fa's rectification of the human world are being done in two different steps, the Three Realms needed to be separated from the cosmos. Since the beginning of my Fa-rectification—during the last ten-plus years—it has been continually moving away from the cosmos. Astronomers have seen that the heavenly bodies in the cosmos are no longer the heavenly bodies of the early times, and the Milky Way's position is no longer the same as it was early on, and the other star systems that were around the place where the Milky Way existed early on are no longer the same. That has happened because the Three Realms is being separated from the cosmos. Scientists discovered that

fact when it was in the process of being shifted, and they are saying that the cosmos is expanding. In actuality it is the heavenly bodies separating themselves from the Three Realms, as well as the Three Realms moving further and further away from its original location. During the last ten-plus years, the Three Realms has been moving out of the cosmos nonstop. As that has been happening, scientists have discovered that the heavenly bodies have undergone immense changes. Stars that didn't exist before have appeared, heavenly bodies that didn't exist before have appeared, and star systems that didn't exist before have appeared. So where did the stars and star systems that were originally there go to? Why has the cosmos undergone such enormous changes? Those things have in fact come about as a part of the movement of the Three Realms as it separates from the cosmos.

Hasn't the PureInsight website reported that? The cosmos is disappearing into the distance faster than the speed of light, and the Milky Way is being separated from the cosmos. Since it has reached the point where even human beings can see this phase, it means that the separation has arrived at the most surface level. Early on when I was beginning to do this, some gods told me, "In the future, human beings will all be able to see the things that you did, and they will realize in the end that you were the one who did them." That is the case because certain manifestations will gradually converge on where I am.

Once the separation is complete, the dimensions outside of the Milky Way won't even exist. Human beings will find the emptiness terrifying. The stars that used to exist outside of the Milky Way and all the heavenly bodies that were scattered everywhere outside of the Milky Way will be gone. The PureInsight website reported that our Milky Way will become the "lonely soul and roaming ghost" of the cosmos. You might wonder, "What would be the reason for that phenomenon?" It seems as though people—including scientists—are indifferent to it, but it's only because they don't understand it. If such a thing had happened in the cosmos in the past, then the Milky Way would not have existed anymore. If separated from the cosmos, [the Milky Way] would not have been able to exist and would have disintegrated. The Fa-rectification of the cosmos and the Fa's rectification of the human world are being done in two steps, so the Three Realms has to be separated from the cosmos. If the Fa-rectification of the cosmos was complete—and everything was new and pure—but the Three Realms was still so filthy, it would pollute the cosmos. It wouldn't do to have such a filthy place inside such a wonderful cosmos, so it needs to be moved out and taken care of separately. That's why they will be separated. (*Applause*) Scientists have now discovered what I described.

Disciple: What do we do about correcting the Chinese characters in "On Buddha Law / Lunyu" that some practitioners have hanging on their walls...?

Teacher: Yes, you can correct the "On Buddha Law" text hanging on your wall. Just make the corrections with the appropriate color. Well actually, any method will do.

Disciple: How can we help newer students in China step forward?

Teacher: When it comes to newer students, you can't be too hasty with them since they need to go through a process of improving their understanding. If of their own initiative they offer to do something, then let them. But if they don't want to do something out of their own initiative, I don't think we can compel them to do anything, since they are still newer students after all.

Disciple: How should we view the big corporations outside of China that are poised to make investments in China, and how should we look at our family members' wanting to go back to China?

Teacher: If your family members don't cultivate and want to go back to China, then that's fine. If you are a cultivator it's best that you don't go back—wouldn't you be setting yourself up for persecution? As a Dafa disciple, you wouldn't be able to bear not doing what Dafa disciples are

supposed to do, but if you did those things you would be persecuted. And also, there are things here that you should do.

As for a lot of corporations planning to make investments in China, don't do anything about that for now. You should just clarify the facts and tell people what Dafa is about and why it's being persecuted. Bring to light the despicable farces and all of the low acts committed by the government where they made up lies and slander, expose the evil's suppression, tell the world's people about these things and help them see all of this clearly—then you will have reached your goal. When you clarify the truth just talk about things at that level and don't go any higher. As far as some company wanting to make investments somewhere, if you get a chance, all you can say is: "It's only because of investments from you guys that the group of evildoers in China has the money to fund the persecution. You can see how scary it is when they display their wickedness, right? Hasn't your company been subjected to its coercion?" We won't get involved with whether they make investments there. All we can do is talk to them using principles at a very shallow level.

But I think that with material gain right in front of them some people are willing to listen and some aren't, so that issue isn't the focus. The focus is to tell people why Falun Gong is being persecuted and how evil the persecutors are, and that will be enough. Once people can see those evil things clearly, that will expel from their minds the poisonous elements from the propaganda produced by the slanderous media of China's communist government. This means you've saved those people, and that one act enabled them to make it to the next stage. Otherwise when the Fa's rectification of the human world arrives and that powerful *gong* comes...the Fa-rectification has standards, and at that point they definitely won't have any other chances to understand [the truth]. The standards hold true from the highest place in the cosmos down to the lowest. However a being is at that point, that will be it, and everything will be dealt with in the fastest time. Those who should be weeded out will be weeded out, those who should remain will remain, those who should be raised up will be raised up, and those who should be lowered will be lowered. It will be over in a flash. Whatever is in a being's mind determines what he [or his situation] is, so there won't be any more chances at that point. If a person has the poison from that wicked, villainous gang cleared away, then he will make it past that stage. So at the very least he'll be able to witness the changes that happen in the future.

Disciple: I'm a little disciple from Taiwan. On behalf of the little disciples from Taiwan, I'd like to present a lotus flower to Master. (Master smiles) (Audience smiles and applauds) We thank our magnificent Master.

Teacher: Thank you. This little lotus flower is truly beautifully done. (*Applause*) This is the sort of consideration and thought that Dafa disciples have put into clarifying the truth. You've really worked hard and have come up with so many ideas to save people. Today's people are really hard to save. [It seems as though] they'll listen only if what you tell them is in line with their ideas, and they'll listen only if you talk to them in a way that they like. In other words, if you want to save them, they have conditions for you to do so. (*Master smiles*)

Disciple: Master, one of my family members practices and says that he's special. He doesn't send righteous thoughts or clarify the truth, and he seldom studies Fa other than Zhuan Falun. Right now in the Fa-rectification period we are busy with all sorts of projects. If I spent a lot of time helping him, I would find it hard to make enough time for other things.

Teacher: That's true. If he is a newer student, then you should show some understanding towards him. If he is a veteran student, then he's definitely in the wrong. As far as how to help him, there is no special method for doing it. Take a look to see where he's off track and take the appropriate course of action to address it. Remove the hurdle in his mind and find his attachment.

Disciple: How do we truly break apart the old force's arrangements, move beyond selfishness, and become true Fa-rectification disciples?

Teacher: The cosmos in the past was based on selfishness. Let's take man as an example: when it came to crucial moments he truly couldn't care less about others. When I started Fa-rectification, some gods said to me, "You're the only one who gets involved in others' business." I know, you find this hard to believe, because you are altruistic beings created by Dafa that have roles in Fa-rectification and that have truly enlightened. If I didn't do that, with the end of history all lives would end. When a being is considerate of others in doing things and displays tolerance in the process, it's because his starting point is selfless.

When Dafa cultivators find selfishness in themselves, they should gradually work to overcome it. Becoming aware of it means that you have taken another step forward in cultivation, because a non-practitioner can't become aware of it and it doesn't occur to him to think about whether he is selfish. Only cultivators make a practice of examining themselves and looking within.

Disciple: Dafa disciples from Fushun send their greetings to you. (Master says "Thank you.") I have a slow-paced personality. I'm normally slow when I work and am often criticized for it. Do I need to change my ways when I'm doing work?

Teacher: There are indeed people who have a slow-paced personality. I know I have a fast-paced personality, and I do everything very very quickly. If you say something needs to be done, I'll be out the door before others are even ready. *(Master chuckles) (Applause)* Put another way, I've developed this fast pace, and I hurry up and hurry up with everything I do. Of course, I'm not saying that a slow-paced personality is not good. Some people have just gotten into the habit of doing things that way. But I think it's better if we can speed up a little when it comes to saving people. *(Master smiles) (Audience laughs and applauds)* But it's not that you have to change your personality.

This is how beings in the cosmos are. Everyone is different: some are slow while others are fast, and some tend to be anxious while others are even-keeled. For some, they are just slow-paced with everything they do, and that can't be called an attachment. However, you should hurry up in matters of saving people and the things that Dafa disciples should do. I don't think that has anything to do with your personality. You should know what "hurrying up" means no matter how slow your personality is.

Disciple: I am a newer disciple. I'm very anxious to travel the Fa-rectification path well, but I am not sure, is that a type of attachment? How do I tell?

Teacher: You are a student who recently obtained the Fa, so don't be overly anxious. With many things you can't be held to the same requirements as the veteran students. But there are indeed some newer students who have been doing really well. They are deeply involved in doing things for Dafa and are doing what Dafa disciples need to do. They are truly amazing. Sometimes I really think those latecomers have great awakening capacity. Cultivation consists of step-by-step improvement, and it's not realistic to expect you to soar to a high level all at once and be like veteran students, since they, too, got to where they are through cultivating and improving step by step. Now that you've obtained Dafa you have nothing to worry about. Just go ahead and systematically do what needs to be done, and do what Dafa disciples should do—go as far as your understanding takes you with things. There's no problem with any of that.

Disciple: Would Master explain what effect it will have on our work if Dafa disciples do well in their coordination and cooperation, and what the result will be if we don't do those so well?

Teacher: The evil will take advantage and cause trouble if you don't coordinate and cooperate well. With a lot of the Fa-rectification things, it's not that there is no way to do them. No matter how

hard it is, there is a path for you to take, even though it is a fairly narrow one. You have to go down that path correctly, and it won't work if you come up even a little short or stray a little bit. Nevertheless, there is a path for you. In other words, you need to go down it correctly. If you don't, the evil that currently exists will take advantage of it and cause trouble. In fact what I've just been talking about is the question of validating yourself versus validating the Fa when you work together on something—that's the issue.

When everyone is discussing something, you may get upset over someone expressing disapproval of your idea, but if nobody raises objections and everyone says, "This is a pretty good idea, and that one's not bad either"—so that nobody gets offended—I'd say that these students aren't being very responsible to Dafa or to their own cultivation. They don't dare to face a conflict and don't dare to address things directly, and they don't dare to speak up when they see a problem. That is being too attached to self, and that's selfishness. If you deal with a problem without the attachment to self and calmly put forward ideas about how to tackle the problem well, I don't think others will feel uncomfortable upon hearing it, because you're doing it for the Fa. This is one point.

Another point is, if someone's proposal is rejected and that person feels upset, then he really has a problem. Usually the only time when discussions about matters of validating Dafa go off track is when some attachment to self is stirred up. Go ahead and watch for this attentively—if you don't believe me, when you leave here and go home watch for it attentively. When you're talking something over, look at who is taking the conversation off track, and the person who is doing that has a problem for sure. (*Audience laughs and applauds*) The person who goes off topic is being attached to self, or when his concepts are challenged, driven by a human mindset he gets upset and sets aside Dafa's things. At those times he will be taken advantage of by the evil—he will stray further and further from the original subject as he argues, and the evil will take advantage. At that point he will get more and more upset, and the more upset he gets, the more his human mindset is in fact intensified by the evil and the less he is in a state of cultivation, so the evil will take advantage even further. Where do you think a wicked understanding, or "enlightening" along an evil path, come from? Isn't that where they come from? The evil takes advantage of his attachments and makes fake thoughts show up in his mind, but he considers them real and thinks they're quite reasonable. He's thinking, "None of you understand me, and when all is said and done your cultivation levels aren't as high as mine, and none of you understand the Fa as well as I do." (*Master chuckles*) That's how it ends up.

Disciple: Dafa disciples' efforts in New York City have changed the situation a lot, and many ordinary people have been moved by what they've seen at our anti-torture exhibits. But more and more Westerners have told us that they are seeing too many of those horrifying images, causing them to lose sympathy for us. Would Master please enlighten us on that?

Teacher: Maybe they say that the anti-torture exhibits you hold to clarify the truth are too shocking, but what I can tell you is that your actions are positive, and the energy is righteous and compassionate, so it absolutely will not shock people in any kind of negative way. Instead, the discomfort that some people feel must have been caused by bad thoughts in those people's minds. Don't people hang everywhere that graphic image of Jesus being crucified, with his hands and feet pierced by nails and bleeding? Haven't people been viewing that image for hundreds or thousands of years? So the problem doesn't lie in what is presented. Haven't Dafa disciples been subjected to similar ordeals in the persecution? You are not trying to use art to portray evil acts, you are saving people. There must be a reason why some people have negative reactions, there must be problems with their state of mind. Perhaps the evil is controlling their minds, or if not, then it's that their notions are not right. Even the people who sympathize with Dafa disciples have notions that have come out of ordinary society, and in terms of understanding, they may feel uncomfortable because of that. Don't worry,

though, this can be resolved by a little more thorough explanation.

A human being may form different notions in the world. Some people think spicy food is good, some think sour food is, some like sweet food, and some like bland. Those are all tendencies of one's own making. Even if a comedy is playing in Manhattan, there are still a whole lot of people who don't like it and criticize it. That's how human beings are. There are people on both sides, positive and negative, and humans just live within the principle of mutual generation and mutual inhibition. They can't all be the same. Maybe there are more people out there who think the anti-torture exhibits are good, only they haven't said so. We can no longer keep making compromises to accommodate those with a lot of obstacles in their minds at the expense of saving good people. We are saving the world's people. Some can't bear to see these things, but there are more people who can, and who are moved, awakened, and saved. (*Applause*)

If someone thinks he can't stand it, well, let's think about it. With such a righteous field and the evil exposed so explicitly, and all of what is shown is actually happening in real life, yet there's this person who still raises issues like that, then doesn't that person have problems? He does, for sure. No matter how hard you work and how much you put into clarifying the truth, let me tell you, there will always be people in this world that you can't save. There is always going to be a portion that can't be saved. We can't be discouraged or demoralized because of those people. How could we be affected by and thus go along with whatever some people might say? We are here to change people, not to be changed by them. (*Applause*)

Everything we are giving people is wonderful, and we are saving people. We can't compromise to accommodate those who are no longer good and who obstruct the salvation of people, leading to good people not being saved. Of course, when we talk about those who are no longer good, they are not necessarily completely bad, and perhaps it's caused by their notions. But you have to stay coolheaded and rational when it comes to this. Don't be swayed by that small number of people and don't be affected by people. You should be very clear in your mind about what you're doing: you are saving people, you are doing the most righteous and most magnificent thing! (*Applause*) Our students have taken such great pains and overcome so much adversity in putting together the anti-torture exhibits. It's no small feat.

The key is actually that we ourselves be clearheaded. We should act with the power of conviction, not timidly or hesitantly. You can't see the fact that you are beings walking the road to godhood. (*Applause*) So you are different from ordinary people and you cannot be affected by them. The gods all admire you for the things you're doing in Manhattan, they truly admire you. Whether it's the gods that are playing positive roles or the ones playing negative roles, they all admire you. The world's people do too. The universal values of what is good and what is evil haven't changed.

Disciple: Is the question of priority involved when it comes to the Dafa work we do in Fa-rectification? If some students want to do Dafa work related to a specific nationality or language because of their own nationality or native tongue, shouldn't they put that aside for the time being and focus on the Dafa work at hand?

Teacher: It's not wrong to want to do Dafa work related to one's nationality or language. Master can't give you specific answers to these questions, because every student is doing things to clarify the truth and save sentient beings. Maybe those people have things that they have to do. But when it's necessary for you to work together on something as a group, Dafa disciples need to cooperate well.

Disciple: I have a question. You said a little earlier that once the persecution is over everything will be set. I'd like to ask, will the ordinary people who are still deceived have any more chances?

Teacher: A being will be whatever is contained in his head, and both for a being who is to be eliminated and one who is to have things end well for him, it will be over instantly in one pass. Some people may say that they just believe in a certain political party or that they just want to work for that party. If the Law of the cosmos considers that party good, then they will be kept when that flash of a moment comes; if the Law of the cosmos considers that party evil, then they'll be wiped out when that moment comes. At that point clarifying the facts will be no more and giving people extra chances to come to some understanding will be no more. At that point there won't be such things anymore, and people will be a member of whatever they contain and will be seen as an element of it. A person will be a part of whatever his head contains, and everything will be over in the blink of an eye.

Disciple: We often participate in community parades in the United States and have been well received by a lot of groups. Would Master tell us how we might help people come to know about Dafa while conforming to the way of ordinary people to the greatest extent? When we have disagreements, should we leave them for our own discussion or report them to Master? (Audience laughs)

Teacher: When you encounter problems you should talk them over together since you are cultivating. It can't be that whenever you have a problem you have Master go cultivate. *(Audience laughs and applauds)* Isn't that true? So when you encounter problems you should figure out how to address them, and whether you overcome those challenges or resolve them upon agreeing on a solution, those are opportunities for you to establish mighty virtue. That process is in fact the process of maturing, of moving towards the future, and is one of the steps you take on the road to godhood. *(Applause)* You definitely shouldn't leave the specifics to Master. *(Audience laughs)*

So how should you help all beings come to know Dafa? Once you've clarified the facts and have truly helped people understand the persecution and know that Dafa is a positive thing, that's good enough. If a person thinks that Falun Gong is really good and expresses a desire to know more about Falun Gong, then you may explain to him at an extremely basic level that Falun Gong asks its practitioners to be good, and in the end you may tell him that we are striving to become better and better people and to reach spiritual perfection. That is all you can tell him, and you can't go beyond that. You would scare him if you started telling him things at higher levels.

And people's realms of thought are different. For example, if you taught college classes to a first grade kid, he'd refuse to go to school and he wouldn't go to class anymore. *(Applause)* You have reached your current realms and levels step by step through cultivation, and if you want to tell him everything all at once, that's the same as wanting to lift him up from being an ordinary person to where you are instantaneously. *(Master chuckles)* Even I, your Master, don't do that. *(Audience laughs)* I can have a being, after he is rid of all low-level factors, reach a level of any height, and I can create beings at any height. But if you want a low-level being to understand things at such high levels, under normal circumstances that being can't handle it. So people have to understand step by step. Why do I ask you not to talk about things at high levels? Why do I ask you to clarify the facts rationally? That's why. So when some students are not quite rational and talk about things at very high levels right away when clarifying the facts, and when they even talk about gods-this and gods-that to government officials and tell them that their Master is so-and-so *(Audience laughs)*, people think that you're talking nonsense. *(Audience laughs)* That's not the way to clarify the facts. The understanding of a cultivator is acquired step by step through cultivation, and in general people will find it very hard to comprehend if you want them to understand things at such high levels right away. If they can't understand, then it becomes counterproductive and in essence it will have a harmful effect.

Disciple: Some new students have entered the Way and obtained the Fa over the past two years in San Diego, California, and predestined people keep coming every week to learn the practice. Some of those newer students are quite capable and are qualified to get involved in projects to validate the

Fa. Shall we have them go straight into doing the three things or ask them to study the Fa and do the exercises only, and then involve them later on in projects to validate the Fa?

Teacher: I can see that you are very short-handed and are anxious to get some capable new students involved. But I still think it's better not to be hasty. Why is that? Because when veteran students talk about things together and are in that state where they are not very mindful of the way they come across, it will scare the new students. [Because of] your energy, even though your words might not be strong, to them they are strong. And though you might not raise your voice, to them it sounds like thunder. *(Audience laughs)* That's truly how it feels to them. So you should wait and not get the newer students involved until they've gained a certain level of understanding and knowledge, and had a chance to improve gradually—at least until they have some deeper insight into Dafa. That way it won't lead to their giving up cultivation out of a lack of understanding on something.

Disciple: Ever since the persecution began I've been bogged down with the courses at my research institute and have had no time for anything else. I haven't had much time for Dafa work and I surely haven't devoted 100% of my time to Dafa work. Will I reach the level I'm supposed to?

Teacher: If your job truly has you tied up it's not a problem. As you do your job well, make time to study the Fa and use whatever chance you get to do the things that Dafa disciples should do, like clarifying the facts. There are always going to be busy times and not-so-busy times, and it can't be that everyone is busy at the same time or everyone is not busy at the same time. Some are busy when others aren't busy. For a cultivator, however, nothing is constant forever. Whether for the moment you are busy or not, just do what you're supposed to do, and everything may change as time passes. So this is what I think: don't use being busy as an excuse for yourself to not do anything or to neglect Fa study. And there are those who get really worried when they're busy, and that won't do, either. Do what you can based on your situation.

What I just said does apply to clarifying the facts in Manhattan. Those who have the ability and whose circumstances allow them to come may come, and those whose circumstances don't allow them to come shouldn't. It's not that all of you have to do things the same way. When all of you are doing things from your hearts, then that is genuine. Master has never ordered you to do anything. All I've done is to tell you what you should do, and some students go and do it. Just do what Dafa disciples should do based on your situation and your ability to do so. It won't work if you force things when your situation doesn't allow. If you do that, you will bring about problems in both your daily life and your cultivation, and that's no good.

Disciple: Dafa disciples in Turkey send their greetings to you. When might you be willing to visit Turkey? What do you think of Turkey?

Teacher: The principle part of every single nation's population came for Dafa, so I don't want to leave any nation behind as Dafa is spread. And that is why I ask you to go clarify the facts. Dafa disciples in different regions should indeed do well the things that should be done. The sentient beings are waiting for you.

As for when I will visit Turkey, I'll definitely go when the opportunity comes along. *(Applause)* I will travel to every corner of the globe in the future *(enthusiastic applause)*, because I have to take care of every person you saved as you clarified the truth.

Disciple: I've seen some fellow practitioners who, after playing the role of the evil policemen a lot in the anti-torture exhibits, demonstrate more demon nature than before. Is there a correlation? (Audience laughs)

Teacher: No, there isn't. That's just in your mind. *(Master smiles)* It will be okay once they go

home, study the Fa, and adjust their mindsets a little.

Disciple: Some Dafa disciples recently started a center for and school of the arts, which are open to the public. I'd like to ask for Master's advice on how we should go about playing our roles before the Fa rectifies the human world, given the fact that there are so many Dafa projects going on and finances are tight.

Teacher: Whether it's Dafa disciples running companies or opening schools, I think these are normal activities that they do as members of society. They are means to make a living and might create job opportunities for fellow practitioners at the same time. Also, some ordinary people can be reached through our interacting with society in this way, and they might come to benefit from it.

You asked how you should go about playing your roles before the Fa rectifies the human world. You can do it according to your ability. Running a school of the arts is different from other professions. A school of the arts can teach students to be good people by following Zhen, Shan, Ren. And the school can participate in performances sponsored by Dafa disciples, helping people see another side of the Dafa disciples and see for themselves the contrast between the evilness of that political party and of that arch fiend and the goodness of Dafa disciples. So this should be a really good thing. The Chinese New Year Gala sponsored by New Tang Dynasty TV aims to reach out to and engage more Chinese people so as to clarify the facts to them and save them. If the performances were poor, then nobody would watch, and we wouldn't achieve our goal of saving beings. Good performances will serve that purpose, or at least serve as a bridge. If the school really becomes a success then it can participate in our performances. So all of this is good.

Disciple: Some students have been cultivating for a long time and seem to understand the importance of validating the Fa, yet they haven't been very diligent. How do we help them?

Teacher: There are no miracle cures. Everyone has to cultivate himself solidly before he can rise to higher levels. As far as those who aren't diligent, take a look to see where their thoughts are stuck. There must be a reason for their inadequate understanding of what Dafa disciples must do—try to find out, what do they care about most right now? Since they are our students, we have to take responsibility for them and talk to them. If they were ordinary people we wouldn't need to worry about it. It is fine for ordinary people to care about whatever they'd like. They don't want to cultivate, so we won't bother them. Once somebody starts cultivating, though, that person will be in danger amidst the evil's persecution if he can't keep up, so you have to take responsibility for him.

*Disciple: The "Nine Commentaries on the Chinese *** Party" that has been carried by the newspaper run by Dafa disciples are great, but I worry that ordinary people who don't understand us will say that we're getting political.*

Teacher: That won't happen. Everyone knows that that political party is persecuting Falun Gong. All we're doing is telling people why that political party is persecuting Falun Gong and, meanwhile, telling them what that party hopes to achieve through its persecution, why the CCP is persecuting Falun Gong, and what fundamental differences there are between Falun Gong and the CCP. So we'll just talk about what that political party is and why it is opposed to Zhen, Shan, Ren. But as far as cultivation is concerned, one of our principles of personal cultivation and of clarifying the facts is that we don't get involved in those things. There is an important connection between the media's exposure of the CCP's persecution of Dafa disciples and saving all beings. The persecution of Falun Gong has been carried out in the name of that certain political party, one that has poisoned many people in the course of its persecution. In order to save those people it's important to help them see that party for what it is.

The Minghui website has not reported on this because, from a perspective that's closer to Dafa cultivation, it is not a key issue. The media reports are another way of saving all beings.

As far as who will govern China in the future, whoever wants to, let him. That has nothing to do with us. Whether he is good or bad, that's a human matter, and we are cultivators. If you didn't persecute us, then we wouldn't need to expose you. You have the gall to do those terrible things, so why don't you have the courage to face up to it?

Disciple: A lot of students who were involved with making FGM television programs don't do them anymore since they are tied up with the recent truth-clarification efforts in Manhattan and preparations for the New Year's Gala.

Teacher: Master can't say anything about that because those are things for you to work out yourselves. They are all important. I watch all of the programs done by FGM—every one of them. *(Applause)* So they are all important, and you shouldn't overlook any one of them. In fact, I see that all of you are truly busy, and each person is working on multiple projects. Coordinate among yourselves, Master can't say anything specific.

Disciple: (Translated question) Since the great firmament was created by Dafa, how could it be in such an improper state today that it needs Master to rectify it? Disciples from Hamilton, New Zealand, send their greetings to Master.

Teacher: Thank you. *(Applause)* The cosmos's former characteristics determined the cycles it went through. So, what were the characteristics? They were "formation-stasis-degeneration-destruction-emptiness," and that is what the old cosmos is like. The cosmos is enormous, and when degeneration and destruction took place on a small scale or in a localized area, that area was blown up in an explosion, and then a void followed. After it became a void, the matter still existed, so the gods would use that dead matter to create a new layer in the cosmos from scratch. The process is very similar to human metabolism. If problems cropped up in a larger area, then that larger area had to be blown up and new beings were created afterwards. No one thinks about whether his metabolism has anything to do with mercy. Well, high-level gods in the cosmos look at the process of formation-stasis-degeneration-destruction the way humans look at metabolism—they have no concept of whether it's merciful or not. The cosmos is alive, and if the cells in part of this organic body were no longer up to par, then that part needed to be weeded out and replaced. That's why a similar process occurs in humans: birth-aging-sickness-death.

The future cosmos will be different in that regard. Once something reaches the stage of degeneration, it will be made whole and renewed so that it becomes good again. So that is different from the old cosmos. *(Applause)*

All of the future beings will be selfless, while the beings of the past were selfish. *(Applause)* Some beings have no regard for others as they pursue the things they want, and that has been demonstrated in this world thoroughly. For the sake of proving a point or to save face, some people in the world go to any length to harm others and never consider others' welfare. Some people's selfishness surfaces in a very vicious way—some of them deliberately seek out people to push around and always look down on others. Who gave them the right to do that? Nobody. You shouldn't be like that, nobody that cultivates in Dafa should be like that.

Disciple: Thank you, venerable Master, for your merciful salvation. Please help us understand how to put the skills we've acquired in society to use in truth clarification.

Teacher: I think that every Dafa disciple is making use of his skills and abilities to save all beings and validate Dafa. Dafa disciples are running websites, and media outlets such as radio stations

and TV stations, and it's all for the singular purpose of clarifying the facts. At this point the Chinese communist government and that arch fiend's evil, villainous faction have used financial leverage so that they now have society's media in the palm of their hand. Nobody is reporting on the persecution we're being subjected to, so with no other recourse, Dafa disciples have worked together to do these things. What I mean is, you have taken it upon yourselves to do these things, and Master didn't specifically take the lead on any of these things. It's true that Master has affirmed what you've done or told you what I felt you should do—that much I can say. But, as for what each person should do, Master can't tell you too specifically. That's because once Master said something, others would think, "Master has asked him to do that," and you too would think, "Master has asked me to do that," so then you wouldn't do or take care of anything else. And when you were needed with other things, you would have an excuse: "Master asked me to do *this*." (*Teacher chuckles*) I would have given you an attachment, and that's no good. So you need to do a lot of things on your own. You should establish your own mighty virtue, and that is what's truly magnificent.

Disciple: As we're clarifying the facts, if some people acknowledge that the persecution is wrong but Dafa doesn't resonate with them, and we don't have time to clarify things more thoroughly for the time being, what should we do? Should we make helping people know about the persecution first priority and do that on a large scale?

Teacher: It doesn't matter whether Dafa resonates with them or not. But if they have a negative view of Dafa, that is a result of being poisoned by the evil, and it's necessary for you to clarify things to them. In general when it comes to clarifying the facts, it means talking about the persecution—you don't need to talk about things related to Dafa cultivation. It's fine if people don't want to cultivate. You should tell them that we are a group of good people, and our Dafa teaches people to be good. [You might want to have an attitude like,] "It doesn't matter whether it resonates with you, I'm not trying to persuade you to learn Dafa. I'm just trying to tell you that the persecution is wicked and that what you know is actually venomous disinformation." And that will be enough. Those who come to learn the Fa do so of their own accord, not because they were dragged into it. You absolutely must remember this: we don't want to impose anything on anyone.

Disciple: We have been sending a lot of e-mails to China. The e-mail team has been dealing with tremendous challenges, both with technology and in terms of manpower. Is this because of xinxing problems with the people left on our team or is it because the old forces blocked us off?

Teacher: You each have your own path. I think there are two reasons behind what you brought up: first, there are just so many things to do and as a result you are shorthanded; and second, maybe you've overlooked things in your personal cultivation, so the evil has taken advantage of the gaps, as Dafa disciples need to do each of the three things. Some people have said, "Master, in recent years, especially since July 20, 1999, I've found that my improvement through reading the book has slowed down. It's not like before, when I had that really good feeling of making a breakthrough every day and of my understanding improving really quickly." Why is it that you don't feel as good now reading the book as you did before? It's not that the Fa isn't powerful anymore. It's that the requirements are higher, and that Dafa disciples must do all three things well before they will see improvement. (*Applause*)

Some people who started studying the Fa in the earlier period say that they read the book at home and that they won't go out and do the things that Dafa disciples must do. I'm thinking that those people are not too far away from having a wicked understanding, and they are lucky if they haven't begun to stray. Over the past few years, Dafa disciples have been validating the Fa amidst the persecution and saving beings through clarifying the truth. Those people won't improve at all, no matter how much they may read the book at home. If you don't do the things that Dafa disciples should

do, not only won't you improve, but you will only slide downwards. "Dafa disciple"... "Dafa disciple," what does being a "Fa-Rectification Period Dafa Disciple" mean? It is the foremost title and *the* most magnificent being in the cosmos. If you only care about your own salvation, will that do? How could that be called being a "Dafa disciple"? What is a "Fa-Rectification Period Dafa Disciple"? Have you validated the Fa? You came when Dafa benefited you, yet you hid out and didn't dare to speak up for Dafa when it faced danger. You have shown yourself to be less worthy than an ordinary person, so what's the point of "studying the Fa at home"? All beings are being poisoned in the persecution, so how could you feel at ease being in hiding? Why are Dafa disciples clarifying the truth and saving beings? Because that is Dafa disciples' duty. That is the kind of being that I, Li Hongzhi, want, and a Dafa disciple is that kind of cultivator.

Disciple: It seems that fellow practitioners as a whole do not pay much attention to overcoming the evil's economic persecution, so a lot of practitioners have long been at low-paying jobs, and have thereby been limited by time and financial constraints in validating the Fa.

Teacher: That problem does indeed exist, but sometimes it's our own doing or our own shortcoming of not taking everything into consideration that causes those things to happen. Dafa disciples are walking on a righteous path in validating the Fa and are saving all beings, so all aspects of that path, including financial conditions, should come together. If you don't do well in certain regards the evil will take advantage of the gap. With anything, as long as you do it well, everything will change.

Disciple: Would you say a few words to disciples who are involved in composing music? We haven't done as well as the disciples who are artists.

Teacher: We're not concerned with comparisons between artist disciples and musician disciples and who's doing better than whom. (*Audience laughs*) Those are just matters of self-improvement and differences in level. The Dafa disciples who compose music have a special duty to do so, and that is on top of clarifying the truth. To save all beings, Dafa disciples have composed some songs, including ones performed at the Gala. Those songs were composed by Dafa disciples themselves, and it's pretty remarkable. On the day when I taught the Fa to the artist Dafa disciples, I also attended the meetings of the disciples responsible for creating music and theatre arts, and I taught the Fa there. It wasn't recorded at the time, though. I'll say more on this in the future when the opportunity comes along. (*Applause*)

Disciple: There are many disciples who do not pay attention to their appearance and how they carry themselves, such as the way they look, speak, and behave.

Teacher: Let me talk about something extra here. Traditionally different gods have had different views on individual human beings' appearances. You may know that some people who cultivated the Dao in the past didn't care much about how they looked. At least the Daoists who cultivated in this world were like that, and especially the lesser ones, who cared even less about outward appearances. They were pretty slovenly and didn't groom themselves. A small number of them even cultivated in a dirty setting on purpose. Why was that? They felt that for a cultivator, being too particular about the way one dressed was an attachment and that it was better to be casual about it. And what other phenomenon did they see? Cultivation forms in the past cultivated assistant souls, so they discovered something in their cultivation, which was, over time as a person cultivated, everything on his body started to have energy on it. Those people looked bad on this side, but in the eyes of the assistant souls that had completed cultivation on the other side, those things all looked good. That happened because the matter in this dimension changes as a person cultivates, and it gains energy. So as the energy increases, what shows on the other side is supernatural treasure made of energy, from the

other side the dirt and mud all over the person's body look like treasures covering the body, glittering and dazzling. But on this side—the human world—what one saw was filth covering the person's head and entire body, he was just dirty from head to toe, with just a lot of dirt and mud on the body. Consistent practice led to the mud and dirty things being fortified by the energy gained through cultivation, so the things the assistant souls took away were all good ones. They saw that, so they intentionally refrained from grooming themselves.

Now let's look at it from another angle. As you know, in Western society people care a lot about appearance and demeanor. Since they don't have that culture of cultivation, they have no concept of these matters. The cultivation in Buddhism teaches that everything a cultivator has was granted to him by the Buddha—he will get whatever Attainment Status the Buddha gives him, and he will get whatever he is supposed to get and not get what he's not supposed to get. The same goes for gods in the West. Of course, though, Dafa is different from all prior forms of cultivation.

Before the 1960s, as the Western students may recall, the men were gentlemanly, well mannered, and civilized. The women were gracious and placed a lot of importance on being well educated and cultured. Humans might have thought it was good, and actually gods didn't think it was all that bad, either. But it led to human beings easily becoming obsessed with it. It got to a point where a person's worth was judged by his manner of speaking and demeanor. A person was deemed noble—or not—based on that, rather than on his fundamental character. Later on, since all human beings came here to obtain the Fa, all actions and tendencies that stood in the way of cultivation had to be removed, and so the old forces got involved and they did that with the approach of using a bad thing to fight a bad thing. Do you know why, once the 1960s began, hippies and street artists appeared, people started having a slovenly appearance and acting against traditional values, and when it came to clothes, the more casual it was, the more fashionable it was? People's outer layer of clothing was smaller than their inner layer, their sleeves covered their hands and only their fingertips were left exposed, the waists of their pants got lower, with their pant legs bunched up on top of their feet—basically, the sloppier it was, the better. I can tell you that it was definitely not just a fashion trend. The old forces did it in order to remove that human fixation on appearance by using a bad thing to fight a bad thing. There is actually nothing wrong at all with dressing neatly, but nothing should become a fixation. Once something becomes a fixation, the human mind has deviated and that leads those human beings to go to extremes with it.

Before the Cultural Revolution in China, the Chinese were quite neat, clean, and civilized, with five thousand years of civilization behind them. You know that the Japanese have always been very clean and neat, right? A few centuries ago when things were not as developed, the Japanese would bathe in a wooden barrel every day with water that was heated in a big pot. They did that even during periods that were extremely underdeveloped. And do you know what? That was the way people lived in the Tang Dynasty, too—it was exactly the same with people in the Tang Dynasty. It's not that the people in ancient times were not clean. It's that today's people don't know how the ancients lived. The people in different dynasties and different periods were all the same, they didn't change. The only difference was with the way they dressed. Today's people portray the ancients as being backward, but that actually comes out of reasoning based on the theory of evolution. The Cultural Revolution did away with the "Four Olds"¹⁹ and thought of cleanliness and tidiness as a "bourgeois mentality"—to quote the absurd words of a certain political party, it was a "bourgeois mentality." They would cut off women's braids, if they found someone walking down the street with high heels they would take the shoes off their feet and chop off the heels, and they would use scissors to cut apart any nice-looking clothes you might have on. That political party in China put forward the slogan of "get a hand full of

¹⁹ Defined as "old ways of thinking, old culture, old customs, and old traditions."

calluses, roll around until covered with mud, and live with ‘revolutionary bugs’ all over the body.” (*Audience laughs*) It took only a few years to completely ruin the Chinese civilization.

I do know that some Caucasian students frown upon the appearances of some Chinese students. [That kind of appearance] is a product of being in that society, and over time they got used to it and it came to be a habit, and they aren’t aware of the inappropriateness of their actions and demeanor. Nothing should go to extremes, of course, so keep to the way of human beings as much as possible, and act like a normal, dignified person. You can’t be too sloppy, casual, careless about manners, or informal.

In fact, from a cultivation perspective, even though it doesn’t make a difference whether or not you pay attention to the way you look and it won’t affect your cultivation, the key is that you can’t get attached either way. The Chinese would say, “I just like to be casual. The more casual the better. It’s so much easier to be sloppy and untidy.” I would say that isn’t good. A Dafa disciple should be a role model for others and look like a dignified human being. When I was teaching the Fa and giving classes in Mainland China, I always dressed formally, and it was to set an example for you. (*Applause*) And that is because some people feel that actions speak louder than words. Whether those people are right or not, some practitioners just want to copy what Master does—“I’ll dress how Master dresses.” (*Audience laughs*) So I pay attention to the way I look and so should all of you. The Cultural Revolution did indeed ravage the Chinese culture so terribly, it destroyed five thousand years of civilization in a matter of a few years. So Chinese should pay more attention to their appearance and demeanor, Western students should refrain from judging people based on appearance, and Asian students as a whole should mind their behavior more. (*Audience applauds*) No one should go to extremes.

Disciple: How should we look at things that have had a negative effect on ordinary people in the Fa-rectification period?

Teacher: Yes, you might clarify the facts very well, but if people find you to be too displeasing to the eye and hear you using crude language, they won’t think you are credible. If you don’t do well in truth clarification you will have a negative effect. You need to bear all of this in mind.

Disciple: How should we as disciples look at the incident that happened in Argentina?

Teacher: As far as that goes, I think that if anyone persecutes Dafa disciples we should hold them accountable. We will explain the facts if that’s what is needed, and when someone is injured, we’ll take it to the courts if necessary. There are precedents for all these things, and you can do whatever you need to.

Disciple: If my mind isn’t clear or calm when I do the exercises, can I cleanse myself the way we do during the five minutes right before we send forth righteous thoughts?

Teacher: You may send forth righteous thoughts whenever your mind is not clear and calm or your mind comes under interference. If you want to make an adjustment or send forth righteous thoughts, you don’t have to be constrained by time. You may do it at any time and you can just stop when you feel your head is cleared and your righteous thoughts are strong.

Disciple: Are the requirements for doing the three things that Dafa disciples do the same for kids as for adult disciples?

Teacher: No, they’re different. The little disciples are different in terms of their skills, communication abilities, and the attention they can get from society. So the requirements can’t be the same. Kids and adults are not the same—kids are kids. I’ve talked about this many times before.

Disciple: You've been talking for nearly three hours. Master is working so hard. Many disciples would like Master to drink some water. (Applause)

Teacher: It's no problem. I think that since there are still so many question slips, I won't address those that have been touched on already.

Disciple: Some students say that we can ease up on going to the consulates and embassies for now since Manhattan is more important.

Teacher: They are all important, and no place can be overlooked. (Applause)

Disciple: We are a married couple who are both disciples, and we have a ten-year-old boy. He's been attending the Minghui School for three years, yet he still often fights with people, lies, and exhibits bad manners.

Teacher: A kid, well, sometimes he might still have the traits of a kid, and the people he comes into contact with will play a role in it as well. Mankind is a big dye vat, and if there were anyone who was untouched by this dye vat, then he would be a god. Even Dafa disciples who are cultivating need to clean themselves off often, and that's even more so for a kid.

And also, if the parents have problems in certain respects, the kid will reflect that. Those will be intentionally shown to Dafa disciples and to the parents. Let's not go on about this too much. He's a kid, after all.

Disciple: The Korean language used to include lots of Chinese characters, but since the beginning of modern times it has generally used Korean only, and that gets in the way to a certain extent with Falun Gong spreading widely. Please shed some light on this.

Teacher: I remember that in the past the entire Asian region, and I'm not referring to Middle-Eastern countries or India, used Chinese characters or at least partially used them, since there were a lot of Chinese people there. The Chinese were doing business or even became government officials there, so there were quite a lot of Chinese schools, too. In the past, the Chinese language was widely used in the Asian region, whether in business or cultural exchanges. That made things quite easy. But the old forces were just intent on impeding the world's people from obtaining the Fa and at the same time creating adversity for me to do Fa-rectification. So it asked that political party to do a terrible thing.

The old forces thought, "If the Chinese language is used [by all of these countries], it will be too easy for people to obtain the Fa and too easy for your Falun Gong to spread around the world." Then the old forces wouldn't have been in control when it came time for them to do what they wanted to. In order to do what they wanted to, they took advantage of people's concept of nationalism so as to have them promote their native cultures, creating symbols [for language] that gods don't see as words. One time at a conference of Communist nations in the then Soviet Union the CCP stated openly, "There are so many of us Chinese in Southeast Asia, a huge number. With just one rallying cry from us those places will turn into nations of our political party." And you know, there were a lot of journalists attending that conference, and they quickly spread that news to the entire world. The conference hadn't even finished when the entire Southeast Asian region began a major campaign against the Chinese. Did you know how that "rejection of the Chinese" started? That's where it came from. In South Asia in particular, the schools run by Chinese were forced to close, the Chinese people there had to take on local surnames and given names, and the use of the Chinese language was prohibited. Furthermore, many countries passed laws and amendments to their Constitutions that prohibited use of the Chinese language. So that created a great many challenges for people in certain regions when it comes to studying and obtaining the Fa today.

Of course, the old forces couldn't anticipate Dafa's might. People not just in Asia, but anywhere

in the world, can translate the Great Law into different languages, and the inner meaning of the Great Law remains unchanged no matter what language it is in. But the obstacles were immense for the first group of Dafa disciples, who joined during the Fa-rectification period. The interference against those who obtained the Fa early remains quite intense.

Disciple: The literature that disciples are distributing in Hong Kong contains several stories with the theme of “recite ‘Dafa hao’²⁰ silently and your health problems will be cured.” This has led some Mainland Chinese tourists to mistakenly think that we’re pushing the idea that if people have health problems they don’t need to take medicine and will be healed just by saying to themselves that Dafa is great.

Teacher: Saying “Dafa hao” is not only effective for ordinary people, but also for Dafa disciples since it clears away the bad things in the mind. When you have every cell in your body saying that Dafa is great, you will find that your entire body feels the reverberations. (*Applause*) It is the Fa that your mind is invoking, so that’s why it is so powerful. But I think it’s best to clarify the truth with wisdom. Outside Mainland China you don’t need to do this or to clarify the truth this way. The environment is more relaxed and you can clarify things to people based on reason. In Mainland China the environment is different, the extent to which people have been poisoned by the slanderous propaganda varies and they thereby have different views on Falun Gong, and people from Mainland China have a certain degree of cultural context for and background on *qigong*, so you can do it this way among the broader populace in Mainland China. But you don’t need to do it this way in urban areas or if you’re outside Mainland China. You don’t need to do it this way in Hong Kong either. Just tell them the facts in an open and dignified way, and that will be fine.

Disciple: As we’ve spread the Fa and clarified the truth, some Western ordinary people have been moved and have brought us cookies, fruit, and other things. We would like to ask if it’s appropriate to accept them. We’ve discussed this a few times and students have had different opinions.

Teacher: It depends on the situation. If people give you something out of sincerity and earnestness yet you refuse it, that really is a little impolite. Those things aren’t too expensive, so it’s fine to accept them after you thank the person. But you need to take it case by case. If somebody wants to give you a huge amount of food, then it really wouldn’t be appropriate to accept it. Handle it on a case-by-case basis, and as an alternative you could give them money for it. Some people truly do that out of kindness, though. They see that you are cold, and they bring you some coffee or food, so you can go ahead and thank them for it. It’s fine too if you want to give them money. If they don’t want to take it, then just thank them a lot. Deal with these things based on the situation.

Disciple: There are some ordinary people’s media and TV producers who want to do programs about Dafa now, and they want some of our footage. We’d like to ask Master how we should handle that.

Teacher: It depends on what kinds of programs they want to do. If they want to shoot our parades and anti-torture exhibits, they are free to do so, since those are public events in the first place. But if they want to do programs about the special aspects of your lives, about how you study the Fa and cultivate, then I’d say turn them down. Why turn them down? Because you don’t know what they’re after and how far they will go with it. Besides, studying the Fa and cultivating are a very solemn thing, and it’s not solemn to put them in the middle of some ordinary people’s commentary. That’s why you should turn them down, and also, it’s really hard for people to truly understand us.

A little earlier I talked about how cultivators in the past were sloppy and untidy. I want to stress

²⁰ “Dafa is great”

again that you shouldn't get attached to that. Some of you are thinking, "Wow, those untidy and dirty things might turn into good things. Then I'll be dirty too." (*Audience laughs*) I want to make it clear to you: that's when it is the assistant souls who are getting things! So you shouldn't copy those things. Even if those things could really turn into good ones and the master soul could get them, that's not the way we cultivate in Dafa. Dafa disciples, let me tell you, in the future you will have everything. (*Applause*)

Disciple: (Translated question) *I haven't done well in clarifying the facts to my family and thus have not explained clearly the things I'm doing in validating the Fa. I want them to understand that Falun Dafa is good and that I am not doing anything extreme. I'd like to ask Master, how should we explain to our family what we're doing? Also, I would like to greet Master on behalf of students from Spanish-speaking countries!*

Teacher: Thank you! (*Applause*) Western society is actually quite unfamiliar with the kind of cultivation that Chinese practice. When I started teaching the Fa, I was thinking, "How high a level of understanding will they be able to reach? And how will the public view it?" Actually, although the differences in culture have caused them to find foreign the [Chinese] way that thoughts are expressed and the concept of a human becoming a god, the goodness and kindness that cultivators show and the positive energy Dafa emits can lead anyone to think that it's good. Just like with clarifying the truth, you should talk to your family in increments about cultivation in Dafa. You should first tell them what Dafa is all about and then slowly let them know that you are learning it. Actually I don't think this is a big issue—a lot of times, it's just your own human thoughts.

Talk to them openly and straightforwardly, but make sure you don't talk at too high a level. They may be your family, but if you say, "I don't want to hide anything, so I'll tell them everything I know"... (*Audience laughs*) Master is not telling you to lie. I'm saying that you shouldn't talk about things at high levels, or it will scare them. Since understanding the Fa is done step by step, if you talk about things at a high level right away they will be unnerved. What you can say is, "This practice is really good and it's great for health. It's good for the mind and body and it raises people's moral standards. This book is excellent. Do you want to read it? Would you be interested in knowing more about it?" Just talk about it starting from the most basic level, and let them discover more about it on their own and read it themselves. Since *Zhuan Falun* starts from the truth at the level of the lowest beings, the human level, people can understand the Fa by reading *Zhuan Falun*. If you start talking about it at a low level, your family members that don't know much about it will not oppose it. If you talk about things at high levels and mention Buddhas and larger universes right from the beginning, they will wonder if there's something wrong with you. (*Audience laughs*) And that is because they truly can't accept what you say. Besides, Western religions teach that there is only one god; their understanding is that there is only one god in the cosmos. So that kind of thing is really hard for them to accept. Understanding has to come bit by bit.

Disciple: *Hello, Master! I'd like to ask if in the future Chinese characters will be standardized according to the traditional style. Thank you.*

Teacher: Actually, I haven't thought about that. In fact, the traditional style that people use nowadays is itself something that has evolved from the most ancient characters, and it went through incremental changes to get to where it is now. People in the current cycle of human civilization started out using inscriptions on bones and shells. From there that developed into greater and lesser seal scripts, and later it was official script, followed by regular script. There haven't been any major changes after regular script. Then of course in recent times, various forms of decorative script have emerged, such as the boldface style, the Song typeface, and so on. As far as the traditional script versus the simplified script, it's all fine as long as Dafa disciples can read it and understand the Fa. Don't

worry about that, as it is a matter for the people of the future. Even if [what you described] is something Master will do in the future, it has nothing to do with Dafa disciples. After Consummating, why would you be concerned with what goes on here in the human world? There would be no point. Let's stop worrying about these things. It will become another attachment if you think too much about it. Leave what belongs to the future for the future.

Disciple: How do we balance doing everything righteously and conforming to society as much as possible? What do you think about taking out loans to develop media? How about pyramid schemes, something which has stirred up a lot of controversy among fellow practitioners both in and outside of China?

Teacher: Dafa disciples cannot do bad things. Pyramid schemes are not used in Western society anymore. That's outright cheating people. It rips people off tier after tier, and the latecomers get exploited the most.

[You're asking about] Dafa disciples getting involved in pyramid schemes? Is it right to be obsessed with making money off others? No, it's not. If you do that, you are not doing legitimate business. There should be a loss for every gain, with commodities changing hands, but what are *you* doing? Racking your brain to rip people off. You can't do that! I told you that long ago. You can't get into pyramid schemes, and whoever does is wrong. Among the Dafa disciples in China, whoever gets into pyramid schemes is disrupting the form of cultivation that Dafa disciples do. They will have to bear all the consequences for that later on. *(Applause)*

As for taking out bank loans to develop a media outlet, I don't support it. That's because when it comes to Dafa disciples, if you ask them to do media work or write articles, that front line work, they can do it. But it's really hard for you to manage a business of some sort or solicit ads, since you have grown a little unaccustomed to interacting with ordinary people. So how would you repay the loans once you took them out? The advertisements are hard for you to come by, yet you want to take out a loan when you can't get advertisements for the media? If you were to pay it off, you would have to pay with advertising revenues and newspaper profits. I don't support your taking out loans—don't ever go into debt. You shouldn't go into debt.

Disciple: Ever since Master told us to spend more effort helping students in Mainland China, I have often made phone calls to fellow practitioners in China who stay at home to cultivate. But still they won't step forward. I am really worried about them, especially since the Fa-rectification has entered the concluding stage. May I ask Master what I should do to help them?

Teacher: Helping fellow practitioners is something that should be done, and there is nothing wrong with not wanting to leave anyone behind. But if they really can't step forward, well, you've done your best. Actually you can try to find out what their mental hurdles are and where their obstructions lie. Once you determine what their hurdles and obstructions are, then those can probably be resolved. But for a lot of people, I think they're just afraid. For a god or a cultivator, fear is considered a major attachment, and it truly won't do if it's not removed. So do what you can based on their situations, though there is nothing you can do if they truly refuse. Some people really will leave you disappointed by not fulfilling their potential and not living up to expectations. There wasn't anything like this with the cultivators of the past, as they would just think, "Who cares about you. If you can't make it or can't live up to expectations then you're finished. Just go home and that's it, it's not as if I am sitting here just dying to save you." Only Dafa disciples would do what we do. *(Applause)*

Disciple: Over the past two months, we have seen that a lot of people from the middle or lower segments of society in New York have accepted our fliers, whereas 70% of the people from the main

part of society have not gotten our literature. How do we break through that? If we dressed formally, like we're doing today, would that make a difference?

Teacher: That's not the problem. The problem is what I explained earlier: the Chinese who work in the companies here have been poisoned by the slanderous propaganda of the wicked, base group that persecutes Dafa, and it is those people, who don't know the truth, that are helping the evil to spread the venom. They are the main cause [of the problem]. You have to start there if you want to resolve the problem. Americans think those people are credible since they are colleagues, and so they listen to them not knowing that those people, too, are victims.

Disciple: A lot of Asian countries close to China have been interfered with a great deal. I'd like to ask esteemed Master, can Western disciples go there to help improve the situation?

Teacher: The students in those nations are basically doing that. But a handful of governments are really afraid of China's communist regime, so some governments have acted very badly. If you are busy with something else, you don't have to work on this matter for now. But if you have the time, you may try to see if you can do something. All I can say is that you can give it a try and see how it goes. When looking at those countries' behavior, treat that as you would a person failing to live up to expectations.

Disciple: Dafa disciples from Australia send their greetings to Master.

Teacher: Thank you. (*Applause*)

Disciple: May I ask Master how we should handle the balance between clarifying the truth in various countries and local areas, and clarifying the truth to people in New York and Beijing?

Teacher: They are all important. You should do it wherever your circumstances best allow.

Disciple: Greetings to Master from all Dafa disciples in Singapore. Indonesian Dafa disciples also asked me to relay their greetings to Master when I saw you.

Teacher: Thank you. (*Applause*)

Disciple: Master, are conflicts among people the same as conflicts among cultivators? Why does it seem to me that conflicts among cultivators are always difficult to resolve? On the surface they are getting along, when in actuality they are displeased with one another. If this goes on for long, what should we do about it? (Audience chuckles)

Teacher: What should you do about it? (*Audience chuckles*) Indeed, what should you do about it? You're cultivators, so how could you be like that? But I know, and I'll tell you the same thing again: although certain problems with certain people may seem glaring, they have in fact cultivated very well with some things that don't show. You can't compare them to ordinary people, and even less should you think that the conflicts they have are simply conflicts. Those are opportunities for them to improve themselves.

If you were all one big harmonious group, everything was really calm and just fine with all of you, no one upset anyone else, and everyone was making others happy, then that would be bad, (*audience laughs*) it really would be, for you couldn't cultivate then. If nobody's antagonism came to the surface and you couldn't help each other improve, then it wouldn't be a cultivation group. What differentiates us most from ordinary people is, when conflicts and tensions arise, we are able to examine ourselves. (*Applause*) It's absolutely not that we don't have conflicts come up. When certain aspects of ourselves that we have not cultivated well come out, there will be friction, and there will be discord and differences in opinion. Then look to see where the problems lie. Each person should examine himself for the reasons: "Did I do something poorly, and that's what made people disagree

with me?” And the other party should do some thinking too: “Was there a problem with the way I brought up the issue, and that’s what made people not accept it?” If each person can examine himself, then that is cultivation. If you didn’t examine yourself then you have not cultivated, or at least in terms of that one issue.

There *are* cases where the conflicts last quite a long time, but sooner or later they will have to see where their problems lie. It’s better to get rid of them sooner than later. No one should expect to achieve Consummation when they are still enmeshed in conflicts and attachments. (*Applause*)

Disciple: Buddhism originated in India, but later on it disappeared from India. Nowadays in India there are many different cultures and languages, and that makes it hard for Dafa to spread there. Is this because of the old forces’ arrangements? Esteemed Teacher, please give us some guidance on this.

Teacher: It’s the same as China in that regard. China is such a large area, and the dialects of many regions are unintelligible to people in other regions. But everybody speaks Mandarin, the national language, and so people can understand each other. In India it’s actually the same. India too has an official language, and many Indians speak English. The British were there for quite a long time, so a lot of older people speak English. India has a large population and a sizeable land mass, so there are bound to be differences in language. I don’t think that is stopping them from obtaining the Fa. For sure it’s the old forces stopping them. The Dafa disciples in China were able to resolve this issue, and the ones in India can, too.

The people of India have changed a lot since taking up other religions and an assortment of beliefs. In the past, Indians were a people of primal simplicity; the Indian race was created by a Buddha.

The human beings on earth were created by different gods. It’s as if the feet of some gods in the cosmos were planted here, the Three Realms—there are Buddhas’ feet, Daos’ feet, and feet of all kinds of Gods. At the bottoms of their feet—the particles at the lowest level—are the Three Realms and the Earth, on which are the different people of this world, with different people corresponding to different gods’ systems. Shakyamuni often said that the feet were dirty. In fact what he meant was that this human place is at a low level. In other words, once a god created a person, the person became part of that god’s system, and that is why gods looked after people. But later on, because Fa-rectification began, the gods that created man abandoned the Three Realms and mankind; the gods who created man all separated from the Three Realms, so man became isolated. This surface human form, also called the human skin, still assumes the images of different ethnic groups, but it no longer has any ties with the gods above. In other words, it no longer has ties with the gods who created man before. Didn’t the gods from high levels in the cosmos come down one after another, taking on a human form to obtain the Fa? Put another way, most human bodies today are being used by beings who descended from higher realms to become human beings here. This clothing is being donned by beings that came from higher realms. Once they arrive at this human place you can’t call them gods anymore, because in the past beings that came down to this human place could never return; once someone arrived at this realm he became a being of this realm. So in other words, he became human, with the only difference being that he came from high levels. Well, at this point in the discussion, what I am saying is that the former gods who can’t be saved when my Great Law is widely spread will, provided they are not so bad they must be weeded out, forever be human beings here. And we are talking about those who have not sinned against Dafa and are not overly bad. They will be human beings in the next period, when the future mankind truly begins.

The mankind of today was not meant to be an everlasting level in the cosmos. The Three

Realms was created for the Fa-rectification, and no matter how long its history is, the beings here are meant for the purpose of Fa-rectification and existing alongside the Fa-rectification. Gods directed mankind by shaping its cultures, behavior, and ways of thinking, as well as its biological makeup. That process was a part of history that was meant to facilitate the Fa-rectification, it took place for the Fa-rectification, and it was for Fa-rectification that the different dynasties of man constantly changed. In other words, human beings are in fact not truly beings that belong to this level of the cosmos. This level of beings that are humans and this society were created with a purpose. If during this Fa-rectification human beings act well, mankind will be blessed. Because the Great Law is spread here, the true history of this level of beings—humans—will really commence in the future, and the Great Law will establish the lives of human beings for this future level. Put another way, in the future man will really exist, and this level will become forever a part of the cosmos's composition, this level will forever be a level of the cosmos. (*Applause*) So in the future the people who do not sin against Dafa but do not cultivate in Dafa will forever be human beings here.

Today's human world is scary indeed, and no one dared to come here before. Once they got here they would have entered the delusion, and with their minds wiped clean, no matter how high a level a god was from, he wouldn't know anything once he got here. After getting immersed in the reversed principles in this world, and driven by the human self-interest and *qing*²¹ of this world, people are capable of doing anything. All a being can do here is go down the road to ruin, and it's hard for him to extricate himself. At this human level, *qing* manifests like water; it is smaller than the particles of water that people can see and highly dense. It is a god, but it is formless, and it's called "*qing*." It is a god that was created when the Three Realms was created, and it just plays the role it does. Here, any being that is composed of particles within the Three Realms is submerged. When looked at from a microcosmic level, the molecules in the human body are large pellets, and there are gaps between those pellets. So as human beings are submerged here, and the spaces between the molecules in the human body—and even the spaces inside the molecules—are immersed in *qing*, it is as if they are submerged in water. Who can say he's not affected by *qing*? If someone can break out of *qing*, then that person is divine. (*Applause*) Your being happy, your being unhappy, your liking something, your disliking something, your being angry—any emotional response from you—your liking certain physical objects, your liking certain work, your wanting to have certain foods... all of these things are from *qing*.

The surface body of man—despite the fact that this being came from high levels—the surface body of the human being is composed from the different foods in this dimension, but at the same time, the surface that you see is quite complicated. Human beings have a True Body. (Of course, this Fa should be taught in the future, as it is Fa that is within the Three Realms.) The composition of the human body is complex. When a person is born, the lower-realm gods in charge of human beings' reincarnation have to give that person a human skin. That human skin is very small at the time; its manifestation in that dimension is quite small. Starting from when it is an embryo, the matter from this dimension that its parents give it—what people call "nutrition"—continually makes it fill out and get bigger. This process of filling it out and making it bigger is the process of growth. It fills out and enlarges because it is continually substantiated by this dimension's matter, which continually fills out and enlarges the true skin. The same is true with the process of a person's growth after birth: whatever human food you eat, your body will grow, and that growth is in fact your true skin being filled out and enlarged by cells formed as a result of the food you consume after birth. Then when a person dies, usually his true skin is extracted and taken away. It is more microcosmic than the matter at the outermost surface, so gods can take it away effortlessly. As soon as the true skin is taken away, the body at the surface starts to break down and rot. Since it was composed of matter of the earth in this

²¹ Feelings, emotion

dimension, it needs to return to the earth, so it has to rot here.

I'm talking about the Fa in the Three Realms. (*Master smiles*) (*Audience chuckles, applauds*) Your human surface likes to hear it, but it serves no purpose in high-level cultivation. In other words, as I said a little earlier, beings that came from upper realms are actually wearing this set of clothes now—the human skin that is, this human body at the surface. Since human beings' surface appearances were created by gods before, in the past they were always connected to those gods, so they basically had those gods' images. They were identical for the most part, with only minor differences. Each person might have his own appearance, but overall he has that god's basic image. So different gods created different human beings. But, due to the Fa-rectification period starting, they all abandoned mankind. Some people say they are of such-and-such ethnicity, but in the eyes of gods they actually don't belong to any ethnicity. It's just that their bodies at the surface still have the appearance of that ethnicity; the true them is not part of it. They might very well have reincarnated from other ethnic groups, and many beings came from the heavens.

When gods created man they did not do so in the heavens, they did it on earth. That is, they used the matter on earth to create man. Apparently it was said in the *Old Testament* that Yahweh created man of clay. In fact, molecules are one kind of particle that are at the surface of the lowest level of the cosmos. Put differently, in gods' eyes this layer of particles is the earth, the clay. [They see it that way] because their matter is the best matter in the cosmos, and the further down you go in the cosmos, the lower things are and the larger and coarser the particles get, which means the worse things are, and in their eyes the filthier things are. So heaven and earth in their eyes are different from how human beings perceive them. When people say that someone has gone to the heavens, he has in fact only gone higher and traveled further among the molecules. He still hasn't left this dimension of molecules, so he is not really in the heavens. The heavens that gods refer to are composed of microcosmic particles—those are the real heavens.

Scientists ask, "Where can you find the gods? We've seen the heavens with our telescopes—where are the gods?" That's not the true heavens, but just the heavens as humans think of them. It's not the true "heavens" spoken of by the beings in the cosmos. And "Earth" as we know it doesn't fully encompass the true idea of earth. Human beings look at Earth and think, "Oh, this earth, it is our earth. We are standing on the earth. The earth is round." Gods say that it isn't round. [People might think,] "How is it not round? We can see it more clearly than the gods." But think about it, gods think of molecules as dirt on the ground, and isn't this dimension's matter made up of molecules? Isn't the air, which our human eyes can't see, made up of molecules? And in the air there are substances just like the air, numbering in the hundreds of millions, that are distributed all throughout the Three Realms. It's just that eyes cannot see molecules and the smaller particles, though everything in this dimension is packed full of them. Mankind is buried in the piles of molecules and smaller particles. The surface forms in the human world are different forms made up of surface matter composed of molecules. Some of the forms were made by gods, some by man. The ones made by man are things such as this building. The ones made by gods are: water, rocks, soil, the air, metals, plants, animals, and human beings, as well as the stars in the sky and the earth. Human beings are merely perceiving the world from within the dimension made up of this layer of particles, and perceiving the cosmos from inside this very narrow dimension. The heaven and earth that are in human beings' minds are not the true heaven and earth. Earth, like the air, is composed of molecules, so in gods' eyes, all of it is earth. [Looking at it from] the microcosmic level, the dimension made up of this level of particles is in fact earth, whereas the realm made up of more microcosmic particles is the true heavens.

A moment ago I said that Indians were created by a Buddha. The way they talk and carry themselves is very much like a Buddha. In the past the resemblance was even stronger. In modern

society things have gotten a bit jumbled due to issues with race. The Arabs and the Chinese are close to India, so a large portion of the Indians of recent times are of mixed race. In the past the Indian race was very pure. You can see what I described in Indian ethnic dance. Their hand gestures and movements closely resemble the *mudras* and postures of a Buddha. I find them very, very similar. (*Applause*)

Disciple: In Russia there have recently been several incidents of terrorist attacks on tourists, so a lot of people don't want to hear about the terrorist-style persecution happening in Mainland China.

Teacher: That, too, is a form of interference. It doesn't matter—clarify the truth as you would normally. [The evil] is intent on trying to interfere with you. Don't let it interfere with you, though, and just go on doing what you would normally do. It's hard for the time being, but it won't be hard for long.

Disciple: With regard to the correction of the Chinese characters, is it to be done only with Dafa books? Since media work...

Teacher: When it comes to the articles you write for ordinary people, don't change the characters in them. If ordinary people couldn't understand them, that would be a problem, right? Let's not involve these things in ordinary affairs at present.

Disciple: I have bad thought-karma. I have refused to acknowledge it all along and I have been trying to get rid of it. But it's been a long time and I still haven't managed to get rid of it. I am able to tell that it is not me.

Teacher: If it's something truly bad, then eliminate it. And sometimes there is another approach that has good results, and it's not necessarily an extreme way to handle it. You can have this thought: "During the Fa-rectification of the cosmos, I can make a reasonable arrangement for those of you who don't interfere with my validating the Fa; I can have you become beings in the future. Those of you who seek a benevolent resolution should leave me and wait in my surroundings. If you really cannot leave me, then don't have any part in interfering with me. In the future I will be able to achieve Consummation, and I will offer you a benevolent resolution. Those who are completely bad, who still interfere with me and who cannot remain will, according to the standards, have to be eliminated. Even if I don't eliminate you, the Law of the cosmos won't let you remain." If you have that thought, it is tremendously merciful to some of those extremely low-level beings, and it will make it easy to eliminate those who still interfere.

The Fa-rectification of the cosmos has standards. If you do it that way no one will have any grounds to challenge you. The principles are clear, as those who are supposed to be eliminated are to be eliminated. And yes, when it comes to many low-level things you may eliminate them completely—there's no problem with that in terms of the principles. But when you handle it as I just described, no being can say anything in objection. Those who continue to do bad things will have no justification whatsoever, and whatever is supposed to be done will be done. (*Applause*)

Disciple: In translating your teaching of the Fa, some students think that it should be done word for word according to the original text, and some think the translation should conform to the conventions of the foreign language.

Teacher: I think that translating word for word, except in the cases of some Asian languages where it might work, may not be so easy to do; that's especially so with Western languages. It's fine just to translate the most surface ideas using words of similar meaning. Making the translation consistent with the original meaning as much as possible is pretty much good enough. These questions come up a lot with translation. The translation should be very close to the surface meaning, and that will be fine.

Another thing is, some people have felt it's better to make the translations more like spoken

language. Take English, for example. One book was translated in a fully oral style. Some people say that kind of translation is easier for people to understand. Of course, there's nothing wrong with doing that, but I think in fact it's best to do it both using standard structure and diction as well as making the translation consistent with the original meaning as much as possible. Scholars of English and of language might not be able to accept vernacular that's too specific to any one region. If you use standard structure and diction, then everyone can study it and everyone can read it. Don't worry that people might not be able to understand it. Don't we already have so many English-speaking students? Didn't they all understand it? It's not a problem.

You are holding a Fa conference, but I'm taking up all the time—that's not good, right? (*Applause signifying that it is all right*) There are a lot of greetings.

Disciple: Greetings to Master from all Dafa disciples in Spain, Austria, Hungary, Portugal, Vietnam, Indonesia, New Zealand, France, Japan, the Netherlands, Belgium, Germany, Italy, the United Kingdom, Australia, Latvia, Ireland, Singapore, the Greater New York area, Scotland, Laos, Iran, Russia, India, the Czech Republic, and South Africa!

Teacher: Thank you all. (*Applause*) Here are some from Mainland China.

Disciple: Greetings to Master from all Dafa disciples in Guangdong, Jiangmen, Henan, Zhengzhou, Xuzhou, Pingdingshan, Xi-An, Hainan, Wenchang, Tangshan, Jiamusi, Heze of Shandong, Harbin, Hunan, Huaihua, Shandong, Gaotang, Pingxiang of Hebei, Xinxiang, Sanheyanjiao, Tianjin, Beijing University, Tsinghua University, Chinese Academy of Sciences, Jinan of Shandong, Shijiazhuang, Laiyang of Hunan, Nanchang, Hongdu, Zhejiang, Fuyang, Ningbo, Qiqihar, Hubei, Hong Kong, Shanghai, Guangzhou, Liaoning, Shanhaiguan, Shandong, Guangxi, Shenyang, Hefei, Dandong, Yanji, Dalian, Zhanjiang, Guizhou, Chongqing, Chengdu, Wuhan, Jinzhou, Yunnan, Macau, Zhuhai, Lanzhou, Hebei, and Jilin!

Teacher: Thank you all. (*Applause*) Since there are a lot of question slips, if I read all of them, I'll be doing all the talking at today's Fa conference. (*Applause signifying that they would like Teacher to continue*) I'll read as many as I can. (*Applause*)

Disciple: We would like to establish a charitable foundation for Dafa disciples' orphaned children. Would Master please give us some advice on that?

Teacher: That would be a good thing, and you may do that. I've been thinking about this all along. After some Dafa disciples were killed by the persecution, their children became homeless and they have been staying in foster homes. I can't do nothing about it, so I thought that we could collect their names and then figure out a way to rescue them out of China. (*Applause*) We'll raise them, and we can set up a school(s) for them. (*Applause*)

Disciple: The question I'm running into is: how do I know which project is more important and more of a focus for me to do well in?

Teacher: That is for you to figure out. (*Audience laughs*) That's too specific. Don't ask Master that, okay?

Disciple: A student suffered from psychosis a few years ago and had to stay in the hospital, but in the last few years he has not had a problem. Right now he is taking part in Fa-validating work. Should we advise him to appear in public as little as possible, keep a low profile, and do behind-the-scenes type work?

Teacher: That's a good suggestion. If some students can't handle themselves well or suffered from psychosis before learning the Fa, then it's okay for them to cultivate at home. Back when I was

imparting the Fa, I always said that those who had psychosis were not allowed in the seminars. When [those] people took up the practice, I would take care of them, and if they studied at home, I would save them just the same. But they were not allowed in the seminars. We needed to protect that cultivation environment of Dafa disciples and prevent interference, and that is why I didn't allow critically ill patients or those who had psychosis to attend the seminars. Students who used to have psychosis can do some things that are in the background, and it's okay if they do less or nothing when it comes to clarifying the truth.

Disciple: Dafa requires students not to sit by, watch, and ignore things like murder and arson. In Mainland China students are losing their lives right now. I really cannot just sit idly by and wait at home. I want to go to Tiananmen Square to tell people "Falun Dafa is great" and that Dafa saved my life.

Teacher: It's still quite evil over there right now. While you cannot sit by and watch Mainland China's students being persecuted, I don't want you to be persecuted, either. Work harder on clarifying the truth to stop the persecution. As your Master, I need to first consider your safety. *(Applause)*

Disciple: When we create art, how should we balance and handle appropriately creating art that today's people can accept and art people should have in the future? Are we establishing new art?

Teacher: You should do your best to make the cultural performance shows put together by Dafa disciples more upright and better. What a work of art depicts is only an issue of its subject matter, whereas the artistry and quality of the created work is often the key that determines whether the audience will be receptive to it.

Disciple: I am prone to sinking into a despondent mood. I think the most painful thing in my life is loneliness, as I don't have the warmth of family. I find it hard to get rid of the cloud cast over me by the feeling of loneliness. How should I look at this problem? Is it caused by karma from my past, or is it certain factors that I need to get rid of in my cultivation?

Teacher: If it's karma or interference, then eliminate it. As a living being, why do you no longer have the excitement you had when you initially obtained Dafa, pride in having obtained this Dafa, and the feeling that you have something that others cannot get? Are you not diligent anymore? Is that it? Or, even if you were too busy clarifying the truth to mull over your feelings, that would be because you were doing Dafa things or working on saving sentient beings. Why do you feel lonely? If you go do things to save sentient beings and things that a Dafa disciple is supposed to do, you definitely won't feel that way. If you were studying the Fa and diligently cultivating, could you feel that way? Only when you are not diligent will you have the leisure to mull over those ordinary human feelings, right? *(Applause)*

Disciple: A fellow cultivator has been giving me financial support recently, which has enabled me to stay in New York to do more Dafa work. I don't think it is quite right to accept others' help. Master, is my understanding correct?

Teacher: Yes, I think that since all Dafa disciples are giving of themselves and you too are giving of yourself and clarifying the truth, if you rely on other people's financial contributions, then aren't you doing things conditionally? If others didn't provide for you, then would you not do it? When we take from others, don't we have a sense of indebtedness? Do we feel right about it? Sure, there are special circumstances, and we can't be absolute with this. It's understandable when students who have their own businesses give more and support certain projects by students. But under normal circumstances I don't think that seems right. Even when it's for doing things like clarifying the truth, I don't think it is quite right. If you can stay here long term, then find a job and do [the Dafa] things in

your spare time—that works, too. In any case, ultimately you have to resolve your financial situation on your own. You can't depend on someone else to provide for you—that would be a problem.

I'm talking about this in terms of the Fa's principles. In fact, the observing gods are glaring at you, so you shouldn't be borrowing from people. If circumstances really don't allow, then do other Dafa-disciple things at home. What I said was that those whose circumstances allow could stay here to clarify the truth. If your circumstances don't allow, then go back to your hometown and do truth-clarification things there, which is the same.

Disciple: Could you please talk about certain members of that despicable Jiang's overseas clique poisoning the Chinese people's minds outside of China?

Teacher: Those things aren't worth discussing at our Fa conference. A being is responsible for the consequences of whatever path he takes. The path those people took was their own choice. Even when, with your help, they come to realize things, they still have to pay back what they owe. A person has to pay for whatever he has done. It's absolutely not allowed if he does not. Think about how many people they have harmed with their spreading of the venom, though. That sin is as large as the mountains and the skies, so they can't pay it off, for they have poisoned the minds of too many beings. So if a media outlet does bad things, its sin is huge; what I'm referring to is when it harms Dafa.

Disciple: How can disciples in Poland help the disciples in Mainland China? Greetings to esteemed Teacher from Dafa disciples in Poland!

Teacher: Thank you! (*Applause*) With regard to Dafa disciples in Poland, I think that no matter where you are, you can clarify the truth, and if you have the time you can do it in other regions as well. All of that is fine, and it helps the students in Mainland China. Right now the students outside Mainland China have created a better situation [in China] to some extent and effectively restrained the evil [there]. And also, they are helping the students there realize that they should step forward and the importance of doing so. There are all sorts of things like these that you can do, and if you have other ideas, that's okay, too.

As far as sending money to them, though, don't do that. The money might not reach them, and they, too, are cultivating. If the money got to be a lot, their human thoughts might arise and in turn actually lead to attachments. They are in an evil environment, and it is indeed tough in some regions. But as long as they handle themselves well, Master will take care of all of them. They need to walk their own paths. Master takes everything into consideration; these things are not fundamental problems.

Disciple: When some students obtained the Fa they didn't truly understand things from the Fa and were not strict with themselves. As a result, their detrimental behavior affected the newer students around them and caused those students to lose their desire to cultivate. Can those people be saved? And can the students who affected them make up for the harm they did?

Teacher: Whenever a student makes it so that others cannot be saved, it's a very serious matter. As a cultivator, you can only save sentient beings, you can't ruin them. In the human world you are capable of cultivating into a god, and in the human world you are capable of ruining others. These are things of equal magnitude, so you cannot overlook the importance of this. As far as what you owed before you started cultivating, those things have been segregated, and they are a separate matter. Then what you do during cultivation is simply huge. If you really cause someone to be ruined, unsalvageable, or even unable to make it to the future, then that will prevent you from ever becoming a god. It's that serious. So be very, very sure you don't do anything like that.

Of course, things done intentionally and unintentionally can be looked at differently, but didn't we come here for sentient beings? When your negative impact causes serious harm, what happened to

your righteous thoughts to save sentient beings? How could you not consider how others might feel? Aren't you cultivating to become a righteous enlightened being of a righteous Fa, a being who puts others' interests before his own and considers others first? When you have conflicts with others it affects newer students, so why did you do that in front of the newer students? Weren't you being self-centered and not thinking of others? Sure, maybe it was unintentional, but didn't it effectively drive newer students away?

You ought to be more mindful when it comes to a lot of things, and you should make up for what you didn't handle well before. Don't just think, "That's a new student, he came in because we spread the Fa, and if he doesn't want to practice he can leave." Don't look at it that way. You know, your efforts to spread the Fa merely provide the circumstances, whereas whether he is accepted is up to Master. It's Master who truly brought him in, so if you drive him away it's no trivial thing. Besides, once someone has learned Dafa, he *is* a Dafa student, and many things are to be done for him. When many things are done for him and yet he stops practicing, then do you have any idea of the consequences ahead?

Disciple: If the old forces' persecution hadn't happened, what would the cultivation path(s) you originally arranged for us have been like?

Teacher: Things have transpired and the situation changed, so why ask about that?

Disciple: With our righteous thoughts and righteous actions, will we be able to end the persecution before the Fa rectifies the human world?

Teacher: The truth is, Dafa disciples, in supporting the Fa-rectification, your righteous thoughts and righteous actions have already made the persecution draw closer to the end. (*Applause*) Think about it, the evil beings have let up quite a bit now. If you weren't strong, if you hadn't done well, why would they have let up on you? When some students do fall into their hands, the wicked people don't dare to persecute them too badly anymore. Why not? Isn't it because they are afraid that Dafa disciples will bring them to justice later on? Isn't it because no matter where those evil ones who have persecuted Dafa disciples try to escape to, they will eventually be tracked down? If during this persecution Dafa disciples had all been beaten into silence and had feebly vanished, then would the evil be afraid? They wouldn't think twice [about doing evil]. The things you are doing can shock and frighten the evil today, can greatly reduce the evil and restrain it, can terrify the evil and prevent it from having the strength to carry on with the persecution, and can ultimately force this evil persecution to do nothing but end. That's what Dafa disciples are doing in this time before the Fa rectifies the human world, and it is magnificent.

Disciple: Some students don't participate in group study or exercises. Are those students at risk? How can we help them get rid of their fear?

Teacher: I think that with newer students, you shouldn't be too hasty. It's all right for them to take their time. But you should try your best to advise them to take part in group study sessions, because the group study environment is indispensable for your helping each other improve, it is essential. Why, back early on, did I ask people to hold them? Because the form of cultivation that this Fa takes dictates that it be done this way. Why did the people in the past have to leave the secular world to cultivate? They knew there was a problem: when they were back in the secular world and interacted with ordinary people, they became like ordinary people and couldn't stay diligent. Moreover, they cultivated their subordinate souls. That is why they left the secular world and grouped themselves together. The cultivators could help each other improve and see how they compared with others, they always had things to share that were specific to cultivators, and they formed a cultivators' environment.

Without that environment, then... think about it, it's the same with today's Dafa disciples: when you go back out there into ordinary society, you are in the environment of ordinary society. If you don't seize the day [to cultivate], then today you might feel like reading and so you read a little, but tomorrow you might get lazy and read less... so without that environment it's hard to stay diligent. After all, it's human beings who are cultivating. So with human laziness and all kinds of disturbances affecting people in this world, it's very hard for you to see on your own where you fall short. And in particular, if on top of that you aren't diligent, you don't read the book a lot, or you don't comprehend the Fa very well, you won't be able to see your attachments at all. That's why you have to participate in group study and exercises.

Right now we are at a time when the persecution is taking place, so there are all kinds of reasons why students can't, or can't frequently, do the exercises as a group. In the future you will definitely have group exercises. Outside Mainland China many veteran students are busy doing a lot of things to validate the Fa. But, for the sake of newer students, veteran students should create an environment for them so that they can study the Fa and do the exercises together.

Disciple: (Translated question) I'm a Western student. Esteemed Teacher, would you please say something to encourage more Western students to step forward? A lot of Dafa projects need English-speaking students right now.

Teacher: It's true that they should be diligent. I've been thinking that *The [Chinese] Epoch Times*, a newspaper run by Dafa disciples, has had a fairly big impact in the Chinese community. In fact, *The Epoch Times* newspaper is already the largest media outlet in the world; it covers many countries, including the entire United States. I've seen it even in small towns in the U.S. It covers a very large area, and on top of that there is the web version. But, that said, it reaches only Chinese people. Beyond Mainland China, the true mainstream society, the principal part of society... for instance, the U.S. is an English-speaking society, and that language is what most of the people speak. So how could we not have a publication that clarifies the truth to them? There are limitations to solely relying on clarifying the truth by word of mouth. And even if that were feasible, we should still try as much as we can to add on some other ways to better help people see the truth. Wouldn't that be better? So I've been thinking that whenever the English version of *The Epoch Times* that you are running can truly get off the ground, that will be the greatest thing. And actually, the same goes for other countries. *(Applause)*

Many of the media outlets in mainstream society have business relationships with China, and some of the managers and editors have even been bought off by China's wicked band of gangsters. In this day and age, such a severe persecution is taking place—such a significant thing—yet the international community turns a blind eye to it. Isn't that odd? Is that acceptable? It's a crime! That band of gangsters is just so evil. If Dafa disciples have a local media presence, that might resolve these problems. But if these media outlets [we are involved in] are going to achieve a good effect, they need to resolve the challenges of human and material resources, which means that they need to increase their staff. So from this perspective, the number of Western students who are currently involved is indeed not meeting the need. The students involved are worried about this, too.

Of course, everything will gradually get better. There will be new students who will get involved; there will be new students who will understand the Fa over time and get involved. Everything will get better. The situation with the Chinese-language newspaper was like this before, too. They went from being shorthanded to having more people, from not knowing what to do to knowing, from not being familiar with it to being familiar, from being immature to eventually becoming mature. So I think that when it comes to new students who can cultivate themselves according to the Fa, you can have them get involved in more things. But, if they can't understand things from the Fa yet, then you really

can't get them involved, because they won't understand a lot of things and they don't realize yet that we are the ones who have to do things to validate the Fa. It is another way to save sentient beings, so if we don't do it, who will?

When a new student doesn't understand, it might even negatively affect him or ruin him. So you should consider that aspect of things. Let them know that the things we are doing save sentient beings, clarify the facts, and expose the persecution. I think that each veteran student was a new student once, too. Gradually these new students will, likewise, become mature.

Disciple: When I've gone through ordeals or tests, every time I have found filthy attachments that come from selfishness. I've cultivated for so long now but I still haven't removed it completely, while the Fa-rectification is drawing to a close...

Teacher: Don't be anxious about that. Removing those things is done layer by layer, and that's why they surface. When it comes to certain things, if you really can't do them, Master will do them for you.

Ordinary society is just one big dye vat, and the moment you let down your guard you get corroded by it. So you must cultivate nonstop and resist the contamination. As soon as you let up it will come for you. You are cultivators, and Master has let you keep the things that allow you to cultivate among ordinary people. That's one of the reasons [behind what you described]—it's so that you can conform as much as possible to the way of ordinary society in your cultivation. When you aren't diligent, though, those human things of yours will be exploited. But as cultivators you are able to continually rectify yourself and continually get rid of bad things through your cultivation. However, you might still have some left. Don't think that you have failed to cultivate well, though, and even less should you let it become a burden. Then it would become an attachment. When there are [bad things], just remove them. Cultivate in a noble and confident manner, and don't let those things affect your actions. When they show up in your thoughts eliminate them in a timely manner.

Disciple: As the time of Fa-rectification rapidly moves forward, [I am concerned that] it's still really difficult to clarify the truth to my family. I find it hard to figure out how to go about clarifying the truth to them.

Teacher: Some students do find it really difficult to clarify the truth to their families. I think for the most part it's actually because you still see them as people in your family and treat them differently from people in the outside world. You should remember that they, too, are sentient beings in the human world, instead of thinking of them first as your family. And you should find out what in their minds is unresolved. Once you work those things out everything can be resolved. Under normal circumstances when you clarify the truth, don't think about having people learn the Fa right away and the results will be better.

Disciple: Although I realize that we are all very fortunate, sometimes I get unhappy. Would you please tell me, does that happen because of the side of me that hasn't been fully cultivated, or is it a result of karma-elimination, that is, karma?

Teacher: Actually, it's normal to get unhappy. Newer students have formed many notions in the human world, and their notions perceive things differently. You might find one thing good, some other bad, and so on—people have feelings like that. Those are human notions reacting. Your notions can't be removed all at once as soon as you start cultivating, so reactions based on notions will affect your emotions, putting you in a bad or happy mood.

These are things that happen in your cultivation. Gradually your understanding of the Fa will become clearer and clearer, your righteous thoughts will get stronger and stronger, you will look upon

sentient beings with more and more compassion and mercy, and things will be different.

Disciple: Now that the new Zhuan Falun has come out, what should we do with the ones that have uncorrected [Chinese] characters in them, that is, the old Zhuan Falun? Should we continue to use them?

Teacher: It is the Book, it is the Fa, and for just a few words... can't you just correct the characters? Am I right? You can't go and do something you shouldn't, right?

Disciple: The five-thousand-year-old Chinese culture is [a combination of] the cultures of different cosmic bodies in the cosmos. Then are Western cultures also cultures of cosmic bodies from ages ago? Are they related to the spreading of Dafa?

Teacher: Western gods created Westerners. Whether it be Asians or other ethnicities, they were all created by different gods, so they definitely bear the characteristics of those systems. As for culture, you should say that gods created human beings' cultures for them, instead of saying that those cultures are cultures of the heavens. If you say that the skyscrapers in Manhattan are the same as those in the heavens, that's not true, because they were brought about by modern science, and modern science was brought about by aliens. Yes, the cultures of China's different dynasties bore characteristics of the heavenly kingdoms that came to form karmic connections. But, gods determined what was left behind at this human place with specific goals in mind, since human history was laying the foundation for Fa-rectification. Western culture is a surface culture that was created for human beings while they lived and waited for the Fa-rectification.

Disciple: I find it very hard to return to Zhen-Shan-Ren. Master, could you please tell me what it means to truly remove attachments at a fundamental level?

Teacher: You're a newer student, so don't be anxious. You will gradually come to realize and understand many things during your cultivation process. The best approach is to read the book(s) a lot—you have to read the book(s) repeatedly. What Master is telling you is absolutely good for you.

You saw that in just a few years of my imparting the Fa in Mainland China, 100 million people came to learn it. Since leaving China I haven't directly taught the exercises or the Fa, and it has been the students who have been passing it on, holding nine-day seminars, and spreading the word about this Fa. Although the old forces have been controlling certain things, they haven't been able to block it, and a lot of people have still come to learn it. Why is that? Because this Fa can truly guide people's cultivation, it can truly help people improve, and can truly change the state of a being. The evil in Mainland China has been carrying out such a severe persecution, and the evil's pressure felt by Dafa disciples in the international community has been huge as well. So why have they been able to withstand the evil and come through? It's because they have come to know this Fa and they have truly improved themselves through this Fa and through their cultivation. Of course it's unrealistic to want to reach a very high level of understanding right away. But, gradually by studying the Fa you will come to know everything.

As far as attachments go, if today Master told you to get rid of this or that one, it would be something forced, and any desire to get rid of it wouldn't have come from your heart. And as time went by, when you couldn't take it anymore after Master had said a lot of those things, you would become resentful and think, "Why should I do that?" But when you've realized things from the Fa's principles and have understood the effect that doing that might have on your existence, only then have you truly improved, and only then are you truly able to do it. No external restriction comes out of your own will or out of true improvement on your part. Restrictions and coercion can never change someone or make him improve. And once the restrictions are gone, the person will go back to being how he was before,

so that doesn't work.

Disciple: Since the suppression started in 1999, some students who got out of labor camps have gone to practice Buddhism. The truth is, they were all afraid.

Teacher: I think that if they are laden with fear, no matter where they go they won't be truly cultivating, and they won't be able to reach Consummation. Once they get into Buddhism they will see what it is like. Compared to the students who have conducted themselves well, they have, of course, done poorly. They came when Dafa benefited them, but when Dafa was persecuted they ran away. They reaped the benefits, but while we are resisting the persecution, they are not speaking up for Dafa and don't want to validate the Fa. In gods' eyes that kind of being is the worst. As far as what to tell them in terms of cultivation, all you can do is suggest to them that they do what's good for them; there's no special method. What a person wants is up to him.

Disciple: The Middle East has been constantly plagued by war, and the people there don't have an opportunity to obtain the Fa. Would you please tell us how Dafa disciples should spread the Fa in that region?

Teacher: It is hard indeed. All of that is the old forces' doing.

The U.S. government knows that the persecution of Falun Gong students has been very severe. The United States was founded on freedom of belief and they advocate for human rights. The first immigrants to the U.S. were the Puritans, who came to this land for freedom of belief. The persecution of Dafa disciples directly involves the most fundamental interests of the U.S. and its founding principles, but why hasn't the U.S. government gotten involved? Trying to be understanding of their situation, I'd say that it is because the old forces have been stirring up trouble in the Middle East, which has kept the U.S. tied up and prevented it from having the energy to focus on China and do something about the persecution of Dafa disciples.

If it weren't tied up with the issue of terrorists right now, I believe the U.S. government definitely wouldn't tolerate evil like this being so rampant in today's world. That's because the U.S.'s role in the world is to maintain order—it is actually the international police. Why did gods make it so powerful and rich? The gods wanted it to play that role in the world. China is the main stage in this play of mankind, it is the place where the main play is acted out. But someone has to maintain order in the theater—you can't let it become chaotic, right? So the truth is, the gods really do want the United States to do that. The CCP always criticizes the U.S. for being "the international police." Well, it *is* the international police, and gods want it to be that. If the U.S. government really doesn't fulfill that responsibility and doesn't play that role, then the gods won't have it be so strong or rich. It's not that Americans are supposed to be special but that gods arranged it that way. *(Teacher smiles)*

Disciple: Myself and some Dafa disciples around me recently had babies. It feels like we no longer have as much time to clarify the facts as we did before, and we're a bit troubled by that.

Teacher: I don't think that's a problem. A lot of Dafa disciples have children. If the child is very young, it's all right to spend more time taking care of the child. When you have time you can do work to clarify the facts, and when you have little time you can do a little bit in a supporting role, which is fine, too. When the baby gets older and your hands are freed up, then you can do more, and that's okay.

Disciple: (Translated question) When we hold anti-torture exhibits, a lot of ordinary people pass by many times in the same day and have already taken our truth-clarification materials, but some Chinese fellow cultivators still walk up to them and stuff materials into their hands.

Teacher: Perhaps they were different students and didn't know that those people had already taken the materials, so they gave them the same materials again. You should be mindful of things in this

regard. As time goes on, when some people have become familiar with you and have learned the truth, if you stuff the same material that you gave them before into their hands, it's actually wasting resources. Don't treat it like ordinary people do when they distribute materials, where you've done your job when everything has been given out. You are saving sentient beings. Otherwise what are you here [in New York] for?

Disciple: The City of Atlanta and the Georgia State Senate are pushing to have a Chinese consulate established. Is that happening because our truth-clarification hasn't been powerful enough, or is it due to the old forces' interference?

Teacher: They can build whatever they want to build, it doesn't matter. Whether or not they establish a consulate has nothing to do with us. And who knows whose consulate it will be in the future. (*Audience chuckles*) Indeed, we are not concerned with ordinary people's affairs. We're just cultivators. Look at how China is now. The CCP is really sitting on the mouth of a volcano this time, teetering on the edge. It looks grandiose and high-flying on the surface but it's already beyond cure. Its clothes on the surface are glamorous, but inside it is all rotten.

Disciple: As of now what phase has the Fa-rectification in New York reached?

Teacher: There are no phases. Just clarify the truth, help people understand by telling them [the facts], and help the world become aware of the truth. What you actually want to know is what the overall status is now. In fact, in the time since you started clarifying the truth like this, a lot of people who live in New York City have come to understand the truth. More than half, in fact. They understood things quickly. But those who only work in New York and don't live here account for only a small portion of them. That's the state of things.

Disciple: Because of security concerns, there are some things we want to keep secret. But going too far with this hampers sharing and communication among students and dampens people's enthusiasm. How can we handle this better?

Teacher: Cultivators, you know, need to think about others no matter what it is they are doing, and even more so should they think about Dafa. So don't be upset when somebody doesn't disclose something to you. Some projects can't be discussed in big meetings, they can't be known to everyone. When a larger number of people know about such a project, people let down their guard. One person talks about it, and another talks about it, and before you know it those secret agents from China's band of gangsters know about it, too. Their means of monitoring and eavesdropping on what you do are getting out of hand. Whether you have your phone turned on or off, they can [use it to] listen in on you. So for security's sake, a lot of the things you do to save sentient beings can't be known widely before you do them. You have to be clear on this point: you need to make allowances for students [when they don't let you in on things]. They're not trying to hide things from you—they are trying to keep them low-key. For example, let's say you want to hold an art exhibit to clarify the truth, and before things start up the consulate makes a phone call to intimidate the gallery, saying, "If you let them use the gallery, you'd better watch out: there will be an explosion." No underhanded behavior is beneath them. So with some things we can't have a lot of people involved. As Dafa students you have to be understanding of every student.

Disciple: Some students have done a great deal of work and put forth a lot for Dafa, but while doing the work they often lose their temper. Can somebody like that cultivate to Consummation?

Teacher: I don't think that would affect something as major as Consummation. Why would he lose his temper? Of course, if it's just a matter of getting angry, then we can't conclude that he has cultivated poorly. But, losing your temper really does have a terrible effect. The impact on newer

students is too much, it's almost enough to scare people away. You are all still cultivating—it's humans cultivating, after all, not gods—so you will cause misunderstandings [when you get mad] and cause disruption. You can have differences of opinion or feel upset all you want, but you still need to talk things out in a calm way. Don't our Dafa disciples have to not return blows or insults, even in the face of evil? Don't you have to forbear? To patiently clarify the truth? Then when you lose your temper, what was that for? What is there for a cultivator to get angry about? And shouldn't there be even less of that when you are with other cultivators? No matter who you are, you are cultivating. How come you always get mad at my disciples? Did I agree to your acting like that towards my disciples?

Disciple: Because of my strong attachments, at the time of a Fa conference I snapped a few pictures of Master in haste and they didn't turn out so well. I've come to realize that doing that was disrespectful of Master.

Teacher: Well, that's the reason I tell you not to take pictures. The second some students spot me, "click-click-click," they start snapping pictures. I'm not so worried about it, and it doesn't matter to me personally if the images don't turn out well. But after you take the pictures you won't feel so good about it. Just bear that in mind from now on. In cases like I just described, when it's tough to handle, just give all the photos to me and I'll deal with them.

Disciple: (Teacher: This one has a lot of words on it.) Differences come across in the way Chinese and Westerners distribute truth-clarification materials. For example, our Western students invariably hold the leaflets in their hands and quietly stand aside, waiting for people to take them. But very few people take the initiative to come over and get them. Meanwhile, [with Chinese students,] especially those from Taiwan, they always hand them out politely and enthusiastically, and usually they manage to give out a lot of them. But they often get asked not to do this by the Western students, especially when we are clarifying the truth at anti-torture exhibits. For many reasons, our hope is that Western students can be more proactive in clarifying the truth and not feel like they have to wait for people [to come to them].

Teacher: My sense is that our Western students do have that view for sure, which is to say, they feel that since we're cultivating Zhen, Shan, Ren, we should be polite and show people a Dafa disciple's Shan. That's surely what they are thinking, so they don't directly approach people and prefer to wait for them to come take leaflets on their own. I don't think there is anything wrong with that view, but that said, saving people is a really urgent matter. Dafa disciples have given up the comforts of home, sacrificed their careers, and overcome all kinds of challenges, and on top of that their finances are tight. So coming here to clarify the truth and save people really hasn't been easy for them. So, since this is about saving people, it's good to be a little more proactive. But you do have to be polite.

Be both a little more polite and a little more proactive. That way people won't be put off and we'll be able to give them materials, too—I think that would be better. If you wait for people to come take them, while it's possible your thoughts are on saving those people and you are telling them [in your mind] to come take it, when people's human side gets strong, the knowing side won't be able to come into play. The people in Manhattan, for example, are all really busy. Their minds might be occupied with thoughts of making money, going to meet someone, or closing some kind of deal, and so they hurriedly walk by. So while they are thinking about something, that thought you send out could make their knowing sides want to come over and take your materials, but their human sides are still strong, and so they might miss the opportunity. So, what I'm thinking is, it would be great if we could greet them politely and be a little more proactive.

I know that this approach is hard for our Western students. They always feel bad about bothering people, about actively bothering them. But that's not how it is. What you should keep in

mind is that you are saving people, and things will go fine. (*Applause*)

Disciple: When clarifying the truth in Manhattan to the employees in the skyscrapers, we still encounter a lot of obstacles. How can we do better in breaking through the layers upon layers of obstacles and check points that the old forces set up, and thus bring the sentient beings in those buildings salvation? Would Master please...

Teacher: Yes, in fact when we go to those buildings to clarify the truth, it really is hard to get in, since everybody there is working. While everyone is working, if we go there to clarify the truth, their bosses will be upset for sure, and then they will think badly of us. Of course, that's not to say it is always that way. When circumstances permit we can do it. As for the employees in those companies, there are usually three times of day when you can come into contact with them. One is when they go to work, another is when they get off from work, and the last is when they eat lunch. Most of them come down for lunch. So at those three times we can opt to make an effort to reach them, and perhaps the results will be better.

Disciple: I'm a Dafa disciple from Beijing. Before departing [for the U.S.], my fellow cultivators told me to be sure to pass their regards on to Master. (Teacher: Thank you. My thanks to the Beijing students.) (Applause) Though they all do sense that Master is constantly by their side, they can't help but miss Master greatly—tears well up at the mere mention of Master's name. These past two days I have joined in with the activities put on by the overseas Dafa disciples, and found it deeply moving. Though we [in Beijing] are in the evil's other hub, some fellow cultivators have gotten into a mode where they're following a mechanical routine since the persecution has gone on for a long time. It's not like the overseas Dafa disciples, who are so diligent and maintain a sense of urgency. Here one truly feels that the pace of things is so swift and each Dafa disciple is so hard working. I can sense the difference between us and the overseas Dafa disciples. I will definitely bring back and share with fellow cultivators in China what I've experienced in Manhattan firsthand and the magnificence of the New York Fa conference. We really need to pick up the pace and be ever diligent. May Master put his mind at ease: we will achieve this, we definitely will.

Teacher: I believe you. (*Applause*) Actually the evil over in Mainland China has been given quite a scare by the Dafa disciples there and around the world doing things as you described and making such efforts. This has done a great deal to restrain the persecution, and massive amounts of evil have been destroyed along the way. So when the situation is such as this, if we still have students not stepping forward and not doing things because of the fear in their hearts, then they really are losing their opportunity. Some people say, "We know Master is good and we know Dafa is good. We're studying [the Fa] at home and clandestinely doing the exercises there." But the fact is that Dafa has been imparted to you, and it was given so that you could save all beings, it's for you to establish even greater mighty virtue and be responsible to all beings. Haven't I said this before: lives of the future do things for others' sake, not for their own? This process is exactly one in which such qualities are forged in you, so you can't think about only yourself. What is it that you fear? Just about everything, it seems. Yes, when there is such cruel persecution going on, I don't want to see students suffering persecution, either. But the current situation is gradually changing, and that means we should do even better. In fact, with the students who have done very well all along, didn't they have to make it through the severe, cruel persecution?

So my hope is that the students in Mainland China can really learn from and emulate the students outside of China. In order to lessen the evil's persecution of you, take a look at what they're doing. They have worked so hard. Some barely sleep day after day, each person is doing many things, and they are all shouldering a lot of projects. And I'm not talking about just a few of them—it's the majority of them, and they really are working hard. So with this, when we compare things, even though

their environment is relaxed and comfortable, as Dafa disciples, it's still about being diligent. If under very harsh circumstances you failed to do things or failed to do them well, maybe it was indeed the product of circumstances. But now things have changed and you should step forward and do well.

Before, when so much evil was pressed down here, the Three Realms was saturated with it, and it filled the air. Take a breath and it would get sucked into your belly—that's how much there was. Evil was everywhere, and each and every little thing was dominated by that evil. The grass would trip you up, and tree branches would whip you in the face. When you walked beside a wall it would hit you in the head. It all seemed natural to you, but it wasn't—that was how evil it was. Now that evil has been cleaned out and our surroundings are getting ever more relaxed and easy. In many areas the evil flees at the sight of Dafa disciples. It doesn't dare in the least to visit those areas, for the Dafa disciples there have done well. Then with so many Dafa disciples here in Manhattan, why would the evil dare to come here? It's because the old-force elements are—as if sweeping up trash—driving the evil over here, sweeping it here, and gathering it here, so that Dafa disciples and the multitude of gods can eliminate it. Otherwise the evil absolutely wouldn't dare to come here right now.

Now when we look at Mainland China, with the environment how it is at present, if some students still can't step forward, then they are about to truly lose their chance. Of course, many students have done a great job there, and they have been doing things all along. That is really magnificent.

Disciple: People have different understandings on sending righteous thoughts at the consulate. Some people believe that if we send righteous thoughts after each exercise, the evil won't even have a chance to catch its breath. Is that thinking going against Shan?

Teacher: The evil that persecutes Dafa disciples simply has to be cleaned out. As for the specifics of things, I'll leave them to you to work out.

Disciple further asks: Some people are of the understanding that to do it that way [that I described] is using human thinking. Sending righteous thoughts is something solemn, and the Fa's principles dictate that things are gained only when we are free of pursuit, that we should let nature take its course. Only when we send righteous thoughts after doing the standing exercises and again after the sitting exercise will it not impact our own cultivation. Could you tell us if there's any problem with breaking up an exercise and doing it over the course of a few hours?

Teacher: Don't develop an attachment. Follow the requirements that have been set forth when you do the exercises. As for sending righteous thoughts, you can, except for when it's done collectively, do it at any time you choose. My thinking is that doing the exercises is doing the exercises, so just do them normally. As far as sending righteous thoughts goes, you can do it any time, any place. So long as you haven't worn yourself out, you can send them forth, and it should be fine. All of what you expend will quickly be replenished. Doing the exercises just to do the exercises isn't the point—the exercises strengthen your mechanisms, and it is the automatic mechanisms that really elevate you and replenish your energy. Twenty-four hours a day you are being refined by the *gong* and by the Fa, so no matter how much energy you emit forth when you send righteous thoughts, none of it is lost. And as for your supernormal abilities, they will return on their own. Other things that are depleted will likewise be swiftly replenished, and that is because your standard is there at that height. It's like I have said: however high your *gong* is, that is due to your *xinxing* being at that height, for there is a measure. When that measure is there at that height, the *gong* can't help but go up to that point, and things are thus quickly replenished. Increasing *gong* is actually really easy. It is raising *xinxing* that's hard. So that is why *gong* is so hard to build up. (Applause)

I've now read all the question slips. (Applause) Our Dafa disciples really have been working hard in the past few years of validating Dafa, clarifying the truth, and saving sentient beings; for a lot

of Dafa disciples so much so that they feel really fatigued, and many people have overcome challenges of every type along the way in doing these things. You can't help but say that Dafa disciples are amazing. Actually, though it's me saying you are amazing, I'm just repeating the words gods are using. It is they who say you're amazing. If it were just me saying you are amazing, well, I'm your master, so of course I'm a little partial to my disciples. The broader range of lives had to be convinced, and that's why, no matter how it may seem, things are getting better overall for our disciples even though you might meet with a lot of trouble and setbacks as you validate the Fa.

The Fa's rectification of the cosmos is sure to succeed. Even those things arranged by the old forces wouldn't dare to have it not succeed. It's only that their plans interfered with the Fa-rectification and harmed a lot of things in the Fa-rectification, which is why the factors of the old forces must be thoroughly eliminated. Dafa disciples won't be validating the Fa forever here in the human world, for the time when the Fa rectifies the human world will definitely arrive. Soon the Fa-rectification that Dafa is doing in the cosmos will draw to a close. People now know that the cosmos is growing further apart from the Milky Way. In other words, all of this isn't just something that only I am saying, and it's not something that just Dafa disciples can know: even human beings will gradually come to know it.

Everything that man doesn't believe in shall unfold before his own eyes. Every unsolved mystery of the past will come forth here in the human world, and when that happens it will be the time of the Fa rectifying the human world. With everything that you Dafa disciples have done, you have shown yourselves worthy of all that Dafa has given to forge you. I can say that the Dafa disciples' validating of the Fa has, on the whole, achieved what it should, and they have fulfilled their responsibilities. (*Applause*) And though there still remains the rest of the journey to take, and though some things remain to be done, I think none of that should pose a problem, for the most trying time has passed and the most evil period is over. (*Applause*) The road ahead should grow only broader, while everything should become ever more clear, and you will become more and more mature. And being cultivators, you should embody ever more greatly the poise and bearing of a Dafa disciple. In the time to come Dafa disciples will be given recompense for all that they have given over the entire Fa-rectification process. And even when it comes to the persecution and losses suffered by mankind, in the time ahead mankind too will be compensated. (*Applause*) Dafa will establish a future for mankind, and when a person can act in an upright manner during this time when Dafa is being spread and Dafa disciples are in the harsh predicament of being persecuted, that kind of person should be blessed. Such a person has done what a person is supposed to, so in the future a real, true environment for human living will be established for them.

Before long everything will change, but as Dafa disciples, you can't waver in any way before Consummation. You should do what you have to, just as you have been all along. If so much as one thought or idea of yours is extreme, and if you don't consider the consequences, or if you don't think of Dafa's sake, I'll tell you, then you have not walked your path well. Since your path is to be left for the future, you must succeed in blazing it. Your cultivation's goal goes beyond self-Consummation, as you are to save sentient beings, and you are helping the lives of the future to establish that future. Your responsibility is big, but the payback that awaits you is enormous. What you will gain later on far exceeds what you put in, as much as that may be. So I hope that under no circumstance will you waver. Whether the verdict on Dafa is overturned by people or not, whether a new situation comes about or not, whatever the case, Dafa disciples should still save the sentient beings that need to be saved. Keep doing what you should do all the way until Consummation! (*Long, enthusiastic applause*)